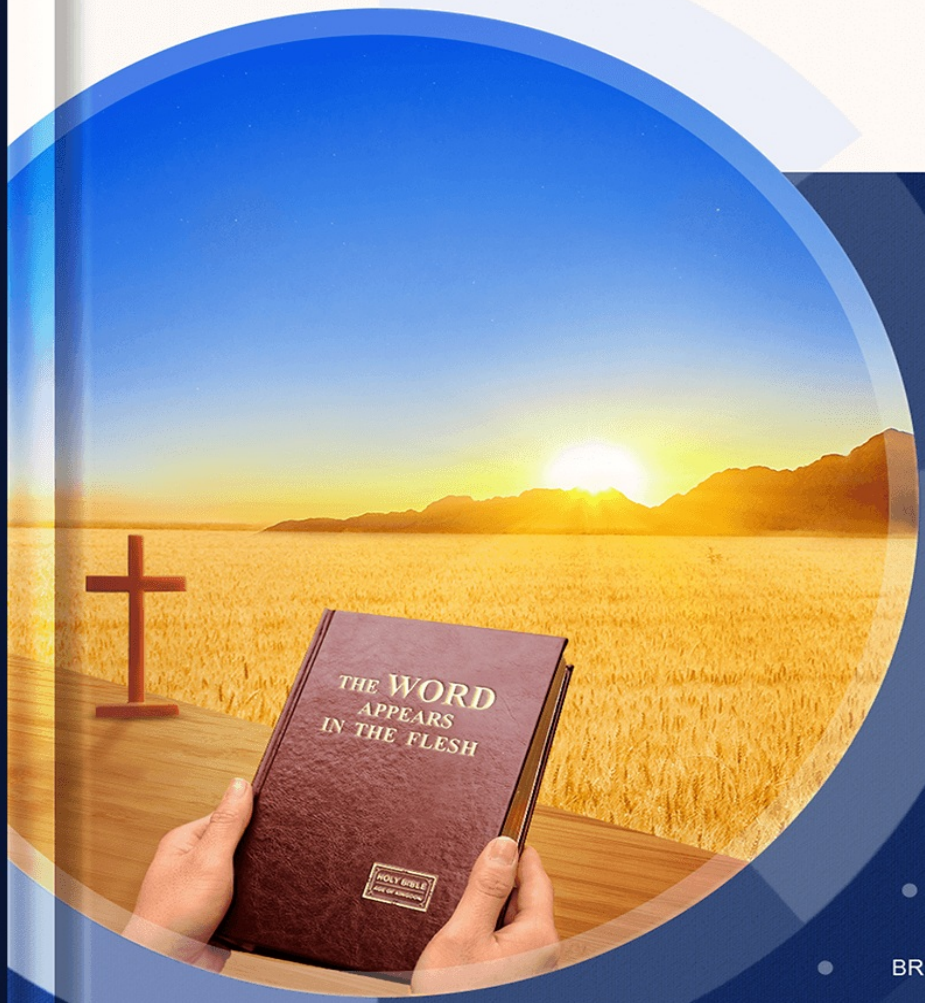
ESSENTIAL QUESTIONS AND ANSWERS

ON THE GOSPEL OF THE KINGDOM

SELECTIONS



- BREAK THE SHACKLES AND RUN
- RED RE-EDUCATION AT HOME
- MY DREAM OF THE HEAVENLY KINGDOM
- PERILOUS IS THE ROAD TO THE HEAVENLY KINGDOM
- STAY OUT OF MY BUSINESS
- THE MOMENT OF CHANGE
- THE LIES OF COMMUNISM
- BREAK THE SPELL
- WHO IS MY LORD
- AND MORE

Table of Contents

Preface

I. Questions and Answers on the Desolation of Churches

Question 1: The last few years we've felt a growing desolation in our church. We've lost the faith and love we had at the start, and become weaker and more negative. Even we preachers sometimes feel darkened, and don't know what to talk about. We feel like we've lost the work of the Holy Spirit. We've also looked everywhere for a church with the Holy Spirit's work, but every church we see is as desolate as our own. Why are all denominations suffering famine?

Question 2: You just talked about some lawless acts, so what specific acts do you mean when you say lawlessness is increasing?

Question 3: Right now, desolate churches are widespread throughout the entire religious world, but we have never fully understood the primary cause. That's why we've been earnestly reading the Old Testament and have focused on how the actions of the Jewish chief priests, scribes and Pharisees in the late Age of Law led to such desolation in religion. Although some problems have been discovered, it's never been entirely clear. We've also gone to churches in many different places and from different denominations, but we haven't seen the work of the Holy Spirit. We're not very clear on why the entire religious world is so desolate. What's the real reason for this?

II. Questions and Answers on the Way of the Lord's Arrival (Secret and Open)

Question 1: The Lord's promise is that He will come again to take us into the kingdom of heaven, and yet you testify that the Lord has already been incarnated to do the work of judgment in the last days. The Bible clearly prophesies that the Lord will descend with power and great glory on clouds. This is quite different from what you've testified, that the Lord has already been incarnated and secretly descended among men.

Question 2: I've believed in the Lord for over half my life. I've worked tirelessly for the Lord and have been on constant lookout for His second coming. If the Lord came, why didn't I receive His revelation? Has He cast me aside? This has left me very confused. How do you explain this?

III. Questions and Answers on Rapture

Question 1: The Lord said it to us long ago: "I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you to myself; that where I am, there you may be also" (Jhn 14:2-3). The Lord Jesus has already reserved a place for us in the heaven. When He returns, He will directly lift us into the kingdom of heaven. If the Lord has already returned, why are all His saints still on the earth? Why haven't they been raised up?

Question 2: We still haven't determined whether God's kingdom is on earth or in heaven. The Lord Jesus once talked about "the kingdom of heaven being at hand" and "the kingdom of heaven coming." If it is the kingdom of heaven, it should be in heaven. How can it be on earth?

Question 3: The Bible says, "Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord" (1Ts 4:17). How should we interpret that?

Question 4: Through your fellowship, we see that our thoughts about the Lord's return and the rapture really did just come from our own conceptions. We have already seriously gone against the Lord's words. That being said, how should we wait for the Lord's return and the rapture now? Can you talk about this in a bit more detail?

IV. Questions and Answers on How to Discern the Voice of God

Question 1: The Lord Jesus has now returned and He has a new name —Almighty God. Almighty God has expressed the words in the book The Word Appears in the Flesh, and it is the voice of the bridegroom, yet many brothers and sisters are still unable to discern the voice of God. And so, today we have invited the witnesses from the Church of Almighty God. We have invited them to fellowship with us about how to identify the voice of God. So we'll know how to ascertain that Almighty God is the return of the Lord Jesus.

Question 2: All of the apostles' letters in the Bible were things that God had inspired, but I'm not clear on whether or not they really are His words. How would you explain this? And outside of the Bible, through the ages there have been many people who have been utilized by God as well as many spiritual people who have written books. In man's eyes the things that they've said have all been in line with the truth and are edifying for mankind, so what really is the difference between these things they've said that are in line with the truth, and the words of God?

Question 3: What is the difference between God's words conveyed by prophets such as Isaiah, Ezekiel, and Daniel from the Age of Law, and the words expressed by God in the flesh?

Question 4: The Lord Jesus spoke the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven to the disciples, and as the return of the Lord Jesus, has Almighty God also revealed many mysteries? Could you fellowship with us about some of the mysteries revealed by Almighty God? It would be a great help to us in identifying the voice of God.

V. Questions and Answers on the Conditions for Entering the Kingdom of Heaven

Question 1: The Lord Jesus died on the cross for us, He forgave all our sins and redeemed us from the hands of Satan. That is to say, He did this to save us and grant us access to the kingdom of heaven. Even after this redemption, we continue to sin and we have yet to be cleansed. Nevertheless, I believe that the Lord's forgiveness has made us righteous through our faith. As long as we sacrifice everything else to work and spend for God, as long as we are willing to endure suffering and pay the price, we'd be raptured into the kingdom of heaven. I think this is the Lord's promise to us. However, my brothers and sisters have now questioned this belief. They say that although we labor and work for the Lord, we still sin often and then confess our sins, so we have not yet been cleansed. They have stated that the Lord is holy, so unholy people cannot meet Him. My question is: We who have sacrificed everything else and spend for the Lord, can we really be raised up into the kingdom of heaven? We really don't know the answer to this question, so we'd like you to talk to us about it.

Question 2: How does Almighty God do His work of judgment in the last days? How does He express His words to judge, cleanse and perfect man? This is the truth that we desperately need to know now. If we realize Almighty God's work, then we can really hear God's voice and be raised up before God's throne. Please tell us in more detail!

Question 3: We've believed in the Lord Jesus for many years, always working for the Lord and suffering greatly. We have never denounced the Lord Jesus' name or betrayed Him. Therefore, according to the Lord's promise, He will not abandon us. If the Lord has arrived, He should have lifted us into the kingdom of heaven first. Why did you accept first while we were left behind? We are not convinced! If we do not accept Almighty God's work in the last days, will we really be unable to be raptured into the kingdom of heaven? That is what I care about the most. How do you interpret this?

Question 4: All of us have believed in the Lord for many years, and have always followed the example of Paul in our work for the Lord. We have been faithful to the name and way of the Lord, and the crown of righteousness surely awaits us. Today, we need only focus on working hard for the Lord, and watching for His return. Only thus, can we be taken into the kingdom of heaven. That's because in the Bible it is said that "for they shall not be ashamed that wait for Me" (Isa 49:23). We believe the Lord's promise: He will take us into the kingdom of heaven at His return. Could there really be anything wrong with practicing in this way?

Question 5: We follow the example of Paul and we work very hard for the Lord, just like Paul said: "I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith." Is this not following the will of God? Practicing in this way should mean that we are qualified to be raptured and to enter into the kingdom of heaven, so why must we accept God's work of judgment and purification in the last days before we can be brought into the kingdom of heaven?

Question 6: We forsake everything else, spread the Lord's gospel, and shepherd the church. This kind of labor is the way to implement the heavenly Father's will. Is there anything wrong with our practice this way?

Question 7: Today we believe in the Lord Jesus; we suffer and sacrifice to spread the Lord's name, forsaking everything else. We are doing the heavenly Father's will. This means we have already been made holy. When the Lord arrives, He will definitely rapture us into the kingdom heaven.

Question 8: Since believing in the Lord, we have given everything to expend ourselves and have worked very hard for the Lord, and we have undergone quite a lot of persecution and tribulation. We have even been imprisoned for Him and we'd rather die than deny the name of the Lord or betray Him. I think that this is carrying out God's will. By suffering for the Lord and standing witness we can achieve holiness, and be qualified to see the Lord. As long as we continue to uphold this, when He returns we will be raptured into the kingdom of heaven.

VI. Questions and Answers on Being Saved and Being Fully Saved

Question 1: The Bible says, "For with the heart man believes to righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made to salvation" (Rom 10:10). We have already been saved through our faith in Jesus. Once we're saved, we're eternally saved. When the Lord arrives we will definitely be able to enter the kingdom of heaven.

Question 2: It is said in the Bible, "Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifies. Who is he that condemns?" (Rom 8:33–34). This proves that the Lord Jesus' crucifixion on the cross forgives us of all sin. The Lord doesn't see us as sinners anymore. Who can accuse us now?

Question 3: It's written, "There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus …" (Rom 8:1). Because we believe in Christ Jesus, it has already been guaranteed that we won't be condemned and can enter the kingdom of heaven!

Question 4: People are sinful, but the sin offering of the Lord Jesus is forever effective. As long as we confess our sins to the Lord, He will forgive us. We are sinless in the Lord's eyes, so we can enter the kingdom of heaven!

Question 5: You say that people who believe in God must accept God's work of judgment in the last days, and only then can their corrupt

disposition be changed. But we, in accordance with the Lord's requirements, practice humility and patience, love our enemies, bear our crosses, subdue our bodies, abandon worldly things, and we work and preach for the Lord and so on. So aren't all these our changes? Can't they become the credentials for our entry into the kingdom of heaven? I believe that as long as we seek in this way, we can attain purification, and enter into the kingdom of heaven?

Question 6: You say that if people want to be freed from sin and be cleansed, they must accept Almighty God's work of judgment in the last days. How does God judge and cleanse people in the last days? Throughout all these years that I've believed in the Lord, I thought that it'd be great if there came a time when people no longer sinned. At that time, I thought, life would no longer be painful!

Question 7: If we do not accept Almighty God's work of judgment, then can we really do the heavenly Father's will? Can we really enter the kingdom of heaven?

Question 8: As to those who have believed in the Lord Jesus for many years and sacrificed for Him their entire lives, if they do not accept Almighty God's work in the last days, they really won't be able to be raptured into the kingdom of heaven?

Question 9: If we accept Almighty God, are we guaranteed to enter the kingdom of heaven?

VII. Questions and Answers on the Name of God

Question 1: It is clearly written in the Bible: "Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever" (Heb 13:8). So the name of the Lord does not change, but you say that the name of the Lord Jesus will change in the last days. How can you explain that?

Question 2: God's name in each age cannot represent God's all, so what is the significance of His name in each age?

VIII. Questions and Answers on the Inside Story of the Bible

Question 1: I have studied the Bible for more than 20 years. I can be certain that there is no word of God outside of the Bible. All of God's word is in the Bible. Anything that violates or goes beyond the Bible is heresy and fallacy!

Question 2: The truths in the Bible are already complete. Having the Bible is enough for our belief in God. We don't need any new words!

Question 3: The Lord Jesus said it Himself that the Bible is His testimony. That's why our belief in the Lord must be based on the Bible. The Bible is our only path to knowing the Lord.

Question 4: You say the words in the book The Word Appears in the Flesh are God's new word! But the Revelation clearly states: "For I testify to every man that hears the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add to these things, God shall add to him the plagues that are written in this book" (Rev 22:18). Don't you add to the Bible?

Question 5: Paul said in 2 Timothy 3:16: "All scripture is given by inspiration of God…." This shows that everything in the Bible is the word of God. But there are actually people who say that not everything in the Bible is the word of God. Isn't this denying the Bible and deceiving people?

Question 6: Since Paul stated that "All scripture is given by inspiration of God," it is not wrong, because he was an apostle of God. God was telling mankind through Paul that scriptures were all inspired by God and are all the word of God. Do you dare deny this?

Question 7: I have studied the Bible for more than 20 years. I discovered that the Bible was written by more than 40 different authors during different times, but the content of what they wrote had no errors whatsoever. This shows that God is the true author of the Bible and that the Bible comes from the Holy Spirit.

Question 8: How can we believe in the Lord and gain life if we move away from the Bible?

IX. Questions and Answers on God's Work of Judgment in the Last Days

Question 1: You say that God becomes flesh in the last days to do the work of judgment. Does this have any basis in the Bible, or fulfill any biblical prophecies? Without a biblical basis, we shouldn't be so quick to believe it.

Question 2: The Lord Jesus was crucified as a sin offering to redeem mankind. We have accepted the Lord, and obtained salvation through His grace. Why do we still have to accept Almighty God's work of judgment and purification in the last days?

Question 3: I've believed in the Lord for many years and I've read the Bible quite a bit, so why haven't I seen the Lord prophesying that in the last days He will become flesh again and become the Son of man to perform the work of judgment? You bear witness that the Lord Jesus has already been incarnated again, that He is Almighty God, and that He's doing the work of judgment in the last days. Is there any biblical basis for this? Is this affirmed by the religious world?

Question 4: Just then, you said that the most prophesied thing in the Bible is God's judgment work in the last days. There are at least 200 places in the Bible mentioning that God will come to carry out His judgment. This is completely true. This was stated even more clearly in 1 Peter 4:17: "For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God." It seems God's judgment work in the last days is a certainty. But what you witnessed is God of the last days coming into the flesh to do His judgment work. This is different to what we accept. We believe the Lord in the last days will appear to mankind and work in the form of Jesus' spiritual body following the resurrection. This is also the view of the majority in religious circles. This concept of the returned Lord appearing to man and working in the flesh is something we still cannot see through, so please communicate some more with us.

Question 5: You testified that God becomes flesh again as the Son of man and does His work of judgment beginning at the house of God. This completely conforms with the Bible's prophecy, and I can accept it. But I don't understand whether this is the same as the great white throne judgment in the Book of Revelation. What we think is that the great white throne judgment is targeted at the non-believers that belong to the devil Satan. When the Lord comes, the believers will be taken up into heaven, and then He will send disaster to destroy the non-believers. That's the judgment before the great white throne. You testify to the start of God's judgment in the last days, but we haven't seen God bring disaster to destroy the non-believers. Then how could it be the great white throne judgment? What is God's judgment in the last days exactly? Please communicate this to us more clearly.

Question 6: You say that the Lord has come to do the work of judgment and purification in the last days, but the Lord Jesus said:

"And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment" (Jhn 16:8). The Lord Jesus' words and work have already achieved having people recriminate themselves for their sins, for righteousness, and for judgment. By confessing our sins to the Lord and repenting, we have already undergone His judgment, so what really is the difference between what you say is the work of judgment in the last days and the work of the Lord Jesus?

Question 7: Many brothers and sisters all think that our belief in the Lord Jesus means our sins have already been forgiven, and that we've enjoyed so much of the Lord's grace and all experienced the Lord's compassion and mercy. The Lord Jesus already does not see us as sinners, so we should be able to be brought directly into the kingdom of heaven. Then why did the Lord not bring us into the kingdom of heaven when He came, but still has to perform His work of judgment in the last days? Is God's judgment of the last days to cleanse and save mankind or to condemn and destroy? Many people are unable to see through this. Please fellowship about this to us more specifically.

Question 8: How exactly does God perform His judgment work to save and cleanse mankind in the last days?

Question 9: We accept God's work of the last days, but how do we experience God's judgment and chastisement so that we can receive the truth and life, get rid of our sinful nature, and achieve salvation to enter the kingdom of heaven?

Question 10: Many brothers and sisters who believe in the Lord still aren't clear and they believe this: The Lord Jesus redeemed us from our sins and He already sees us as free from sin. As long as we suffer and pay a price to spread the gospel of the Lord, and we behave well and stand witness well, when the Lord comes we should be able to be raptured into the kingdom of heaven. We will follow the Lord until the end, we do not resist Him or deny His name, so why do we still need to undergo God's work of judgment in the last days?

X. Questions and Answers on the Truth of Incarnation

Question 1: In all my years of faith, despite knowing that the Lord Jesus is God's incarnation, I didn't understand the truth of the incarnation. If the Lord's appearance in the second coming is similar to how the Lord Jesus was incarnated as the Son of man to do His work,

then we'll be unable to recognize the Lord Jesus, we'll be unable to greet the Lord's coming. I believe that the incarnation is a great mystery. Few are able to truly understand the truth of the incarnation. Please commune with us on this issue, what exactly is the incarnation.

Question 2: Why is it that God has to become flesh to do His work of judgment in the last days? In the Age of Law, God used Moses to do His work, so why can't God use man to do His work of judgment in the last days?

Question 3: You say that Christ is the truth, the way, and the life. This is the Holy Spirit's testimony and is unquestionable. But the Bible also has recorded the words of some great spiritual adepts and apostles of the Lord Jesus. Do their expressions count as God's word? If what they say also really counts as God's word, then are they not also the truth, the way, and the life? As far as I can tell, there's no difference between their words and those of the Lord Jesus, all count as God's word. Why don't they count as the truth, the way, and the life?

Question 4: I read Almighty God's words, "Corrupt Mankind Is More in Need of the Salvation of the Incarnate God." I think this is a fantastic passage of God's word, very practical, and very important. With regard to why corrupt mankind must receive the salvation of God's incarnation, this is an aspect of the truth that most people urgently need to understand. Please commune with us a little more on this.

Question 5: Almighty God has now become flesh and has come down to the earth. In the Lord's prayer, it says: "Your kingdom come, Your will be done in earth, as it is in heaven" (Mat 6:10). Aren't these words fulfilled in the work of Almighty God? Is the prophecy of "the tabernacle of God is with men" from the Book of Revelation related to Almighty God coming among mankind? What is the deeper meaning behind God becoming flesh in the last days?

XI. Questions and Answers on How to Differentiate Between the True Christ and False Christs

Question 1: I believe that if we are faithful to the name of the Lord Jesus and the way of the Lord and do not accept the deception of false Christs and false prophets, if we are alert as we wait, then the Lord will surely give us revelations when He comes. We don't need to listen

to the voice of the Lord to be raptured. The Lord Jesus said, “Then if any man shall say to you, See, here is Christ, or there; believe it not. For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; so that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect” (Mat 24:23–24). Do you not acknowledge the deception of the false Christs and false prophets? And so, we believe that all those who testify to the coming of the Lord are surely false. There is no need for us to search or examine. For when the Lord comes He will reveal to us, and will surely not forsake us. I believe that this is the right implementation. What do you think?

Question 2: Now some incidents of false Christs deceiving people have happened in the religious communities of various countries. There are a lot of people in South Korea who don’t have discernment, causing them to be deceived into following false Christs. This fulfills the Lord Jesus’ prophecy: “Then if any man shall say to you, See, here is Christ, or there; believe it not. For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; so that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect” (Mat 24:23–24). I personally believe that any preaching that says the Lord has returned is definitely false. We shouldn’t believe it in case we are being tricked!

Question 3: You have testified that Almighty God is the returned Lord Jesus and that He has expressed many words. But in South Korea there are some people who fake the returned Lord Jesus. They have also said some words and also wrote some books. Some have also gained followers. I would like to listen to what you think about how to distinguish the words of these false Christs.

Question 4: Regarding what you just fellowshiped about false Christs using misinterpreting the Bible and displaying signs and wonders to deceive people, I now have some discernment about this aspect. But I still have a question I want to ask. Some false Christs claim that God’s Spirit descended on them. They impersonate the returned Lord Jesus and deceive some people. How can we distinguish this?

XII. Questions and Answers on How to Differentiate Between the Work of God and the Work of Man

Question 1: We believe that the Lord Jesus returns mainly to rapture His believers. He can’t possibly do the work of judgment in the last

days to make overcomers. God raised up Brother Lin and used him. He has led us to be renewed, transformed, conformed, and glorified to become overcomers. When the Lord returns, our Local Church will be the first to be raptured. You testified that only God is capable of making overcomers. I want to ask: If we pursue according to the way led by Brother Lin, can't we be made overcomers?

Question 2: What's the difference between God's work and man's work? And what's the essential difference between God incarnate and the people who God uses?

Question 3: Most of our brothers and sisters think that God used Brother Lin. Brother Lin wrote so many spiritual books and gave us so many messages. His words were the nourishment and the way of life, and possessed the enlightenment and illumination of the Holy Spirit, like the apostles' epistles in the Bible. These words are of great benefit to us. They all accord with the truth. But you said that while the words of the men God uses may accord with the truth, they are not actually the truth. Then, what exactly is the truth?

Question 4: You have testified that Almighty God is God in the flesh and is performing God's judgment work of the last days. God incarnate is most difficult to recognize for mankind. In South Korea, there are a lot of people who treat man's work as God's work. There are even many people who treat the deceiving words of false Christs as God's work to be accepted and followed, causing them to be deceived and follow Satan. Please communicate to us how to distinguish between God's work and man's work and what differences there are between the work of God incarnate and the work of men used by God. We are in urgent need of understanding this aspect of the truth.

Question 5: The work in the Age of Law was performed by Moses as used by God. Why doesn't God use man to perform His judgment work of the last days? And why must He become flesh to do it Himself?

Question 6: The words of famous spiritual figures also conform with the truth and are constructive for people. If what they say conforms with the truth, then how is that any different to the words of God that are the truth?

Question 7: Only God's words are the truth and can be man's life. This is certain. But I am not very clear on the meaning of God's words being man's life and the results it can achieve. Please fellowship about this to us in more detail.

XIII. Questions and Answers on How to Differentiate Between Following God and Following Man

Question: Please share detailed fellowship on what is obeying and following God, and what is obeying and following man. Understanding this aspect of the truth is critical for us.

XIV. Questions and Answers on Dissecting "God-man Theory"

Question 1: "God became man that man may become God" is the supreme vision of Brother Lin's preachings! Even though what God created in the beginning was man, God's purpose in creating man was to get them to become God. At first, because mankind lacked God's life disposition, Satan was able to trick them into sinning. God's purpose in saving mankind is to dispense His life disposition into us. Won't we become God once we have acquired God's life disposition?! How could there be anything wrong here?

Question 2: About God's words in Genesis "Let us make man in our image, after our likeness" (Gen 1:26), I don't fully understand this. If God made man in His image, doesn't it mean we have the image of God? If we were made in God's image, are we man or are we God?

Question 3: Man can never become God, even if he lives out a bit of God's image. I can totally get behind that. But when we say man can become God so long as he can manage to live out God's image, we are not referring to the God with His person, we are instead referring to the God with His life disposition but without His person. If we live out God's image, then we will become God with the life of God, it's just that we won't have the person of God. So, I think the words "God became man that man may become God" are still perfectly valid.

Question 4: When the incarnate Lord Jesus was resurrected after His crucifixion, He became the life-giving Spirit. And thereby the life-giving Spirit dwells within us, blends with our spirit, and the two spirits will become one. So how could we not become God in the end? How could I be wrong about this?

Question 5: I still don’t understand. Does Christ have the image of God? God has us emulate Christ, and in the end if we can live out Christ, wouldn’t we have the image of God? Then wouldn’t we become God?

XV. Questions and Answers on Dissecting the Essence of the Pharisees

Question 1: Religious pastors and elders are all people who serve God in the church. It is reasonable to say that, when it comes to the return of the Lord, they should be watching and waiting, and treating it with caution. But why do they not only not seek or investigate the work of Almighty God of the last days, and instead make up rumors, judge and condemn Almighty God, and deceive and restrict believers from investigating the true way?

Question 2: Pastors and elders often read the scriptures and preach to people, pray for brothers and sisters, have love for believers and ask people to hold on to the Bible. If we say they are hypocritical Pharisees, most believers will not be able to see through or distinguish. Then please communicate to us in more detail.

Question 3: No matter what, pastors and elders all preach based on the Bible. Isn’t explaining the Bible and making people hold on to the Bible exalting and bearing witness to the Lord? Is it wrong for pastors and elders to explain the Bible? How could you say they are hypocritical Pharisees?

Question 4: Religious pastors and elders often explain the words of man in the Bible, especially the words of Paul, rather than spread the words of the Lord or discuss the intentions of the Lord Jesus. This is a fact. But there is still something I don’t understand. Isn’t all scripture inspired by God? Isn’t everything in the Bible the word of God? Why do you have to distinguish the words of man and the words of God in the Bible so clearly? Aren’t all the words of man in the Bible inspired by God?

Question 5: I believe that all scripture is inspired by God! The words of Paul cannot be wrong! Since you differentiate the words of God and the words of man in the Bible so clearly, then how does one distinguish which are God’s words and which are man’s words?

Question 6: I don't agree with what you've said! Belief in God is belief in the Bible. Moving away from the Bible is not believing in God!

Question 7: Most believers now still think that by believing in God in religion they are believing in the Lord Jesus and not pastors and elders, so how can they not be saved?

Question 8: Even though the religious world is ruled by pastors and elders and they are hypocrites who walk the path of the Pharisees, what do their sins have to do with us? Although we follow and listen to them, who we believe in is the Lord Jesus and not pastors and elders. I feel we have not embarked on the path of the Pharisees. How come we have also become Pharisees?

Question 9: I want to know how Almighty God of the last days performs His judgment work to save mankind from Satan's influence. Can you tell us about your experience and testimonies?

Question 10: Pastor Yuan of our church often expounds on the Bible, teaching us to be humble, patient, and obedient. He speaks very convincingly, and seems quite godly from the outside. Pastor Yuan also listened to your testimony of Almighty God's work in the last days with us. He also admits Almighty God's word is the truth, but why does he not accept it? Why is he even spreading rumors everywhere, condemning and resisting God's work in the last days, and blocking people from turning to Almighty God?

Question 11: Pastor Yuan was also persecuted by the CCP for his belief in the past. I never thought he could work hand in glove with the devilish CCP to resist Almighty God. Isn't this flagrantly opposing God? How could these pastors and leaders be so treacherous and malicious?

Question 12: Most of our brothers and sisters do not understand: Before the arrival of the Lord Jesus, the Pharisees often interpreted the Bible to others in the synagogue; they stood before people and prayed and used the rules of the Bible to condemn people; they looked very reverent on the outside and never seemed to have gone against the Bible, but why were the Pharisees cursed by the Lord Jesus? In what ways did they resist God? How did they display their hypocrisy? Why did they incur God's wrath?

Question 13: Through reading the Bible, we all know that the Jewish Pharisees condemned and resisted the Lord Jesus. When the Lord Jesus did His work, the Pharisees knew His words had authority and power. Nevertheless, they still fanatically resisted and condemned the Lord Jesus. They crucified Him on the cross. We do not understand and what was their nature and substance?

Question 14: Many brothers and sisters worship the pastors and elders in the heart. They do not understand why, although the pastors and elders often interpret the Bible and exalt the Bible, they still hate the truth and resist and condemn Almighty God incarnate. Interpreting the Bible and exalting the Bible, is that the same as bearing witness to the Lord and exalting the Lord?

XVI. Questions and Answers on Dissecting the Essence of Paul

Question 1: The apostle Paul once said, “I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith: From now on there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness …” (2Ti 4:7–8). Therefore, acting in accordance with Paul’s words means we are doing God’s will. In that case, we will definitely be able to enter the kingdom of heaven and gain rewards.

Question 2: You say Paul’s words are not the truth. Then why are his words in the Bible? Paul’s words are written in the Bible. Therefore, they were inspired by God; they represent God’s words. We should pursue them!

Question 3: Even if Paul’s words are not God’s words, yet after being called by God, he spread the gospel and endured suffering for the Lord for the rest of his life. He traveled so far and worked so hard to establish the churches. He paid such a heavy price. His contributions to the church are as plain as the eye can see. His faith in the Lord and the way he suffered for the Lord are an example for all Christians. Do you not accept these facts?

Question 4: Even if Paul wasn’t perfect, the Lord wouldn’t remember his past transgressions. Paul worked and suffered for the Lord for many years; he paid a higher price than anyone else. His suffering must have earned the Lord’s praise. Brother Paul is still our exemplar! He is an example to all Christians. If Paul did not obtain God’s praise, then who can?

Question 5: Paul's sacrifices and suffering were forced. We admit that as well. However, when you say that Paul in substance hated the truth and was the enemy of God, I don't agree with that. What are you basing that on?

Question 6: All these things you're talking about are sins Paul committed before he accepted the Lord's calling. However, after he was shone by the great light, he began traveling everywhere spreading the Lord's gospel. He established so many churches and led so many people to accept the salvation of the Lord Jesus. He wrote so many letters in support of the faithful. This shows that Brother Paul had already repented. You can't conclude that he was an enemy of the Lord Jesus based on his performance before he returned to the Lord.

Question 7: You say Paul did not exalt or bear witness to the Lord Jesus. I don't accept what you're saying. Brother Paul wrote so many letters. Weren't they all testimonies to the Lord Jesus?

Question 8: You say Paul never really repented. But Paul said that for him to live is Christ. How do you explain that?

XVII. Questions and Answers on Why the True Way Is Subject to Persecution

Question 1: I don't understand, if Eastern Lightning is the true way, then why would it be strongly opposed by the CCP government? Why would religious leaders also furiously condemn it? It's not like pastors and elders have not been persecuted by the CCP government. But when it comes to Eastern Lightning, how come the pastors and elders who serve God can have the same view and attitude as the CCP government? Just what is the reason behind this?

Question 2: If Eastern Lightning is the true way, then what is the basis of your confirmation? We believe in the Lord Jesus because He redeemed us, but what do you use to verify that Eastern Lightning is the true way?

Question 3: You bear witness that Eastern Lightning is the true way, but the Chinese Communist government condemns it as a cult. What's the difference between a proper religion and a cult?

Question 4: Under the rule of the CCP government, people can be arrested, persecuted, and even executed for accepting the true way! I

don’t understand, why is the CCP so afraid of the work of Almighty God?

Question 5: I used to think that the CCP’s days were numbered and that it should collapse soon, so wouldn’t it save a lot of trouble if I waited for it to collapse before I believed? But now I see that the purpose of the CCP persecuting and arresting us is so that we will be sent to hell! If we wait until the CCP perishes before we believe in Almighty God, would we still be able to receive God’s salvation in the last days and enter God’s kingdom? Would we miss our chance at salvation?

XVIII. Questions and Answers on the Way of Eternal Life

Question 1: Almighty God’s word says, “Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life.” I remembered what the Lord Jesus once said, “But whoever drinks of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life” (Jhn 4:14). We already know the Lord Jesus is the source of the living water of life, and the way of everlasting life. Could it be that Almighty God and the Lord Jesus are of the same source? Are Their work and words both of the Holy Spirit? Are Their work done by the same God?

Question 2: The Lord Jesus and Almighty God are the same God, but do different work in different ages. The Lord Jesus did the work of redemption, and preached the way of repentance. In the last days, Almighty God does the work of judging and purifying mankind, and brings them the way of everlasting life. I still have another question, what is the difference between the way of repentance and the way of eternal life?

Question 3: You say only those who obey the will of God receive the way of everlasting life. After we started believing in the Lord, we suffered and paid a price to spread the Lord’s gospel. We’ve shepherded the Lord’s flock, taken up the cross and followed the Lord, practiced humbleness, patience, and tolerance. Are you saying we haven’t been following God’s will? We know if we continue, we will become holy, and be raptured to the kingdom of heaven. Is this way of understanding and practice wrong?

Question 4: If we accept Almighty God's work in the last days, how should we then seek to receive the way of everlasting life?

Preface

The Church of Almighty God's continuous screening of films bearing witness to God's work in the last days has given rise to a resounding response from God's chosen people, and has rocked various religions and denominations. There are currently many people who are watching these films and seeking and investigating the work and words of Almighty God. Mankind has already started to awaken through God's words—His words will guide all of mankind, and His words will accomplish all things, which is in the process of coming true. This is adequate proof that bearing witness to God and His work through the medium of film has successfully borne fruit. So that God's chosen people may more quickly understand the truth and enter into reality, and may exalt God and bear witness to Him, and so that all those who long for God's appearance may better investigate the true way, the editorial team from The Church of Almighty God has put together critical questions and answers from these films that are related to the truth and compiled a book entitled Classic Questions and Answers on the Gospel of the Kingdom. These quintessential answers excerpted in this book all come from the experience and understanding of the truth held by God's chosen people. It can be said that they come from the enlightenment and illumination of the Holy Spirit, and are entirely in line with the truth. Not only can this book resolve the issues and notions that those who seek and investigate the true way may hold, but it is also a wonderful piece of reference material for God's chosen people to equip themselves with the truth and bear witness to God's work. Although these quintessential answers are of great help for people's pursuit and understanding of the truth, this of course does not mean that our understanding of the truth is complete. After all, our experiences are still too superficial, and our

understanding of the truth is limited. In front of the truth, all of us are eternally children, and the understanding that we share in fellowship can only be said to be in line with the truth. It absolutely cannot be called the truth, and it certainly cannot be equated with the words of God. It is our hope that all of God’s chosen people approach this book correctly.

I. Questions and Answers on the Desolation of Churches

Question 1: The last few years we've felt a growing desolation in our church. We've lost the faith and love we had at the start, and become weaker and more negative. Even we preachers sometimes feel darkened, and don't know what to talk about. We feel like we've lost the work of the Holy Spirit. We've also looked everywhere for a church with the Holy Spirit's work, but every church we see is as desolate as our own. Why are all denominations suffering famine?

Answer: The question you've asked is an important one. We all know that we live in the late period of the last days. The Lord Jesus once prophesied: "**And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold**" (Mat 24:12). Lawlessness in the world of religion is growing. Religious leaders don't abide by the Lord's commandments, they only abide by men's traditions. They only preach biblical knowledge to show off and testify to themselves. They don't testify to God or exalt God at all, and they've completely departed from the Lord's way, which is why God rejects and eliminates them. This is mainly why the religious world has lost the work of the Holy Spirit. But also, it's because the Lord Jesus has returned to flesh, and begun the work of judgment beginning with the house of God in the last days. As Christ of the last days—Almighty God expresses the whole truth of saving mankind to purify all who accept God's work of the last days, the work of the Holy Spirit turns to God's work of the last days. Those who accept Almighty God's work of judgment in the last days will receive the work of the Holy Spirit, and receive the provision and watering of the living water of life. Those who return before His throne, God will make them overcomers, and bring them into accordance with His will, while those who stop in religious place, and refuse to accept God's work of the last days, are left in dark desolation. This proves a prophecy in the Bible: "**And also I have withheld the rain from you, when there were**

yet three months to the harvest: and I caused it to rain on one city, and caused it not to rain on another city: one piece was rained on, and the piece whereupon it rained not withered. So two or three cities wandered to one city, to drink water; but they were not satisfied: yet have you not returned to Me, said Jehovah" (Amo 4:7–8). Here, "**one piece was rained on**" refers to the churches who accept and obey God's work of judgment in the last days. They have accepted the present words of God, and so enjoyed provision of the living water of life that flows from the throne. "**… and the piece whereupon it rained not withered**" refers to the religious pastors and elders who refuse to practice the Lord's words and disobey His commandments, and reject, resist, and condemn Almighty God's work of the last days, which leads the religious world to be rejected and cursed by God, to lose completely the work of the Holy Spirit and access to the living water of life, and become trapped in desolation. Just like at the end of the Age of Law, when the temple, once so full of Jehovah God's glory, became desolate. The Jewish people didn't hold to God's laws, improper sacrifices were made, and the temple became a place of trade, a den of thieves. Why did this happen? Primarily because the Jewish religious leaders didn't abide by Jehovah God's laws, and didn't fear God in their hearts. They abided by men's traditions, but rejected God's commandments. They departed completely from the way of God, and so were cursed by God. But another reason was that God had been incarnated to do the work of redeeming mankind in the Age of Grace. God's work had changed. All those who accepted the Lord Jesus' redemptive work received the work of the Holy Spirit, and had a new way to practice their faith, but those who rejected and resisted the work of the Lord Jesus were eliminated by God's work, and fell into dark desolation. If you want to receive the work of the Holy Spirit, and gain provision of the living water of life, the most

important thing you have to do is seek and investigate Almighty God's work of the last days. That will solve the darkness in your spirits and the desolation in your church at the root of the problem. Don't you think so?

—The movie script of From the Throne Flows the Water of Life

Question 2: You just talked about some lawless acts, so what specific acts do you mean when you say lawlessness is increasing?

Answer: The increase in lawlessness means mostly that those religious leaders, pastors, and elders go against God's will and go their own way instead. They don't follow God's commandments, and they misinterpret the Bible to shackle, control, and deceive people, drowning them in biblical theology, and taking them away from God, turning churches into places of religious ritual, and they treat their responsibilities and duties as access to status and income, which leads to many hypocritical acts that resist God in the church. Many people have revealed themselves to be unbelievers. They pursue worldly pleasures, depart from the way of the Lord, and even pass on God's words as mere fairy tales. They do not believe at all that the Lord Jesus will come again to speak and do work. Especially those religious leaders without any reverence for God in their hearts, and all kinds of evil men and unbelievers who do not love the truth are exposed. They openly commit evil acts, deny God's work of the last days, and reject the truth. These religious pastors and elders preach biblical knowledge and theology. They strive to protect their own status, influence, and income, but they refuse to follow the Lord's way or spread the Lord's word. They don't exalt or testify to the Lord at all. Instead they preach things that betray the truth in God's word, and use fallacies and human traditions to deceive and control people, stubbornly taking the Pharisees' path of resistance to God. Many religious pastors and elders also pursue worldly pleasures, they seek fashion, lust for money, and struggle for position. They are purely men of the world, purely unbelievers. What's most infuriating is that these religious leaders, pastors, and elders use their wild condemnation of God's work in the last days to deceive and control the believers, and they even collude with the CCP regime, standing with Satan against God, striving to create

their own kingdoms and re-crucifying God, for which God hates and curses them. These lawless acts are facts apparent to us all. They are nothing less than a betrayal from the religious world. And because of the increase in these lawless acts, the faith and love of many believers has gone cold, and they are negative and weak. Because these religious leaders have chosen their own path, and no longer follow God's way, the work of the Holy Spirit has been withdrawn, and the religious venues have been abandoned. The Holy Spirit's work has moved to those who accept Almighty God's work of the last days. And in these things we see that God's righteous disposition is intolerant of offense by man.

We just fellowshiped on some of the reasons the religious world is desolate. Now I'd like to add my own perspective and opinion to the root causes of the desolation in the religious world. First let's read two passages from Almighty God, which will help you better understand the causes of desolation in religion. Almighty God says, "**God will accomplish this fact: He will make all people throughout the universe come before Him and worship the God on earth, and His work in other places will cease, and people will be forced to seek the true way. It will be like Joseph: Everyone came to him for food, and bowed down to him, for he had things to eat. In order to avoid famine, people will be forced to seek the true way. The entire religious community will suffer severe famine, and only the God of today is the wellspring of living water, possessed of the ever-flowing wellspring provided for the enjoyment of man, and people will come and depend on Him**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Millennial Kingdom Has Arrived). "**God has made this group of people the sole focus of His work throughout all the universe. He has sacrificed all His heart's blood for you; He has reclaimed and given to you all the work of the Spirit throughout the universe. That is**

why I say you are the fortunate ones" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Is the Work of God As Simple As Man Imagines?). Almighty God has already clarified the cause of famine in the religious world. This allows us to see the omnipotence and wisdom of God. God has not abandoned those who love the truth and thirst for His appearance. God has used the famine's arrival to compel them to seek the true way, and make them find God's will and God's footsteps among the desolation in the churches. He did this to help those in every denomination who love the truth and truly believe in God to come before His throne. So God says "**God has made this group of people the sole focus of His work throughout all the universe.**" From this we can see that the work of the Holy Spirit has moved to those who accept God's work in the last days. And this is proof of the fact that God means for all those who come before His throne to become those after God's heart. These are the people who will be made overcomers by God before the disaster, and so the Lord Jesus' prophecies of the clever virgins attending the wedding feast with the Lamb will be borne out. The foolish virgins, who no matter how desolate or dark their churches become, remain in them and wait for death, are just like the Israelites who died in the wilderness after being led out of Egypt. The whole religious world has become a place of ruin, primarily because the religious world's leaders follow the path of the Pharisees, and betray the Lord's intention. They don't follow God's will, don't obey the Lord's commandments, and were abandoned by God long ago. Through the truth God incarnate expresses in the last days, their antichrist nature and substance is exposed, and they become those who re-crucify God, and are cursed by God. What is God's purpose in causing the religious world to face famine? He wants to force people to seek the true way. Only those who long to search for God's voice, and who accept Almighty God's work of

judgment in the last days will again receive the work of the Holy Spirit, provision of the living water of life which flows from His throne, and finally be saved and allowed to enter into the kingdom of heaven. These are the people who the Lord Jesus prophesied would be caught up into the kingdom of heaven. If we deny the judgment, chastisement, purification, and salvation by Almighty God's words, we will be eternally abandoned and eliminated. Just as Almighty God says, "**If you resist Christ of the last days, if you spurn Christ of the last days, there will be no one else to bear the consequences on your behalf. Furthermore, from this day onward you will not have another chance to gain the approval of God; even if you try to redeem yourself, you will never again behold the face of God. For what you resist is not a man, what you spurn is not some puny being, but Christ. Do you know what the consequences of this will be? You will not have made a small mistake, but committed a heinous crime. And so I advise everyone not to bare your fangs before the truth, or make careless criticisms, for only the truth can bring you life, and nothing except the truth can allow you to be reborn and behold the face of God again**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life).

—The movie script of From the Throne Flows the Water of Life

Question 3: Right now, desolate churches are widespread throughout the entire religious world, but we have never fully understood the primary cause. That's why we've been earnestly reading the Old Testament and have focused on how the actions of the Jewish chief priests, scribes and Pharisees in the late Age of Law led to such desolation in religion. Although some problems have been discovered, it's never been entirely clear. We've also gone to churches in many different places and from different denominations, but we haven't seen the work of the Holy Spirit. We're not very clear on why the entire religious world is so desolate. What's the real reason for this?

Answer: Now, the whole of the world of religion is a widespread desolation, devoid of the work of the Holy Spirit, and many people's faith and love have cooled—this has already become an accepted fact. What exactly is the primary cause of the desolation in the world of religion is a question that all of us must thoroughly understand. First let us look back a moment at why the temple became desolate in the latter days of the Age of Law, and we will then be able to understand thoroughly the cause of the religious world's desolation in the last days. In the latter days of the Age of Law, the Jewish leaders did not keep God's commandments, they walked their own path and went against God; this is the main reason that directly resulted in the desolation of the temple. The Lord Jesus exposed and rebuked the Pharisees, saying: "**Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for you are like to white washed sepulchers, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness. Even so you also outwardly appear righteous to men, but within you are full of hypocrisy and iniquity**" (Mat 23:27–28).

"**Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchers of the righteous, And say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets. Why you be witnesses to yourselves, that you are the children of them which killed the prophets. Fill you up then the measure of your fathers. You serpents, you generation of vipers, how can you escape the damnation of hell? Why, behold, I send to you prophets, and wise men, and scribes: and some of them you shall kill and crucify; and some of them shall you whip in your synagogues, and persecute them from city to city: That on you may come all the righteous blood shed on the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel to the blood of Zacharias son of Barachias, whom you slew between the temple and the altar. Truly I say to you, All these things shall come on this generation**" (Mat 23:29–36).

"**Well has Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honors Me with their lips, but their heart is far from Me. However, in vain do they worship Me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. For laying aside the commandment of God, you hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things you do. And He said to them, Full well you reject the commandment of God, that you may keep your own tradition**" (Mak 7:6–9).

It can clearly be seen from the words of the Lord Jesus that exposed the Pharisees, that the doings of the Jewish chief priests, scribes and Pharisees were in defiance of God and went against Him. They violated God's laws and commandments and they only observed religious traditions. This is sufficient to prove that their serving God was actually defying Him,

and that it betrayed God's will. Particularly at the time of the manifestation and work of the Lord Jesus, they wildly condemned and defied Him, and their nature and essence were thoroughly exposed. It can therefore be seen that the main cause which led to the desolation of Judaism was that the Jewish chief priests, scribes and Pharisees defied God and went against Him. Another was that God's work had already been transferred. Beyond the temple, the incarnate Lord Jesus had launched the work of redemption in the Age of Grace. That is, God's work forged onward on the foundation of the work of the Age of Law, and the core of God's work moved onto the work of redemption in the Age of Grace. Once the Lord Jesus had started His work of redemption, the Age of Grace was begun and the Age of Law was ended. Only those who accepted the Lord Jesus had the Holy Spirit's work on them and had the Lord's guidance, while those who remained in the temple, who cast the Lord Jesus aside, defied and condemned Him, were naturally forsaken by the work of God, falling into darkness and suffering the curses and punishment of God. Therefore, we can say with certainty that the desolation of the world of religion during the Age of Law was most definitely caused by man and was entirely because the religious leaders strayed from the Lord's way, did not keep the Lord's commandments, betrayed God's will and set themselves against God. If the Jewish leaders had been able to hold to the Lord's way and keep the Lord's commandments, would the Lord Jesus still have gone into the wilderness to preach and work? Would He still have gone amongst the unbelievers to seek for those who would follow God? Absolutely not. The Lord Jesus would certainly have gone first into the temple and into synagogues to preach, appearing to man and doing His work. So why didn't the Lord Jesus do this? Obviously, it was entirely because those within the temple and within synagogues did not accept the Lord Jesus, but instead condemned and

defied Him, even going everywhere to try to arrest Him. Because of this, the Lord Jesus had no choice but to go into the wilderness to preach and work and to go amongst the unbelievers to seek for those who would follow Him. Intelligent people can all see this fact clearly. Now, we understand the cause of the desolation of the religious world in the latter days of the Age of Law, so let us look at the cause of the desolation of the religious world in the last days. We can all see that the pastors and elders of the world of religion in the last days mainly take preaching Bible knowledge and theological theories as their priority within churches. They frequently use their explanations of the Bible to flaunt themselves and show themselves off so that others worship them, and they do not follow the words or commandments of the Lord Jesus and do not keep to the Lord's way. They seldom preach about life entry and they never lead people to practice or experience the Lord's words in a way that will gain them an understanding of the truth and knowledge of the Lord, with the result that all believers in the world of religion stray from the Lord's way. They may even have believed in the Lord for many years, yet all they understand is just Bible knowledge and theological theories, with no knowledge of the Lord at all, no reverence for Him, no obedience, having completely strayed from the Lord's words and become people who believe in the Lord but don't know Him, and who are capable of defying and betraying the Lord. From this it can be seen that the leaders of the world of religion have completely strayed from the Lord's way, which has resulted in them losing the work of the Holy Spirit and losing God's blessings; it can be said that this is the primary cause of the desolation of the world of religion. Another cause is that God's work has been transferred and the Lord Jesus has already returned as the incarnate Almighty God who does the work of judgment which begins in God's house, and which is based on the foundation of the Lord Jesus' work

of redemption, and He has established the Age of Kingdom and ended the Age of Grace. The core of the work of the Holy Spirit has been transferred into God's work of judgment in the last days, and only those who accept Almighty God will have the work of the Holy Spirit and can enjoy the supply of the living water of life which flows forth from the throne. Those who cannot keep up with God's present work and who refuse to accept Almighty God have lost the work of the Holy Spirit and have fallen into darkness. The pastors and elders of the world of religion in particular, facing Almighty God's work of the last days, not only do they not seek or investigate it, but they also wildly defy and condemn God, disseminate all kinds of rumors and falsehoods to deceive and control believers, and they obstruct people from seeking and investigating the true way. They long ago aggravated God's disposition and earned God's hatred and curses, so how could they not be forsaken and eliminated by God? We have now seen that since the appearance of the "Four Blood Moons" the great disasters are to begin very soon. All those who have not accepted Almighty God will certainly fall into the disasters and will therein suffer chastisement and refinement, while those who accept Almighty God will be those who are raptured before the disasters. Those who have not accepted Almighty God can only fall into the disasters and wait to be raptured after the disasters. Will such people not be forsaken and eliminated by the Lord? After the disaster, how many people will there be left to be raptured? Now, almost the entire world of religion is under the control of this gang of pastors and leaders who hate the truth and set themselves against God, so how could it obtain the work of the Holy Spirit in this situation? And how could it have avoided becoming desolate? This is the fundamental cause of the desolation of the religious world.

We now understand the primary cause for the desolation of the world of religion, which is that the leaders of the world of religion don't follow the Lord's words, but on the contrary have strayed from His way, they do not keep His commandments, they have violated God's will completely and have become people who defy God. Secondly, because the leaders of the world of religion have become people who defy God and none of them are able to accept or obey God's work, God's work has therefore been transferred, and the world of religion has lost the work of the Holy Spirit and has fallen into darkness. Why, when the Lord Jesus did His work back then, did He not preach in the temple? It was because all the chief priests and elders in the temple were people who defied the Lord. If the Lord Jesus had done His work in the temple, He would only have been cast aside and condemned, or immediately arrested and nailed to the cross—isn't that a fact? This is the primary reason for the transferal of God's work. If the chief priests and elders in the temple could have complied with the Lord's words and served God in conformity with His will, how would the temple have become desolate? And how would God's work have been transferred? Tell me, isn't this the case? The desolation of the world of religion also completely fulfills the prophecy in the Bible: "**And also I have withheld the rain from you, when there were yet three months to the harvest: and I caused it to rain on one city, and caused it not to rain on another city: one piece was rained on, and the piece whereupon it rained not withered. So two or three cities wandered to one city, to drink water; but they were not satisfied: yet have you not returned to Me,** said Jehovah" (Amo 4:7–8). "**Behold, the days come,** said the Lord Jehovah, **that I will send a famine in the land, not a famine of bread, nor a thirst for water, but of hearing the words of Jehovah**" (Amo 8:11). From these two pieces of scripture we can understand that the "one city" in "**to rain on**

one city" refers to the church where God incarnate appears and does His work, and "another city" in "**not to rain on another city**" naturally refers to the world of religion which does not heed God's words, does not follow God's commandments and which denies, defies and condemns the manifestation and work of God incarnate. God causes famine to befall the world of religion in order to force those within religion who sincerely believe in God and love the truth to leave religion, to search for the footsteps of God's work, to search for what the Holy Spirit says to all churches and to seek the manifestation and work of God. All those who hear the voice of God and who accept and obey Almighty God's work of judgment in the last days are the wise virgins and are those who are caught up before the throne of God. These people are all attending the wedding feast of the Lamb and enjoying the supply of the living water of life that flows forth from the throne; their original faith and love have been restored and they are training in eating and drinking the words of God, practicing and experiencing God's words, and they will achieve an understanding of the truth and entry into reality. When these people understand the truth and have a true knowledge of God, they will then be able to revere God and obey Him, and in this way obtain a new life from God! All those religious organizations or individuals that don't accept the work of Almighty God are detested, rejected and eliminated by God, and are devoid of the work of the Holy Spirit—this is beyond all doubt! Let us read the words of Almighty God: "**God will accomplish this fact: He will make all people throughout the universe come before Him and worship the God on earth, and His work in other places will cease, and people will be forced to seek the true way. It will be like Joseph: Everyone came to him for food, and bowed down to him, for he had things to eat. In order to avoid famine, people will be forced to seek the true way. The entire**

religious community will suffer severe famine, and only the God of today is the wellspring of living water, possessed of the ever-flowing wellspring provided for the enjoyment of man, and people will come and depend on Him" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Millennial Kingdom Has Arrived). "**God has made this group of people the sole focus of His work throughout all the universe. He has sacrificed all His heart's blood for you; He has reclaimed and given to you all the work of the Spirit throughout the universe. That is why I say you are the fortunate ones. Moreover, He has shifted His glory from Israel, His chosen people, onto you, and He shall make the purpose of His plan fully manifest through this group. Therefore, you are the ones who will receive the inheritance of God, and even more than this, you are the heirs to God's glory**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Is the Work of God As Simple As Man Imagines?).

We see clearly from the words of Almighty God that God has never discarded those who sincerely believe in Him and who long for the manifestation of God. Through His almightiness and wisdom, God saves those who believe in Him sincerely so that they break away from the bonds and control of the antichrists and evil men of the religious world, and He causes them to be caught up before the throne of God and to accept the judgment, purification and perfection of God's words. Almighty God of the last days does His work of judgment and expresses the entire truth that purifies and saves mankind, so that a group of overcomers may be made before the disasters, these being His first fruits, and this fulfills the prophecy in the Book of Revelation: "**These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. These are they which follow the Lamb wherever He goes. These were redeemed from among men, being the first fruits to God and to the Lamb**" (Rev 14:4). After this

group of overcomers are made by God, the work of judgment beginning in God's house which is done by God incarnate will be temporarily concluded, thereafter God will bring down the great disasters to reward the good and punish the wicked. At that time, all those who have not accepted God's work of judgment in the last days and who condemn and defy Almighty God will all fall into the disasters and will therein suffer the refinement of being judged and chastised. Only if we leave religion, keep pace with the footsteps of the Lamb, accept and obey Almighty God's work in the last days and undergo the judgment and purification before the seat of Christ, can we then be perfected by God into overcomers and only then will we be spared from trials while all under heaven have to suffer trials. Only these overcomers who have been made by God—these first fruits—are qualified to inherit the promise and the blessings of God! God has now already made a group of overcomers in mainland China, and with the great disasters just around the corner, all those who condemn and defy Almighty God will fall into the disasters and be punished, losing forever any chance of being saved.

—The movie script of The City Will Be Overthrown

II. Questions and Answers on the Way of the Lord's Arrival (Secret and Open)

Question 1: The Lord’s promise is that He will come again to take us into the kingdom of heaven, and yet you testify that the Lord has already been incarnated to do the work of judgment in the last days. The Bible clearly prophesies that the Lord will descend with power and great glory on clouds. This is quite different from what you’ve testified, that the Lord has already been incarnated and secretly descended among men.

Answer: You say that the Lord promised man that He would come again to take man into the kingdom of heaven, that is for sure, because the Lord is faithful, He will invariably make good on His promises. But we need to first be clear that the Lord's coming again through incarnation in the last days to do the work of judgment is directly related to how we are raptured into the kingdom of heaven. If we study the Bible closely, evidence of this is not hard to find. In several different passages from the Bible, it is clearly prophesied that the second coming of God is the incarnation. For instance: “**Be you therefore ready also: for the Son of man comes at an hour when you think not**” (Luk 12:40). “**For as the lightning, that lightens out of the one part under heaven, shines to the other part under heaven; so shall also the Son of man be in His day. But first must He suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation**” (Luk 17:24–25). All of these prophecies speak of the Son of man or the Son of man comes. This phrase the Son of man refers to One who is born to a human and has normal humanity. So the Spirit can’t be called the Son of man. For instance, because Jehovah God is Spirit, He cannot be called the Son of man. Some people have seen angels, angels are also spiritual beings, so they cannot be called the Son of man. All those that have the appearance of man but are composed of spiritual bodies cannot be called the Son of man. The incarnate Lord Jesus was called the Son of man and Christ because He was the incarnate flesh of God’s Spirit and so

became an ordinary and normal man, living in the company of other men. So when the Lord Jesus said **the Son of man** and **the Son of man comes**, He was referring to God's coming through incarnation in the last days. Especially when He said, "**first must He suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation,**" this proves even more explicitly that when the Lord comes again, He comes by becoming flesh. If He didn't come in fleshly form but rather as a spiritual body, He certainly wouldn't experience any suffering and certainly wouldn't be rejected by this generation, that's undoubtable. So, the Lord Jesus' return is definitely in the form of the incarnation and comes to do the work of judgment in the last days.

Many people ask: Didn't the Lord promise that He would come again to take us into the kingdom of heaven? When He comes, why does He still have to do the work of judgment starting from the house of God? Actually, the Lord does the work of judgment to make the overcomers, that is, to rapture the saints. If we look, there is plenty of evidence in the Bible to explain why when the Lord comes in the last days He must do the work of judgment. This prophecy that God will come again in the last days to do the work of judgment appears more than anything else in the Bible, there are at least over 200 instances, and there are many scriptures that prophesy God's incarnation doing the work of judgment. For instance, "**And He shall judge among the nations, and shall rebuke many people**" (Isa 2:4). "For He comes to judge the earth: with righteousness shall He judge the world, and the people with equity" (Psm 98:9). "**Saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to Him; for the hour of His judgment is come**" (Rev 14:7). "Because He has appointed a day, in the which He will judge the world in righteousness by that man whom He has ordained; whereof He has given assurance to all men, in that He has raised Him from the dead" (Act 17:31). "**And has given him authority to execute judgment also, because**

he is the Son of man" (Jhn 5:27). "**For the Father judges no man, but has committed all judgment to the Son …**" (Jhn 5:22). "**He that rejects me, and receives not my words, has one that judges him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day**" (Jhn 12:48). "**For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God**" (1Pe 4:17). And there are many others. These scriptures allow us to clearly see that God's incarnation will surely come in the last days to do the work of judgment.

God's incarnation in the last days works through expressing His word to judge, purify and save mankind. All those that can hear the returned Lord Jesus' voice and seek and accept Him are the wise virgins who will go with Him to the wedding feast. This fulfills the prophecy of the Lord Jesus: "**And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom comes; go you out to meet him**" (Mat 25:6). The wise virgins hear the Lord's voice and come to greet Him; the next thing they know, they are raptured by the Lord before the throne to come face to face with Him. They accept God's judgment, purification, and perfection in the last days and finally, through the judgment by God's words, their corrupt disposition is purified and they are perfected into overcomers. As you can see, if we want to attain that which the Lord has promised, we must first come before Christ of the last days, Almighty God, accept and experience God's judgment and chastisement in the last days, so as to be purified and perfected by God. If we don't, then we do not qualify to be raptured into the kingdom of heaven. Let's read some passages of Almighty God's words. Almighty God says, "**You only know that Jesus shall descend during the last days, but how exactly will He descend? A sinner such as you, who has just been redeemed, and has not been changed, or been perfected by God, can you be after God's heart? For you, you who are still of**

your old self, it is true that you were saved by Jesus, and that you are not counted as a sinner because of the salvation of God, but this does not prove that you are not sinful, and are not impure. How can you be saintly if you have not been changed? Within, you are beset by impurity, selfish and mean, yet you still wish to descend with Jesus—you should be so lucky! You have missed a step in your belief in God: You have merely been redeemed, but you have not been changed. For you to be after God's heart, God must personally do the work of changing and cleansing you; if you are only redeemed, you will be incapable of attaining sanctity. In this way you will be unqualified to share in the good blessings of God, for you have missed out a step in God's work of managing man, which is the key step of changing and perfecting. You, a sinner who has just been redeemed, are therefore incapable of directly inheriting God's inheritance" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Concerning Appellations and Identity). "**Christ of the last days brings life, and brings the enduring and everlasting way of truth. This truth is the path by which man gains life, and it is the only path by which man shall know God and be approved by God. If you do not seek the way of life provided by Christ of the last days, then you shall never gain the approval of Jesus, and shall never be qualified to enter the gate of the kingdom of heaven, for you are both a puppet and prisoner of history**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life). "**Those who wish to gain life without relying on the truth spoken by Christ are the most ridiculous people on earth, and those who do not accept the way of life brought by Christ are lost in fantasy. And so I say that those who do not accept Christ of the last days shall forever be despised by God. Christ is man's gateway to the**

kingdom during the last days, and there are none who can go around Him. None may be perfected by God except through Christ" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life). The words of Almighty God already point the way toward the kingdom of heaven. Christ of the last days is the gate to entry into the kingdom of heaven. If man does not experience the work of judgment of Christ in the last days, he cannot be purified and perfected, and will never enter into God's kingdom. This is the authority manifested by the incarnate God. This proves that in the Lord's second coming, He will surely be incarnated in a flesh to do the work of judgment in the last days. God has already accomplished this much. If there are still those that think that they can be raptured into the kingdom of heaven without experiencing God's work in the last days, this is a symptom of their conceptions and illusions, it will never come to fruition.

Some people say if the Lord has truly come as the incarnation, then how come many passages of the Bible say that He will come with clouds for all to see? How do you explain this? In the Bible there are several prophecies which state that the Lord will come upon clouds with His power and great glory. This is true. But, there are even more passages in the Bible that prophesy that the Lord will come secretly. For instance: "**I come as a thief**" (Rev 16:15). "**… for in such an hour as you think not the Son of man comes**" (Mat 24:44). "**But of that day and that hour knows no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father**" (Mak 13:32). As you see, there are two ways in which the Lord returns: one way is in secret, the other is out in the open. The judgment work of the incarnate Almighty God we've testified to todays is just the work of the Lord coming in secret. Because God's incarnation has come among men in the form of a normal, average person, to man, He appears in secret, no one

can tell that He is God, no one knows His true identity. Only when the Son of man begins to work and speak do those that can distinguish His voice begin to recognize Him. Those that fail to distinguish His voice will certainly treat Him as a regular person, denying and rejecting Him. Just as when the Lord Jesus was incarnated to do His work, He seemed like an ordinary and normal man in outward appearance, so most people denied, resisted and condemned Him, while some, through the Lord Jesus' word and work, were able to recognize Him as the incarnate Christ, the appearance of God. Now is the stage where Almighty God comes in secret to do His work and save mankind. He is currently engaged in expressing His word to judge, purify, and perfect mankind. At this point, man will certainly not see the Lord appearing in public atop clouds. Only after a group of overcomers have been made and the work of God's incarnation and secret descent among man is complete, at which time the calamities will visit upon earth and God will punish the wicked while rewarding the good, appearing openly before all the nations of earth. At this time, the prophecies of the Lord's public descent on earth will be fulfilled, just as is said in the Bible: "**And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory**" (Mat 24:30). "**Behold, he comes with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him**" (Rev 1:7). When man sees the Lord appearing to all of humanity in public atop clouds, in theory they should be overjoyed, and yet here it says "shall all the tribes of the earth mourn." Why is this? This is because when God finally appears in public, the salvation work of God's incarnation during His secret descent among man will already be complete and God will have started His work of rewarding the good and punishing

the evil. At this time, all those that rejected God's secret work will have completely lost the chance to be saved. Those that pierced Him, which is to say, those that resisted and condemned Christ of the last days, Almighty God, how could they not beat their breasts in despair, wail and grind their teeth, knowing that the One they resisted and condemned is the second coming of the Lord Jesus? So that's how the scene of "shall all the tribes of the earth mourn" will appear. Let's read another passage of Almighty God's word.

Almighty God says, "**Many people may not care what I say, but I still want to tell every so-called saint who follows Jesus that, when you see Jesus descend from the heaven upon a white cloud with your own eyes, this will be the public appearance of the Sun of righteousness. Perhaps that will be a time of great excitement for you, yet you should know that the time when you witness Jesus descend from the heaven is also the time when you go down to hell to be punished. That will be the time of the end of God's management plan and it will be when God rewards the good and punishes the wicked. For the judgment of God will have ended before man sees signs, when there is only the expression of truth. Those who accept the truth and do not seek signs, and thus have been purified, shall have returned before the throne of God and entered the Creator's embrace. Only those who persist in the belief that 'The Jesus who does not ride upon a white cloud is a false Christ' shall be subjected to everlasting punishment, for they only believe in the Jesus who exhibits signs, but do not acknowledge the Jesus who proclaims severe judgment and releases the true way of life. And so it can only be that Jesus deals with them when He openly returns upon a white cloud. … The return of Jesus is a great salvation for those who are capable of accepting the truth, but for those who are unable to**

accept the truth it is a sign of condemnation. You should choose your own path, and should not blaspheme against the Holy Spirit and reject the truth. You should not be an ignorant and arrogant person, but someone who obeys the guidance of the Holy Spirit and longs for and seeks the truth; only in this way will you benefit" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. By the Time You Behold the Spiritual Body of Jesus, God Will Have Made Heaven and Earth Anew)**..**

From Almighty God's words we've realized that the work done by God's incarnation in the last days during His secret descent among man is a crucial stage of work in God's perfection of man. In God's six-thousand-year management plan, this work represents an extremely rare opportunity for God to perfect man. All those that accept God's secret work and are perfected have received God's special grace and are the most blessed. If we don't cherish this extremely rare opportunity and miss out on God's work of making the overcomers, we can only wail and grind our teeth, cast in the throes of deep regret.

—The movie script of The Mystery Of Godliness

Question 2: I've believed in the Lord for over half my life. I've worked tirelessly for the Lord and have been on constant lookout for His second coming. If the Lord came, why didn't I receive His revelation? Has He cast me aside? This has left me very confused. How do you explain this?

Answer: Man thinks that if he believes in the Lord for half his life, works hard for the Lord, and vigilantly awaits His second coming, when the Lord comes again He will give revelation to them. This is man's conception and imagination and is not in keeping with the fact of God's work. The Jewish Pharisees compassed land and sea spreading the way of God. Did the Lord Jesus ever give them any revelation when He came? As for the disciples that followed the Lord Jesus, which among them followed the Lord Jesus because they had been given revelation? Not one of them! You might argue that Peter received God's revelation and recognized that the Lord Jesus is Christ, the Son of God, but that was after Peter had been following the Lord Jesus for some time and had heard Him preach for some time and had some knowledge of Him in his heart. Only then did he receive a revelation from the Holy Spirit and was able to recognize the Lord Jesus' true identity. Certainly Peter did not receive any revelations prior to following the Lord Jesus, this is fact. Those that followed the Lord Jesus were only able to recognize that the Lord Jesus was the coming Messiah after hearing Him preach for some time. They didn't follow Him because they had received a revelation in advance that allowed them to recognize who the Lord Jesus was. In the last days, Almighty God has descended secretly among man to do the work of judgment. Millions of people have accepted and followed Almighty God, but not one of them does so because they received a revelation from the Holy Spirit. We follow Almighty God because we recognized God's voice in our reading of Almighty God's word and communing on the truth. These facts prove that when God is incarnated

to do His work, He certainly does not give revelations to any man to believe in and follow Him. Not to mention, in the last days God expresses truth to do the work of judgment. God's utterance of His word to the whole universe is His work of the last days. All can hear God's voice. God's speech in the last days represents the first time since God's creation of the world that God has proclaimed His word to all of humanity and to the entire universe. In Revelation, God said many times "**He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit said to the churches.**" In the last days, God works through utterance of His word and expression of the truth to find His sheep. God's sheep can hear God's voice. All those that hear and understand God's voice are God's sheep, are the wise virgins. Those that do not understand God's voice must be the foolish virgins. In this all men are distinguished each unto his own kind. This shows how wise and righteous God is!

God has expressed so much of His word, so much of His voice. If we still can't hear and recognize Him, then are we not just foolish virgins? From every denomination, there're some believers who have heard the voice of God and returned to Him. Are these not just the "stolen" treasure? The Lord has descended in secret to reclaim these treasures, to make a group of overcomers before the disasters out of those who have first been raptured before God's throne. As for those that wait passively for God's revelation but fail to recognize God's voice in the words He expresses, it can only be said that they do not love the truth, do not know God, and are surely not God's sheep. Naturally, these are the people that are cast off and eliminated by God. Just as the Lord Jesus said to Thomas: "**because you have seen me, you have believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed**" (Jhn 20:29). The Lord Jesus said early on: "**My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me**" (Jhn 10:27). "**Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and**

open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me" (Rev 3:20). God's wisdom is apparent here. If God gave revelations to man so that they would believe in Him, then why would God still say that God's sheep hear His voice? Aren't they contradictory? God determines whether people are of God based upon whether they can recognize God's voice. This is God's fairness and righteousness. As you see, those that did not receive God's revelation and yet still recognized God's voice and directly accepted Almighty God are the truly blessed. So, in studying the true way, receiving God's revelation is not important, the key is whether or not you recognize the voice of God in Almighty God's words. Only those who realize that God's word is all truth and accept God, are true believers, lovers of truth and those that thirst for God's appearance. If man just waits to receive God's revelation only, then it's hard to say if this person is a real lover of the truth and one who knows God's voice. So those that have accepted that the Lord's coming have done so by listening for the Lord's voice and recognizing that His word is truth. And that's why they accept and obey the Lord's reappearance and work. Only such people are truly raptured before God. If someone just waits for God's revelation, but neglects to study the words the Holy Spirit speaks to all churches, then such a person has been eliminated and cast off by God's work, and will be among those that wail and gnash their teeth when caught up in the cataclysms.

—The movie script of The Mystery Of Godliness

III. Questions and Answers on Rapture

Question 1: The Lord said it to us long ago: "**I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you to myself; that where I am, there you may be also**" (Jhn 14:2-3). The Lord Jesus has already reserved a place for us in the heaven. When He returns, He will directly lift us into the kingdom of heaven. If the Lord has already returned, why are all His saints still on the earth? Why haven't they been raised up?

Answer: The Lord has prepared a place for His believers. That is true. But is this place on earth or in heaven? We're not really sure about that. We think the heavenly kingdom is in heaven, but that's based on our own conceptions and imaginations. Is that really the truth, though? Let's see what the Lord Jesus said: "**After this manner therefore pray you: Our Father which are in heaven, Hallowed be your name. Your kingdom come, Your will be done in earth, as it is in heaven**" (Mat 6:9-10). The Lord Jesus clearly told us that God's kingdom is on the earth, not in heaven. God's will shall be done on earth as it is in heaven. Let's read from Revelation 21:2-3: "**And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven…. Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God.**" Let's turn to Revelation 11:15: "**The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ; and he shall reign for ever and ever.**" These prophecies mentioned "**the tabernacle of God is with men**," "**… new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven**," "**The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ**." This proves that God will build His kingdom on earth, and He will dwell on earth alongside mankind. The kingdoms of the world will all become Christ's kingdoms, and they will last forever. If we believe God's

kingdom is in heaven based on our own conceptions and imaginings, believe that when the Lord comes He will take us up into heaven, won't His previous words be in vain? In reality, the final result of God's management plan to save humanity is the establishment of God's kingdom on earth. Almighty God—Christ of the last days—does His work of judging and cleansing mankind in order to make a group of overcomers on the earth. Those who obtain God's salvation, are made perfect and become overcomers are the ones who can practice God's words and follow His way on the earth. They are the people of His kingdom. After these overcomers have been created, God's will will be fulfilled on the earth. Then Christ's kingdom will be established on earth, and God will gain full glory. In the end, He will fulfill the prophecies in the Book of Revelation. Are we still not clear on these facts? What place has the Lord Jesus prepared for us? He ordained that we were to be born in the last days, meet Him on earth when He returns, accept God's cleansing and be perfected, and become overcomers so that we can carry out God's will, and all kingdoms on earth will be made into Christ's kingdoms. That is God's will. God comes to earth but we try to go up to heaven. By doing this, aren't we going against God's work and His will? If He raises us up into the air, well, there's no food and no place to live there, how will we survive? Isn't that all just our conceptions and imaginings? Would the Lord do something like that? The fact that we could think like that, shows that we are really childish. We're just like having our heads in the clouds!

—The movie script of Awakening from the dream

Question 2: We still haven't determined whether God's kingdom is on earth or in heaven. The Lord Jesus once talked about "the kingdom of heaven being at hand" and "the kingdom of heaven coming." If it is the kingdom of heaven, it should be in heaven. How can it be on earth?

Answer: We should all be clear that "Heaven" is always referred to as God. The "heavenly kingdom" obviously refers to God's kingdom. Revelation says, "**the tabernacle of God is with men**," "**The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ."** This means that God's kingdom will be established on earth. In the end, the kingdoms of earth will become God's kingdom. After the old world is destroyed in the great disasters, the Millennial Kingdom will appear. The kingdoms of the earth will become the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Christ. Then God's will will be done on earth as it is in heaven. This will completely fulfill the prophecy: New Jerusalem will come to earth. God has become flesh and does the work of judgment in the last days to end this dark, evil generation. All who hear God's voice and are raptured before His throne will be perfected into overcomers. Then the great disasters will begin. Only those who have been cleansed and saved by God's work in the last days will survive. They will become the people of God's kingdom. We are the most blessed to be able to accept God's work in the last days here today. We who are lucky enough to hear God's voice and be raised up before His throne will be cleansed through the judgment and chastisement of His words, and be made overcomers before the disasters, the firstfruits that are obtained by God. Then God will send down the great disasters. All who resist God, as well as all devilish non-believers will be destroyed in the great disaster. All who are cleansed and made perfect will receive God's protection during the disaster; they will survive. When the Lord descends on a cloud and appears to everyone, God will come into His kingdom on

earth. This is what God will soon accomplish. If we believers cannot see this vision, then are we not blind? Those who simply gaze up at the sky and wait for the Lord to come with clouds will cry and gnash their teeth when He actually does return on the clouds. It's just as the prophecies in Revelation said, "**Behold, he comes with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him. Even so, Amen**" (Rev 1:7). People who do not hear God's voice before the disasters and fail to be raptured before His throne will fall into disasters and be punished therein, crying and gnashing their teeth.

God first created man on the earth. Satan corrupts mankind, also on the earth. Eventually God saves mankind, also on earth. All these have been done on earth until Christ's kingdom appears on earth. Therefore, God's kingdom will be built on earth in the last days. Humanity's final destination will be on the earth, not in heaven. This has been ordained by God. Let's read some of Almighty God's words, "**God will return to His original place, and each person will return to their respective place. These are the destinations in which God and humans will reside once God's entire management is finished. God has God's destination, and humanity has humanity's destination. While resting, God will continue to guide all humans in their lives upon earth, and while in His light, they will worship the one true God in heaven. … When humans enter into rest, it means that they have become true objects of creation; they will worship God from upon the earth, and live normal human lives. People will no longer be disobedient to God or resist Him, and will return to the original life of Adam and Eve. These will be the respective lives and destinations of God and humans after they enter into rest. Satan's defeat is an inevitable trend in the war between it and God. As such,**

God’s entering into rest after the completion of His management work and humanity’s complete salvation and entrance into rest have likewise become inevitable trends. Humanity’s place of rest is on earth, and God’s place of rest is in heaven. While humans worship God in rest, they will live upon the earth, and while God leads the rest of humanity in rest” (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God and Man Will Enter Into Rest Together). Almighty God has clearly told us that when His management work is complete, both God and man will enter into rest. God's resting place is in heaven, while the resting place of us humans is still on the earth. This is the beautiful destination that God has prepared for us humans. It is also God’s kingdom fulfilled on the earth. If we believe in God for many years, but still cannot see this, doesn’t that mean we do not understand the truth or the Lord’s words?

—The movie script of Awakening from the dream

Question 3: The Bible says, “Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord” (1Ts 4:17). How should we interpret that?

Answer: We should hope for the Lord’s return based on the prophecies that He Himself spoke. That is the most standard way of waiting for the Lord’s return. Who are you quoting, really? Are you quoting the Lord’s words or the words of men? “Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air,” who said that? Are those the Lord Jesus’ words? The Lord Jesus never said anything like that. The Holy Spirit never said that, either. The words you believe in and quote are Paul’s words. Do Paul’s words represent the Lord Jesus’ words? Can he represent God? Only God knows the answer to this mystery. If we corrupt humans dare to make blind interpretations and judgments like this, we are committing a heinous sin. Paul was not Christ. He was only an ordinary corrupt person. His writings are full of impure human ideas and imaginings. His words are not the truth, so we cannot use them as proof. All proof should be based on God’s words in the Bible. That is in line with the truth. It’s wrong to investigate the rapture and entry into the kingdom of heaven based on the words of people in the Bible, especially Paul, and not based on the Lord Jesus’ words, because only the Lord Jesus’ words are the truth; only His words have authority. Only the Lord Jesus is Christ, the King of the heavenly kingdom. Why don’t you search in the Lord Jesus’ words for the truth and God’s will? Why do you use the words of men as the basis of your search instead? Is this in accordance with the Lord’s will? This makes you prone to following man and walking down your own path. God made mankind out of clay. He tasked them with doing their duty on earth and managing the rest of His

creations. He demanded that they obey, worship, and honor Him, and mandated that their place was on the earth, not in heaven. Moreover, God told us long ago that He would establish His kingdom on earth. Besides, He will dwell with us humans on earth and the kingdoms of earth must be transformed into kingdoms ruled by Christ. Therefore, God's kingdom will eventually be established on earth, not in heaven. Many people are always looking to be raised into heaven. That is their own conception and imaginings, their own fanciful desire. It is not at all in accordance with the truth or the fact of God's work.

—The movie script of Awakening from the dream

Question 4: Through your fellowship, we see that our thoughts about the Lord's return and the rapture really did just come from our own conceptions. We have already seriously gone against the Lord's words. That being said, how should we wait for the Lord's return and the rapture now? Can you talk about this in a bit more detail?

Answer: The saints' hopes of being raptured are mainly based on the Lord Jesus' own words: "**I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you to myself; that where I am, there you may be also**" (Jhn 14:2-3). We interpret the Lord Jesus' words based on our own conceptions and imaginations. We think that because the Lord Jesus ascended to heaven on a cloud, the place the Lord has prepared for mankind must be in heaven. Therefore, we have been waiting for the Lord Jesus to return and raise us into heaven. In addition, we particularly revere Paul's words: "Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord" (1Ts 4:17). Therefore, we started to hope that the Lord would raise us into heaven when He returns. Different people have different understandings of the rapture. Most people think that when the Lord arrives, He will raise the saints up into heaven to meet Him. We have hoped for this kind of rapture for many years. Well, what is the rapture really? Most people aren't quite clear about that. The mystery of the saints' rapture was only revealed when Almighty God arrived. Almighty God says. "**'Being caught up' does not mean being taken from a low place to a high place, as people might imagine; that is a huge misconception. 'Being caught up' refers to My predestining and then selecting. It is directed at all those I have predestined and chosen. … This is most incompatible with people's notions. Those who will have a share in My house in the future are all**

ones who have been caught up before Me. This is absolutely true, never-changing, and irrefutable. It is a counterattack against Satan. Anyone I predestined shall be caught up before Me" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Utterances of Christ in the Beginning, Chapter 104). Almighty God's words are very clear. "Being caught up" is not what we think—being taken into the air from the earth and meeting the Lord in the clouds. Nor is it being taken up to heaven. It means that when God returns to earth to speak His words and do His work, we will hear God's voice and will be able to follow Him and obey His work in the last days. This is the true meaning of being caught up before God's throne. All who can distinguish the Lord's voice, find the truth in Almighty God's words, accept the truth, and return to Almighty God are the wise virgins. They are the gold, silver and precious stones that have been "stolen" by the Lord and returned to His house because they are all of good caliber and can understand and accept the truth. They can understand God's voice. They are the ones that have truly received the rapture. They are the overcomers who will be made when God does His work as He secretly descends to earth in the last days. Ever since Almighty God started His work of the last days, more and more of the people that truly thirst for God's appearance have recognized His voice in Almighty God's words. One after another, they have accepted God's work of judgment in the last days. They have been caught up before God's throne to meet with Him face-to-face and accepted the watering and nourishing of His words. They have gained true knowledge of God. Their corrupt dispositions have been cleansed and they have managed to live out the reality of the truth in God's words. They have already obtained God's abundant salvation. These people have already been made overcomers before the great catastrophes arrive. They have been obtained by God as the firstfruits. Those who hold onto their own

conceptions and imaginings and blindly wait for the Lord to come and take them up to heaven, they who reject God's work of judgment in the last days are the foolish virgins. They are the ones who will be forsaken by God. They are destined to suffer in the disasters; they will cry and gnash their teeth. This is a fact.

—The movie script of Awakening from the dream

IV. Questions and Answers on How to Discern the Voice of God

Question 1: The Lord Jesus has now returned and He has a new name —Almighty God. Almighty God has expressed the words in the book The Word Appears in the Flesh, and it is the voice of the bridegroom, yet many brothers and sisters are still unable to discern the voice of God. And so, today we have invited the witnesses from the Church of Almighty God. We have invited them to fellowship with us about how to identify the voice of God. So we'll know how to ascertain that Almighty God is the return of the Lord Jesus.

Answer: This question is of the utmost importance! To accept God's work of the last days and behold the appearance of God, we must know how to identify the voice of God. In fact, identifying the voice of God means recognizing the words and utterances of God and recognizing the characteristics of the Creator's words. Regardless of whether they are the words of God become flesh, or the utterances of the Spirit of God, they are all words spoken by God to mankind from up high. Such are the tone and characteristics of God's words. The authority and identity of God are clearly manifested. It can also be said to be the unique means by which the Creator speaks. God's utterances each time He becomes flesh surely cover many areas. They primarily relate to God's requirements and admonitions of man, the words of God's administrative decrees and commandments. His words of judgment and chastisement, and His revelation of corrupt mankind. There are also words of prophecies and God's promises to mankind and so on. These words are all the expression of the truth, the way, and the life. They are all the revelation of the substance of God's life. They represent God's disposition and all that God has and is. We are able to see from the words expressed by God that God's words are the truth, and they have authority, and power. Thus, if you wish to determine whether the words expressed by Almighty God are the voice of God, you can look at the

words of the Lord Jesus and the words of Almighty God. You can compare them, and see whether they are the words expressed by one Spirit, and whether they are the work done by one God. If their source is the same, then this proves that Almighty God's words are God's utterances, and that Almighty God is the appearance of God. Let us look at the words spoken by Jehovah God during the Age of Law, and the words of the Lord Jesus in the Age of Grace. They were both the direct expression of the Holy Spirit, and, moreover, were the work of one God. This proves that the Lord Jesus was the appearance of Jehovah God, the appearance of the Creator. Those who have read the Bible all know that in the words expressed by the Lord Jesus during the Age of Grace, there were words of admonitions, words of God's requirements of mankind, and words that touched upon God's administrative decrees. There are words of many prophecies and promises too. These words were one complete stage of work carried out by God during the Age of Grace.

First, we will look at the Lord Jesus' requirements and admonitions for man. The Lord Jesus said, "**Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand**" (Mat 4:17). "**You are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his flavor, with which shall it be salted? it is thereafter good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men. You are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid**" (Mat 5:13-14). "**You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like to it, You shall love your neighbor as yourself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets**" (Mat 22:37-40). "**Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. … Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled. … Blessed are**

they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed are you, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven" (Mat 5:3, 6, 10-12).

Let us look at what the Lord Jesus said about administrative decrees. Matthew 12:31-32, The Lord Jesus said, "**Why I say to you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven to men: but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven to men. And whoever speaks a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whoever speaks against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come.**" Also, in Matthew 5:22 the Lord Jesus said: "**But I say to you, That whoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whoever shall say, You fool, shall be in danger of hell fire.**"

In addition to these words of administrative decrees, there are also the Lord Jesus' words judging and exposing the Pharisees. The Lord Jesus said, "**But woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for you shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for you neither go in yourselves, neither suffer you them that are entering to go in**" (Mat 23:13). "**Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for you compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, you make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves**" (Mat 23:15).

Brothers and sisters, the Lord Jesus also spoke some words of prophecies and promises to man. In John 14:2-3, the Lord Jesus said, "**I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I**

will come again, and receive you to myself; that where I am, there you may be also." There's also John 12:47-48, the Lord Jesus also said, "**And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world. He that rejects me, and receives not my words, has one that judges him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.**" So, too, is there Revelation 21:3-4: "**Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.**"

From the various truths expressed by the Lord Jesus during the Age of Grace, we can see that the Lord Jesus was the appearance of the Savior, and that the Lord Jesus' words were God's utterances to all mankind. He directly expressed God's disposition and His will for mankind, to lead mankind, to provide to mankind, and personally redeem mankind. This perfectly represents the identity and authority of God Himself. Reading them immediately makes us feel that these words are the truth, and possess authority and power. These words are the voice of God, they are God's utterances to mankind. During the last days, the Lord Jesus has returned: Almighty God has come to do the work of judgment of the last days. He has ushered in the Age of Kingdom, and brought an end to the Age of Grace. Based upon the Lord Jesus' work of redemption, Almighty God has done the stage of work of judgment beginning from the house of God, and has expressed all truths for the purification and salvation of mankind. The words expressed by Almighty God are rich in content, and totally comprehensive. Just as Almighty God says, "**It is fair to say that this is**

the first time since the creation of the world that God has addressed all mankind. Never before has God spoken to created mankind in such detail and so systematically. Of course, this is also the first time He has spoken so much, and for so long, to all mankind. It is totally unprecedented. What's more, these utterances form the first text expressed by God among mankind in which He exposes people, guides them, judges them, and speaks heart-to-heart to them and so, too, are they the first utterances in which God lets people know His footsteps, the place in which He lies, God's disposition, what God has and is, God's thoughts, and His concern for mankind. It can be said that these are the first utterances that God has spoken to mankind from the third heaven since the creation, and the first time that God has used His inherent identity to appear and express the voice of His heart to mankind amid words" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Introduction). The words expressed by Almighty God are wide-ranging and rich beyond comparison. In them, there is mainly judgment, the revelation of man, and the administrative decrees and commandments of the Age of Kingdom, as well as God's admonitions, requirements, and promises toward man, and also prophecies. Let us first read several passages of God's words about God's admonitions and requirements of man as well as His work.

Almighty God says, "**Today, those who bear genuine love for Me—such people are blessed. Blessed are those who submit to Me, they will surely stay in My kingdom. Blessed are those who know Me, they will surely wield power in My kingdom. Blessed are those who seek after Me, they will surely escape from Satan's bonds and enjoy My blessings. Blessed are those who are able to forsake themselves, they will surely enter into My possession and inherit My kingdom's bounty. Those who**

run around for Me I will remember, those who make expenditures for Me I will joyfully embrace, and to those who make offerings to Me I will grant enjoyments. Those who find enjoyment in My words I will bless; they will surely be the pillars that hold up the ridgepole in My kingdom, they will surely have matchless abundance in My house, and no one can compare with them" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Words to the Entire Universe, Chapter 19).

"**Though Jesus did much work among man, He only completed the redemption of all mankind and became man's sin offering; He did not rid man of all his corrupt disposition. Fully saving man from the influence of Satan not only required Jesus to become the sin offering and bear the sins of man, but it also required God to do even greater work to rid man completely of his satanically corrupted disposition. And so, now that man has been forgiven of his sins, God has returned to the flesh to lead man into the new age, and begun the work of chastisement and judgment. This work has brought man into a higher realm. All those who submit under His dominion shall enjoy higher truth and receive greater blessings. They shall truly live in the light, and they shall gain the truth, the way, and the life.**

"**If people remain stuck in the Age of Grace, then they shall never be rid of their corrupt disposition, let alone know the inherent disposition of God. If people always live in the midst of an abundance of grace, but do not have the way of life that allows them to know God or to satisfy Him, then they will never truly gain Him in their belief in Him. This type of belief is pitiful indeed**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Preface).

"**Before man was redeemed, many of Satan's poisons had already been planted within him and, after thousands of years of being corrupted by Satan, he has within him an established nature that resists God. Therefore, when man has been redeemed, it is nothing more than a case of redemption in which man is bought at a high price, but the poisonous nature within him has not been eliminated. Man that is so defiled must undergo a change before becoming worthy to serve God. By means of this work of judgment and chastisement, man will fully come to know the filthy and corrupt essence within his own self, and he will be able to change completely and become clean. Only in this way can man become worthy to return before the throne of God**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Mystery of the Incarnation (4)).

"**No one actively seeks out God's footsteps and the appearance of God, and no one is willing to exist in the care and keeping of God. Instead, they wish to rely on the corrosion of Satan, the evil one, in order to adapt to this world, and to the rules of existence that wicked mankind follows. At this point, the heart and spirit of man have become man's tribute to Satan and become Satan's foodstuff. Even more, the human heart and spirit have become a place in which Satan can reside and its fitting playground. Thus does man unknowingly lose his understanding of the principles of being human, and of the value and meaning of human existence. The laws of God and the covenant between God and man gradually fade away in man's heart, and he ceases to seek or pay heed to God. With the passage of time, man no longer understands why God created him, nor does he understand the words from the mouth of God and all that comes from God. Man then begins to resist the laws and decrees of God, and his heart and spirit**

become deadened…. God loses the man that He originally created, and man loses the root of his beginning: This is the sorrow of this human race" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God Is the Source of Man's Life).

"**It has taken tens of thousands of years of history for mankind to get where it is today, yet the mankind I created in the beginning has long since sunk into degeneracy. Humanity is no longer the humanity I desire, and thus, in My eyes, people no longer deserve the name of mankind. They are, rather, the scum of mankind that Satan has taken captive, the rotten walking corpses that are inhabited by Satan and with which Satan clothes itself. People have no trust in My existence, nor do they welcome My coming. Mankind only begrudgingly responds to My requests, temporarily acceding to them, and does not sincerely share in life's joys and sorrows with Me. Since people see Me as inscrutable, they give Me begrudging smiles, their attitude one of cozying up to one in power, for people have no knowledge of My work, much less of My will at present. I will be honest with you: When the day comes, the suffering of anyone who worships Me will be easier to bear than yours. The degree of your faith in Me does not, in actuality, exceed that of Job—even the faith of the Jewish Pharisees surpasses yours—and so, if the day of fire descends, your suffering will be more grave than that of the Pharisees when rebuked by Jesus, than that of the 250 leaders who opposed Moses, and than that of Sodom under the scorching flames of its destruction**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. What It Means to Be a Real Person).

"**Humanity lost their God-fearing heart as well as the function incumbent upon God's creatures after being corrupted by Satan, thereby becoming an enemy disobedient to God. Humanity then lived**

under Satan's domain and followed Satan's orders; thus, God had no way to work among His creatures, and became all the more unable to win their fearful reverence. Humans were created by God, and ought to worship God, but they actually turned their backs on Him and worshiped Satan instead. Satan became the idol in their hearts. Thus, God lost His standing in their hearts, which is to say that He lost the meaning behind His creation of humanity. Therefore, to restore the meaning behind His creation of humanity, He must restore their original likeness and rid humanity of their corrupt dispositions. To reclaim humans from Satan, He must save them from sin. Only in this way can God gradually restore their original likeness and function, and finally, restore His kingdom. The ultimate destruction of those sons of disobedience will also be carried out in order to allow humans to better worship God and better live upon the earth. Because God created humans, He will make them worship Him; because He wishes to restore humanity's original function, He will restore it completely and without any adulteration. Restoring His authority means making humans worship Him and submit to Him; it means that God will make humans live because of Him and cause His enemies to perish as a result of His authority. It means that God will cause everything about Him to persist among humans without resistance from anybody. The kingdom God wishes to establish is His own kingdom. The humanity He desires is one that will worship Him, one that will submit to Him completely and manifest His glory. If God does not save corrupt humanity, then the meaning behind His creation of humanity will be lost; He will have no more authority among humans, and His kingdom will no longer be able to exist upon the earth. If God does not destroy those enemies who are disobedient to Him, He will be unable to obtain His complete glory, nor

will He be able to establish His kingdom upon the earth. These will be marks of the completion of His work and of His great accomplishment: to utterly destroy those among humanity who are disobedient to Him, and to bring into rest those who have been made complete" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God and Man Will Enter Into Rest Together).

"**You only know that Jesus shall descend during the last days, but how exactly will He descend? A sinner such as you, who has just been redeemed, and has not been changed, or been perfected by God, can you be after God's heart? For you, you who are still of your old self, it is true that you were saved by Jesus, and that you are not counted as a sinner because of the salvation of God, but this does not prove that you are not sinful, and are not impure. How can you be saintly if you have not been changed? Within, you are beset by impurity, selfish and mean, yet you still wish to descend with Jesus—you should be so lucky! You have missed a step in your belief in God: You have merely been redeemed, but you have not been changed. For you to be after God's heart, God must personally do the work of changing and cleansing you; if you are only redeemed, you will be incapable of attaining sanctity. In this way you will be unqualified to share in the good blessings of God, for you have missed out a step in God's work of managing man, which is the key step of changing and perfecting. You, a sinner who has just been redeemed, are therefore incapable of directly inheriting God's inheritance**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Concerning Appellations and Identity).

"**You must know what kind of people I desire; those who are impure are not permitted to enter into the kingdom, those who are impure are not permitted to besmirch the holy ground. Though you**

may have done much work, and worked for many years, in the end if you are still deplorably filthy, then it will be intolerable to the law of Heaven that you wish to enter My kingdom! From the foundation of the world until today, never have I offered easy access to My kingdom to those who curry favor with Me. This is a heavenly rule, and no one can break it! You must seek life. Today, those who will be made perfect are the same kind as Peter: They are those who seek changes in their own disposition, and who are willing to bear testimony to God and perform their duty as a creature of God. Only people such as this will be made perfect. If you only look to rewards, and do not seek to change your own life disposition, then all your efforts will be in vain—this is an unalterable truth!" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Success or Failure Depends on the Path That Man Walks).

With regard to Almighty God's work of judgment during the Age of Kingdom, let us read several passages of Almighty God's words.

"**In the last days, Christ uses a variety of truths to teach man, to expose the substance of man, and to dissect the words and deeds of man. These words comprise various truths, such as man's duty, how man should obey God, how man should be loyal to God, how man ought to live out normal humanity, as well as the wisdom and the disposition of God, and so on. These words are all directed at the substance of man and his corrupt disposition. In particular, the words that expose how man spurns God are spoken in regard to how man is an embodiment of Satan, and an enemy force against God. In undertaking His work of judgment, God does not simply make clear the nature of man with a few words; He exposes, deals with, and prunes over the long term. These methods of exposure, dealing, and pruning cannot be substituted with ordinary words, but with the truth of which**

man is utterly bereft. Only methods such as these can be called judgment; only through judgment of this kind can man be subdued and thoroughly convinced into submission to God, and moreover gain true knowledge of God. What the work of judgment brings about is man's understanding of the true face of God and the truth about his own rebelliousness. The work of judgment allows man to gain much understanding of the will of God, of the purpose of God's work, and of the mysteries that are incomprehensible to him. It also allows man to recognize and know his corrupt essence and the roots of his corruption, as well as to discover the ugliness of man. These effects are all brought about by the work of judgment, for the essence of this work is actually the work of opening up the truth, the way, and the life of God to all those who have faith in Him. This work is the work of judgment done by God" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth).

"**God does the work of judgment and chastisement so that man may gain knowledge of Him, and for the sake of His testimony. Without His judgment of man's corrupt disposition, man could not possibly know His righteous disposition, which brooks no offense, and nor would man be able to turn his old knowledge of God into a new one. For the sake of His testimony, and for the sake of His management, He makes His entirety public, thus enabling man, through His public appearance, to arrive at knowledge of God, to be transformed in his disposition, and to bear resounding testimony to God. The transformation of the disposition of man is achieved through many different kinds of God's work; without such changes in his disposition, man would be unable to bear testimony to God and to be after God's heart. The transformation of man's disposition signifies that man has**

freed himself from Satan's bondage and from the influence of darkness, and has truly become a model and specimen of God's work, a witness of God, and one who is after God's heart" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Those Who Know God Can Bear Testimony to God).

"**In His final work of concluding the age, God's disposition is one of chastisement and judgment, in which He reveals all that is unrighteous, in order to publicly judge all peoples, and to perfect those who love Him with a sincere heart. Only a disposition such as this can bring the age to an end. The last days have already arrived. All things in creation will be separated according to their kind, and divided into different categories based on their nature. This is the moment when God reveals humanity's outcome and their destination. If people do not undergo chastisement and judgment, then there will be no way of exposing their disobedience and unrighteousness. Only through chastisement and judgment can the outcome of all creation be revealed. Man only shows his true colors when he is chastised and judged. Evil shall be put with evil, good with good, and all humanity shall be separated according to their kind. Through chastisement and judgment, the outcome of all creation will be revealed, so that the evil may be punished and the good rewarded, and all people become subject to the dominion of God. All this work must be achieved through righteous chastisement and judgment. Because man's corruption has reached its peak and his disobedience become exceedingly severe, only God's righteous disposition, one that is principally compounded of chastisement and judgment and is revealed during the last days, can fully transform and complete man. Only this disposition can expose evil and thus severely punish all the unrighteous. … During the last days,**

only righteous judgment can separate man according to their kind and bring man into a new realm. In this way, the entire age is brought to an end through God's righteous disposition of judgment and chastisement" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Vision of God's Work (3)).

"**Do you understand now what is judgment and what is truth? If you do, then I exhort you to submit obediently to being judged, otherwise you shall never have the opportunity to be commended by God or to be brought by Him into His kingdom. Those who only accept judgment but can never be purified, that is, those who flee amidst the work of judgment, shall forever be detested and rejected by God. Their sins are more numerous, and more grievous, than those of the Pharisees, for they have betrayed God and are rebels against God. Such people who are not worthy even to do service shall receive more severe punishment, a punishment that is, moreover, everlasting. God shall not spare any traitor who once evinced loyalty with words but then betrayed Him. People such as these shall receive retribution through punishment of the spirit, soul, and body. Is this not precisely a revelation of the righteous disposition of God? Is this not God's purpose in judging man, and revealing him? God consigns all who perform all kinds of wicked deeds during the time of judgment to a place infested with evil spirits, and lets these evil spirits destroy their fleshly bodies as they wish, and those people's bodies emit the stench of corpses. Such is their fitting retribution. God writes down in their record books each and every one of the sins of those disloyal false believers, false apostles, and false workers; then, when the time is right, He casts them amidst the unclean spirits, letting these unclean spirits defile their entire bodies at will, so that they may never be reincarnated**

and never again see the light. Those hypocrites who do service for a time but are incapable of remaining loyal to the end are numbered by God among the wicked, so that they walk in the counsel of the wicked and become part of their disorderly rabble; in the end, God shall annihilate them. God casts aside and takes no notice of those who have never been loyal to Christ or have never contributed anything of their strength, and at the changing of the age He shall annihilate them all. They shall no longer exist on earth, much less gain passage into the kingdom of God. Those who have never been sincere to God, but are forced by circumstance into dealing with Him perfunctorily, are numbered among those who do service for His people. Only a small number of such people will survive, while the majority shall perish along with those who are not qualified even to do service. Ultimately, God shall bring into His kingdom all those who are of the same mind as God, the people and the sons of God, and those predestined by God to be priests. They will be the distillation of God's work. As for those who cannot be classed in any of the categories set by God, they shall be numbered among the unbelievers—and you can surely imagine what their outcome shall be. I have already said to you all that I should say; the road that you select is your choice alone. What you should understand is this: The work of God never waits for any that cannot keep pace with Him, and the righteous disposition of God shows no mercy to any man" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth).

"**I will hurl forth My rage upon its nations, openly promulgate My administrative decrees throughout the universe, and visit chastisement upon whosoever violates them:**

"**As I turn My face to the universe to speak, all mankind hears My voice, and thereupon sees all the works I have wrought throughout the universe. Those who set themselves against My will, that is to say, who oppose Me with the deeds of man, will fall under My chastisement. I will take the multitudinous stars in the heavens and make them anew and, thanks to Me, the sun and the moon will be renewed—the skies will no longer be as they were and the myriad things on the earth will be renewed. All will become complete through My words. The many nations within the universe will be partitioned afresh and replaced by My kingdom, so that the nations upon the earth will disappear forever and all will become a kingdom that worships Me; all the nations of the earth will be destroyed and cease to exist. Of the human beings within the universe, all those belonging to the devil will be exterminated, and all who worship Satan will be laid low by My burning fire—that is, except for those now within the stream, all will be turned to ashes. When I chastise the many peoples, those in the religious world will, to varying extents, return to My kingdom, conquered by My works, because they will have seen the advent of the Holy One riding on a white cloud. All people will be separated according to their own kind, and will receive chastisements commensurate with their actions. All those who have stood against Me will perish; as for those whose deeds on earth have not involved Me, they will, because of how they have acquitted themselves, continue to exist on the earth under the governance of My sons and My people. I will reveal Myself to the myriad peoples and the myriad nations, and with My own voice, I will sound forth upon the earth, proclaiming the completion of My great work for all mankind to see with their own eyes**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The

Appearance and Work of God. God's Words to the Entire Universe, Chapter 26).

We'll read some more passages of Almighty God's prophecies and His promise to man.

"**In the kingdom, the myriad things of creation begin to revive and regain their life force. Due to changes in the state of the earth, the boundaries between one land and another also begin to shift. I have prophesied that when land is divided from land, and land unites with land, this will be the time I will smash all nations to pieces. At this time, I will renew all of creation and repartition the entire universe, thereby putting the universe in order and transforming the old into the new—this is My plan and these are My works. When the nations and the peoples of the world all return before My throne, I will then take all the bounty of heaven and confer it upon the human world, so that, thanks to Me, that world will brim with matchless bounty**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Words to the Entire Universe, Chapter 26).

"**As My words are consummated, the kingdom is gradually formed on earth and man is gradually returned to normality, and thus there is established on earth the kingdom in My heart. In the kingdom, all the people of God recover the life of normal man. Gone is the frosty winter, replaced by a world of cities of spring, where spring lasts all year. No longer are people faced with the gloomy, miserable world of man, and no longer do they endure the cold chill of the world of man. People do not fight with each other, countries do not go to war against each other, no longer is there carnage and the blood that flows from carnage; all lands are filled with happiness, and everywhere teems with warmth**

between men" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Words to the Entire Universe, Chapter 20).

"**When humans have been restored to their original likeness, and when they can fulfill their respective duties, keep to their own proper places and submit to all of God's arrangements, God will have obtained a group of people upon the earth who worship Him, and He will also have established a kingdom upon the earth that worships Him. He will have eternal victory upon the earth, and all those who are opposed to Him will perish for all eternity. This will restore His original intention in creating humanity; it will restore His intention in creating all things, and it will also restore His authority upon earth, among all things, and among His enemies. These will be the symbols of His total victory. Thenceforth, humanity will enter into rest and begin a life that is on the right track. God will also enter into eternal rest with humanity, and commence an eternal life shared by both Himself and humans. The filth and disobedience upon the earth will have disappeared, and all the wailing will have dissipated, and everything in this world that opposes God will have ceased to exist. Only God and those people to whom He has brought salvation will remain; only His creation will remain**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God and Man Will Enter Into Rest Together).

After we hear the words of Almighty God, we have seen that Almighty God and the Lord Jesus are one and the same. They are both God incarnate standing upon high and speaking to mankind. What They both reveal is God's disposition and His holy substance. And in this, they perfectly demonstrate God's authority and identity. From the Lord Jesus' words of judgment and revelation of the Pharisees and Almighty God's words of judgment and revelation of corrupt mankind, we see that God hates evil,

and despises the corruption of mankind. We see God's righteous and holy disposition, and moreover, that God observes the depths of man's heart. Mankind's corruption is as familiar to Him as the back of His hand. From the Lord Jesus' and Almighty God's admonitions and requirements of mankind, we see God's expectations of mankind, God likes those who are honest, and He especially blesses those who truly dedicate themselves to Him. This shows us God's concern for and salvation of mankind. From the Lord Jesus' and Almighty God's promises for mankind, we see God's love for mankind, and, moreover, we behold the authority and power with which God commands the fate of mankind and rules over all things. The Lord Jesus' and Almighty God's utterances are alike in both tone and way of speaking, they are both the expression of God's disposition. This perfectly demonstrates the identity and substance of God. Brothers and sisters, let's think: Who, apart from the Creator, could express words to the whole mankind? Who could directly express God's will, and make demands of mankind? Who could decide man's end? Who could control whether they live or die? Who could control the stars in the universe, and hold dominion over all things? Apart from God, who could see through to the truth of the substance of corrupt mankind? And who could reveal the satanic nature hidden within the depths of our hearts? Who could accomplish God's work of judgment of the last days and thoroughly save us from the influence of Satan? Only the Creator is possessed of such authority and power! Almighty God's words perfectly demonstrate God's unique authority and identity. Brothers and sisters, after hearing the words of Almighty God, we all feel such confirmation in our hearts: These words are all expressed by God, they are the voice of God. They are all the truths expressed by the Creator to mankind during the work of judgment of the last days. In our hearts, there is immediately born the true reverence of God. After reading

the words of Almighty God, do you have the same sensation? This sufficiently proves that the words of Almighty God and the words of the Lord Jesus come from the same source. They are both the expression of one Spirit. They are the utterances of one God toward mankind in different ages. During the last days, Almighty God does the work of judgment beginning from the house of God based upon the foundation of the work of redemption of the Lord Jesus. Almighty God expresses all the truths for the salvation and purification of mankind, and reveals all the mysteries of God's management plan for the salvation of mankind, and tells us clearly of the substance of various aspects of the truth. They open our eyes, and utterly convince us. Almighty God's word and work have fulfilled and accomplished all the prophecies of the Lord Jesus. In all the words expressed by Almighty God for the work of judgment of the last days, we recognize the voice of God, and ascertain that Almighty God is the return of the Lord Jesus, the one true God who created the heavens and earth and all things, comes to do the work of judgment in the last days. He comes to end the rule of Satan on earth, the era of evil and darkness, and to usher in God's rule on earth, the Age of Millennial Kingdom. And this brings true our beautiful wish of entering into the kingdom of heaven. Brothers and sisters, tell me, has Almighty God's work in the last days accomplished all of the prophecies of the Lord Jesus?

—The movie script of Waiting

Question 2: All of the apostles' letters in the Bible were things that God had inspired, but I'm not clear on whether or not they really are His words. How would you explain this? And outside of the Bible, through the ages there have been many people who have been utilized by God as well as many spiritual people who have written books. In man's eyes the things that they've said have all been in line with the truth and are edifying for mankind, so what really is the difference between these things they've said that are in line with the truth, and the words of God?

Answer: Are the apostles' letters recorded in the Bible the word of God? Actually, the authors of the apostles' letters have been written clearly in the Bible. They were mortals used by God, not God incarnate. Therefore, what they said were human words and absolutely not the words of God, let alone the voice of God. This is beyond any doubt. The same is true of history! When the letters written by the apostles were sent to the churches, it was very clear to God's chosen people at that time that those apostles were men being used by God, and they were not the Christ. Only the Lord Jesus was the Christ. So no one regarded their correspondence as God's words. The reason why people in the last days regard the apostles' letters as God's word is all because of what Paul said: "All scripture is given by inspiration of God." People are misled by this statement. Coupled with their superstitious and worshipful mentality toward the Bible, people no longer examine the historical facts. If we are to differentiate between man's speech that accords with the truth and the words expressed by God in the flesh, we must first be very clear that God has the substance of God and man has human substance. God's word is a revelation of God's life and it is an expression of God's disposition, whereas the words of man reveal human substance. Only the direct expressions of the Holy Spirit are the truth and only those expressions are the word of God. This is because the substance

of God's life is unique and possessed by no man. However, people used by God and people who have the Holy Spirit's work can speak words that accord with the truth and that can edify others. This comes from the enlightenment and illumination of the Holy Spirit and also from man's experience with and understanding of the truth in God's word. However, it is not a direct expression of the Holy Spirit and therefore it is not the word of God. Any word said by God, whether it is recorded in the Bible or not, is forever God's word. Conversely, any word of man, even if it is recorded in the Bible, remains as man's word. For neither God's essence nor human essence will ever change. Therefore, the word of God is always the word of God, and the word of man is always the word of man. In the concept of man, any word that is consistent with truth and edifying to man originated from God. If it is recorded in the Bible, it was inspired by God. Thus it is God's word. For the edifying words that are consistent with the truth but not recorded in the Bible, although people dare not say those are the word of God, they also think that those were revealed or inspired by the Holy Spirit, thus also originated from God. This point of view is utterly wrong. Based on this viewpoint of man, when God's work in the last days is completed, many of those who have been saved and made perfect will be able to say many words that are edifying for people and consistent with the truth. Can you say that these words were revealed and inspired by the Holy Spirit? Are all of these the truth and the word of God? Apparently, this kind of view and imagination is absurd. When people understand the truth from experiencing God's work, they will have undergone some changes. They will have some knowledge about God and live out some reality of the truth. These are the effects of God's work. No matter how much people understand the truth, how much change they undergo, their human essence has not changed. They are still humans, albeit humans who have been

transformed and perfected through God's salvation, humans who have been reborn and renewed by God. Therefore, without a doubt, people's words that are edifying to others and consistent with the truth are still the words of man. According to this principle, when we read the Bible again, we can distinguish which words were spoken by God or by man at a glance. As such, the apostles' letters, whether recorded in the Bible or not, are human words of course. Undoubtedly, the writings of spiritual figures of all ages are also human words. It is completely correct to distinguish the word of God from the word of man like this.

Almighty God says, "**In fact, the truth is the most real of life's aphorisms, and the highest of such aphorisms among all mankind. Because it is the requirement that God makes of man, and is the work personally done by God, thus it is called 'life's aphorism.' It is not an aphorism summed up from something, nor is it a famous quote from a great figure. Instead, it is the utterance to mankind from the Master of the heavens and earth and all things; it is not some words summed up by man, but the inherent life of God. And so it is called 'the highest of all life's aphorisms'**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Those Who Know God and His Work Can Satisfy God).

"**That which is directly expressed by God is truth. Anything that arises from the enlightenment of the Holy Spirit merely conforms to the truth, for the Holy Spirit enlightens people based on their stature and cannot express the truth directly to man. This is something you must understand. And when, based upon the words of the truth, people gain insights, and knowledge from experiencing, do such insights and knowledge count as the truth? At most, this is a little knowledge of the truth. Words enlightened by the Holy Spirit do not represent the words of God, they do not represent the truth, they do not belong to the truth;**

they are merely a little knowledge of the truth, a little of the enlightenment of the Holy Spirit. … Everyone experiences the truth, but each does so under different circumstances, and everyone gains something different. Yet even if their knowledge were combined, they would still be incapable of fully articulating a single truth. That is how profound the truth is! Why is it said that the things you have gained and your knowledge cannot stand for the truth? You fellowship your knowledge with others, and it only takes two or three days of contemplation before they have fully experienced it. But people can spend a whole lifetime and still not fully experience the truth; even if what each person experienced were combined, the truth would still not be fully experienced. It can therefore be seen that the truth is extraordinarily profound. The truth cannot be fully articulated with words. In the language of man, the truth is the true essence of mankind. Man will never be able to fully experience the truth. Man should live by the truth. One truth can sustain the whole of mankind's existence for several thousand years.

The truth is the life of God Himself; it represents His disposition, His essence, and everything in Him. If you say that having a bit of experience means possessing the truth, then can you represent God's disposition? You may have some experience or light regarding a certain aspect or side of a truth, but you cannot supply others with it forever, so this light you have gained is not truth; it is merely a certain point that people can reach. It is simply the proper experience and the proper understanding a person should possess: some actual experience and knowledge of the truth. This light, enlightenment, and experiential understanding can never substitute for the truth; even if all people had completely experienced this truth, and pooled together all of their

experiential understanding, it still would not be able to take the place of that one truth. … What do I mean by this? I mean that the life of man will always be the life of man, and no matter how much your understanding might accord with the truth, God's intentions, and His requirements, it will never be able to be a substitute for the truth. To say that people have gained the truth means that they possess some reality, that they have gained some understanding of the truth, that they have attained some real entry to God's words, that they have had some real experience with them, and that they are on the right track in their faith in God. Just one statement from God is enough for a person to experience for an entire lifetime; even if people were to experience it for several lifetimes or even several millennia, they still would not be able to completely and thoroughly experience a single truth" (The Word, Vol. 3. The Discourses of Christ of the Last Days. Do You Know What the Truth Really Is?).

As far as getting to the bottom of the differences between man's words that accord with the truth and God's word, the words of Almighty God provide a very clear explanation in this regard: Truth comes from God, it is expressed through Christ, and it is also the direct expression of the Holy Spirit, and everything God says is the truth. Truth is the very life of God Himself, it is an expression of God's righteous disposition, it is a revelation of all that God has and is, it is the reality of positive things, and it represents the substance of God's own life. However, people used by God and people who have the Holy Spirit's work can speak words that accord with the truth. This comes from the enlightenment and illumination of the Holy Spirit and also from man's experience with and understanding of the truth in God's word. These words that accord with the truth represent man's experience and understanding, it is the reality of the truth that man has entered, and it is

a result of God's work. It does not matter how deep or shallow man's understanding of truth is, or how well they know God, everything man says reveals the substance of their human lives. But because the words that man says that accord with the truth are so far from the profound standard of the substance of truth, it is so, so far from the substance of truth, therefore what man says cannot be called the truth; there are inherent and substantial differences between words that accord with the truth and the actual truth. God's word is truth, it is the substance of God's life, so God's word is everlasting and unchanging. It is just as the Lord Jesus said: "**Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away**" (Luk 21:33). Almighty God also says, "**My words are the forever unchanging truth**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. You Ought to Consider Your Deeds). It is very much like the Ten Commandments promulgated by God in the Age of Law: Although thousands of years have passed, they are nonetheless still adhered to by mankind today. This is because God's word is truth, it is the reality of positive things, it is able to withstand the test of time, and it shall stand through all eternity. However, because man's words are not the truth, they will not last forever. We can see from the progression of human history, whether it be in the area of scientific research or scientific law, or even sociological theories, in a matter of time they are overturned or abandoned and they even become outdated in the blink of an eye. Even if the words that man says accord with the truth they can only be helpful to us, supply us, and support us on a temporary basis; they cannot be our life. Why is it said that man's words cannot be man's life? Because while man's word may accord with the truth, it is merely man's experience with and understanding of God's word and it is very far from the substance of truth and in no way can it represent truth, nor can it have the effect of being man's life that truth does; it can only temporarily

help us, provide edification and support, so that's why man's word that accords with the truth is not the truth, and it cannot be man's life. So how is it that only God's words can be man's life? It is because God's word is truth and is the reality of positive things, we humans can never fully experience it, and each truth is inexhaustible in regard to us humans. Even if we were to experience eternity we still could not dare say that we possessed truth or had fully gained the truth; this is a fact. Furthermore, the truth can cleanse mankind, save mankind, and perfect mankind; by relying on the truth to live, we can live out the likeness of a real man, live out the image of truth, and thereby can come to know God, submit to God, worship God, be compatible with God, which was God's intention when He first created mankind. It is just like the Bible says, "**Let us make man in our image, after our likeness**" (Gen 1:26). God's intent in making mankind wasn't just to provide mankind with a physical body, but primarily was to bestow mankind with new life and this new life is God's word, which is truth. When truth becomes our life, when it becomes the reality of our life, when we will have lived in the image of truth, and lived out the likeness of a real man, then we will have fulfilled God's intention in creating mankind. Therefore it is said that only God's word and only the truth can be man's everlasting life. Even though people used by God may have some experience with and understanding of God's word, and they may be able to say some things that accord with the truth, this is an effect of the Holy Spirit's work. It is God's salvation and God's perfecting of man. The words of people used by God that accord with the truth or their true understanding of God does not represent that they possess the substance of truth, nor does it represent possessing the life of God. Instead, it merely shows that they have gained truth and truth has become the reality of their lives. This is because man is not the truth and would not dare say that they truly possess

the truth. Therefore, regardless of how much man's words accord with the truth, or how much they can edify us, they cannot be said to be the truth and furthermore it is not the word of God. These are some of our thoughts on the differences between words that accord with the truth and God's word.

—The movie script of Waiting

Question 3: What is the difference between God's words conveyed by prophets such as Isaiah, Ezekiel, and Daniel from the Age of Law, and the words expressed by God in the flesh?

Answer: Due to the difference between the essence of the incarnate God and the prophets, the incarnate God comes to do God's work whereas the prophets only performed the duty of man. So the nature of their work is different. Let's see how Almighty God says it. Almighty God says, "**The prophets of the Old Testament spoke prophecies, and similarly, so could Jesus. Why is this so? The distinction here is based on the nature of the work. To discern this matter, you must not consider the nature of the flesh, nor should you consider the depth or superficiality of their words. Always you must first consider their work and the effects their work achieves in man. The prophecies spoken by the prophets at the time did not supply the life of man, and the inspirations received by those such as Isaiah and Daniel were merely prophecies, and not the way of life. If not for the direct revelation of Jehovah, none could have done that work, which is not possible for mortals. Jesus, too, spoke many words, but such words were the way of life from which man could find a path to practice. That is to say, first, He could supply the life of man, for Jesus is life; second, He could reverse the deviations of man; third, His work could succeed that of Jehovah in order to carry on the age; fourth, He could grasp the needs within man and understand what man lacks; fifth, He could usher in a new age and conclude the old. That is why He is called God and Christ; not only is He different from Isaiah but also from all other prophets**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Difference Between the Ministry of God Incarnate and the Duty of Man). From the word of Almighty God, we realize that the incarnate God performs His own

ministry and does the work within the management of God that represents the work of an era, and that the word He expresses is for all mankind. However, the prophets were those used by God to do the duty of man when He worked in the Age of Law. The prophets just conveyed the word of God through the inspiration of Jehovah God by stating some prophecies, giving some warnings to people or doing some sporadic work. If we can distinguish between the prophets' duties and the incarnate God's ministry, we can see the difference between the word of God conveyed by the prophets and the word expressed by the incarnate God. We all know that the prophets were people raised up in various periods of the Age of Law to convey God's word. The main function of the prophets was to state the prophecies while conveying God's requirements, commands, as well as God's exhortations, reminders, warnings, and words of punishment to the Israelites or others. For example, when the evil deeds of the Ninevites came up before God, God sent Jonah to Nineveh to proclaim, "**Yet forty days, and Nineveh shall be overthrown**" (Jon 3:4). It can be seen that the prophets only conveyed the word of Jehovah in various periods. They did not do the work of any particular age. The words of God conveyed by the prophets were something like prophecies, exhortations, reminders, warnings and so on, not expressing all the truth for the salvation of mankind. As for the word of God incarnate, He comes to do a stage of work and speaks to all mankind in the identity of God, expressing His management plan for the salvation of mankind, His disposition, what He has and what He is, His requirements of man and the truth that mankind must possess. These words are the work that can open a new age and end an old age, and they are addressed to all mankind. They represent God's work in this age and are all the truth that God's chosen people have to experience and enter within this

age. These words can supply life to man, make man repent, change man's disposition, save and cleanse man and make man perfect.

So why is the truth expressed by the incarnate God able to save man and make man perfect? For the incarnate God has God's essence. He is the Spirit of God in the flesh, that is, the essence of the life of God, what God has and what God is, the authority and wisdom of God, everything that God's Spirit possesses is in the flesh. So the incarnate God is able to express all the truth to cleanse and save man and make man perfect. It is endless, inexhaustible, anywhere at any time. As we can see from the fact of God's incarnation twice to do work, the incarnate God can express the truth anytime and anywhere to solve all difficulties and confusion of man in believing in God, doing his duty and entering life. He can rescue man completely from the domain of Satan. But the prophets were just ordinary people who did not have the essence of God. So they could not express the truth. They could only do their duties of conveying the word of God. The words of God conveyed by the prophets were limited. The scopes of what they said were also limited. They could only convey whatever words God inspired them, no more and no less. Without God's inspiration, their functions of conveying God's words would cease. Moreover, the prophets just did their duties to convey God's words. They did not have the truth, nor could they express the truth. This is the difference between the words of God conveyed by the prophets and the words expressed by the incarnate God.

There is another difference between the words of God conveyed by the prophets and the words expressed by the incarnate God. Many of the words expressed by the incarnate God are human languages. The languages are common and easy to understand when they are heard by man. Most words of God conveyed by the prophets were divine languages that were difficult

to understand when they were heard by man. Let's look at two passages of the words of Almighty God.

Almighty God says, "**When God had not yet become flesh, people did not understand much of what He said, because His words came out of complete divinity. The perspective and context of what He said was invisible and unreachable to mankind; it was expressed from a spiritual realm that people could not see. For people who lived in the flesh, they could not pass through the spiritual realm. But after God became flesh, He spoke to mankind from the perspective of humanity, and He came out of and surpassed the scope of the spiritual realm. He could express His divine disposition, will, and attitude through things humans could imagine, things they saw and encountered in their lives, and using methods that humans could accept, in a language they could understand, and with knowledge they could grasp, to allow mankind to understand and to know God, to comprehend His intention and His required standards within the scope of their capacity and to the degree that they were able. This was the method and principle of God's work in humanity**" (The Word, Vol. 2. On Knowing God. God's Work, God's Disposition, and God Himself III).

"**This was the advantage of God becoming flesh: He could take advantage of mankind's knowledge and use human language to speak to people, and to express His will. He explained or 'translated' to man His profound, divine language that people struggled to understand in human language, in a human way. This helped people understand His will and know what He wanted to do. He could also have conversations with people from the human perspective, using human language, and communicate with people in a way they understood. He could even speak and work using human language and knowledge so that people**

could feel God's kindness and closeness, so that they could see His heart" (The Word, Vol. 2. On Knowing God. God's Work, God's Disposition, and God Himself III).

Almighty God's word makes it very clear. All the words spoken by God before He is incarnated are divine language. After being incarnated, God can transcend the realm of the spiritual world and speak with man in human language from the perspective of humanity. Since the incarnate God can live with man, He personally experiences and witnesses the living of mankind. He comes to understand and master some knowledge, common sense, language or expressions from people by living in humanity. So the incarnate God can use human cognition or man's personal experience to give examples and make parables, and speak more clearly, thoroughly, and precisely about God's requirements of mankind, God's will, essence, disposition, and what God has and what God is. Upon hearing these words, man can accurately understand God's will, find the way to practice and enter, and at the same time, understand God's disposition and what God has and what God is. For example, Peter said to Jesus, "Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times?" Jesus said to him, "**I say not to you, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven**" (See Mat 18: 21-22). From the words of the Lord Jesus, we can understand that God wants man to learn to forgive others, to be able to forgive others without conditions, without limit on the number, and be able to do it in the spirit of understanding and tolerating others. At the same time, we also see the essence of God's goodness in the words of the Lord Jesus. Other examples are the Lord Jesus' sermon on the mount on the beatitudes, on anger, on oaths, on loving one's enemy, on loving your neighbor as yourself, the Lord Jesus' parable of the lost sheep, and so on, and they are all in human languages. Upon listening, we can accurately understand

God’s will without seeking or exploring, and know God’s disposition from these words. This is an obvious feature of the words of the incarnate God. The prophets just conveyed God’s word or made prophecies from receiving God’s inspiration. These words were all divine languages. People could only understand them roughly but not entirely. This is the distinct difference between the prophets’ language in conveying God’s word and the word expressed by the incarnate God.

—The movie script of Waiting

Question 4: The Lord Jesus spoke the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven to the disciples, and as the return of the Lord Jesus, has Almighty God also revealed many mysteries? Could you fellowship with us about some of the mysteries revealed by Almighty God? It would be a great help to us in identifying the voice of God.

Answer: Each time God becomes flesh, He reveals many truths and mysteries to us. This is without doubt. God becomes flesh in order to save mankind, and so, He naturally expresses many truths, and reveals many mysteries. In the Age of Grace, the Lord Jesus, God incarnate revealed many mysteries whilst preaching and doing His work, such as, "**Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand**" (Mat 4:17). "**Not every one that said to me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of my Father which is in heaven**" (Mat 7:21). The Lord Jesus also revealed many other mysteries in addition to this, which I won't go into now. In the last days, Almighty God has come, and carried out the work of judgment beginning from the house of God, and has expressed all truths for the purification and salvation of mankind. Almighty God has not only accomplished all of the prophecies of the Lord Jesus, but has also laid bare to us the great mysteries of the past, the present, and the future, which relate to God's management plan. Let us read two passages of the words of Almighty God. "**It is only during the last days that the work I have been managing for thousands of years is entirely revealed to man. It is only now that I have disclosed the full mystery of My management to man, and man has learned the purpose of My work and, moreover, has come to understand all My mysteries. I have already told man everything of the destination about which he is concerned. I have already uncovered for man all of My mysteries, mysteries that were hidden for over 5,900 years**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Work of

Spreading the Gospel Is Also the Work of Saving Man). "**This stage of work will elucidate for you the law of Jehovah and the redemption of Jesus, and is principally so that you may understand the entire work of God's six-thousand-year management plan, and appreciate all the significance and essence of this six-thousand-year management plan, and understand the purpose of all the work done by Jesus and the words He spoke, and even your blind credence in and adoration of the Bible. All this it will allow you to understand thoroughly. You will come to understand both the work done by Jesus, and the work of God today; you will understand and behold all of the truth, the life, and the way. … In the end, this current stage will bring God's work to a complete end, and will provide its conclusion. All will come to understand and know of God's management plan. The notions within man, his intentions, his erroneous understanding, his notions about the work of Jehovah and Jesus, his views about the Gentiles, and his other deviations and errors will be corrected. And man will understand all the right paths of life, and all the work done by God, and the entire truth. When that happens, this stage of work will come to an end**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Vision of God's Work (2)).

Almighty God has revealed to us all the mysteries of His 6,000-year management plan for the salvation of mankind. And Almighty God has told us God's aim in managing mankind. He has shown us why God has carried out three stages of the work to save mankind, how these three stages of work have progressed step by step, and what the connections and differences between them are. Almighty God has also told us of the significance of the names of God, how God does the work of judgment during the last days, and what the significance of the work of judgment is.

He has revealed to us the mysteries of the incarnation, and the inside story of the Bible. Almighty God has disclosed that God is the source of the life of all things, and that how God rules over all things. Almighty God has told us of God's unique authority, God's righteous disposition, God's holiness, and God's almightiness and wisdom. What's more, Almighty God has also revealed to us how all mankind has developed up until today, and how Satan has corrupted mankind, and has told us the truth of mankind's corruption by Satan, the source of corrupt mankind's opposition to God and betrayal of God, how God works to save mankind, how Satan has carried out cunning schemes to interrupt and disturb God's work, and how God defeats Satan and ends Satan's fate. Almighty God has shown us the meaning of a real life, how people should live in order to be truly happy, as well as the ends of different types of people, the true destination of mankind, and, in the end, how God will bring this age to an end, and how the Christ's kingdom shall come about, and so on. These mysteries have all been revealed to us by Almighty God. From the truths and mysteries revealed by the Lord Jesus and Almighty God, we can see that these mysteries all relate to God, and to the kingdom of heaven, as well as to what God will accomplish in the future. These mysteries are all connected to God's management plan and to the destination of mankind. There is profound meaning of God's revelation of these mysteries. From the truths and mysteries revealed by the Lord Jesus and Almighty God, we can ascertain that all of these words are the voice of God. For none but God could know these mysteries. Only God Himself knows. The angels do not know, much less does mankind know. And so, the truths and mysteries revealed by the Lord Jesus and Almighty God are the expression of one Spirit, and the work of one God. The work of judgment of the last days done by Almighty God continues on from the work done by the Lord Jesus.

It fulfills the words of the Lord Jesus: "**I have yet many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now. However, when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will show you things to come**" (Jhn 16:12-13). These facts prove that Almighty God is the return of the Lord Jesus, that Almighty God is the appearance of the one true God!

Almighty God reveals to us all truths and mysteries that corrupt mankind should understand. So we feel clear, peaceful and bright in our faith of God. In this way, we are able to enter onto the right track of belief in God. We need but accept and obey the work of Almighty God and pursue entry into all the truths expressed by Almighty God, so that we will gain the truth as our life, and achieve salvation and entry into the kingdom of heaven! Let us listen to a passage in which Almighty God reveals the mystery of God's disposition. Almighty God says, "**The disposition of God is one that belongs to the Ruler of all things and living beings, to the Lord of all creation. His disposition represents honor, power, nobility, greatness, and most of all, supremacy. His disposition is the symbol of authority, the symbol of all that is righteous, the symbol of all that is beautiful and good. More than that, it is a symbol of Him who cannot be**[a] **overcome or invaded by the darkness and any enemy force, as well as a symbol of Him who cannot be offended (nor will He tolerate being offended)**[b] **by any created being. His disposition is the symbol of the highest power. No person or persons can or may disturb His work or His disposition. … The joy of God is due to the existence and emergence of righteousness and light, because of the destruction of darkness and evil. He takes delight in bringing the light and a good life to mankind; His joy is a righteous joy, a symbol of the existence of all**

that is positive and, even more, a symbol of auspiciousness. The anger of God is due to the harm that the existence and interference of injustice brings upon His mankind, because of the existence of evil and darkness, because of the existence of things that drive out the truth, and even more, because of the existence of things that oppose what is good and beautiful. His anger is a symbol that all things negative no longer exist and, even more than that, it is a symbol of His holiness. His sorrow is due to mankind, for whom He has hopes but who has fallen into darkness, because the work He does on man does not come up to His expectations, and because the mankind He loves cannot all live in the light. He feels sorrow for the innocent mankind, for the honest but ignorant man, and for the man who is good but lacking in his own views. His sorrow is a symbol of His goodness and of His mercy, a symbol of beauty and of kindness. His happiness, of course, comes from defeating His enemies and gaining the good faith of man. More than this, it arises from the expulsion and destruction of all enemy forces, and because mankind receives a good and peaceful life. The happiness of God is unlike the joy of man; rather, it is the feeling of garnering good fruits, a feeling even greater than joy. His happiness is a symbol of mankind breaking free of suffering from this time forth, and a symbol of mankind entering a world of light" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. It Is Very Important to Understand God's Disposition).

Almighty God has revealed to us what God's disposition represents, and the symbolism and meaning of God's disposition. Almighty God has also expressed the relationship between the pleasure, anger, sorrow, and happiness in God's disposition and mankind. Who apart from God Himself could speak God's disposition so clearly? And who could know the symbolism and meaning of God's disposition? From ancient times until

today, no one has been able to give such an accurate and precise testimony to God’s disposition, and leave us utterly convinced! God’s pleasure, anger, sorrow, and happiness are manifested in His entire work of managing mankind. And as we experience God’s work, we too are able to truly savor and sense that the pleasure, anger, sorrow, and happiness in God’s disposition are not just words but real and vivid, they are practical. God’s pleasure, anger, sorrow, and happiness are all the expression of the substance of God's life. They are the reality of positive things, and symbols of righteousness. In God’s work of saving mankind, we see that the pleasure, anger, sorrow and happiness revealed by God are all for the survival of mankind. They are all in order to save mankind, so that mankind may break free from the affliction of Satan and live in the light. And, moreover, they are in order to lead mankind into the beautiful destination. In the course of God’s salvation of mankind, we have seen that God truly controls everything, and rules everything. God’s disposition is the symbol of the highest authority. It is a symbol that no forces of darkness can either suppress or harm, and that no hostile force is able to stop God from carrying out His will. Remember the Age of Grace: When Jesus was preaching and doing the work, the leaders of the religious community frantically condemned and opposed the Lord Jesus. They even joined forces with the Roman government to nail Jesus to the cross. Yet God’s wisdom was built upon the cunning schemes of Satan. It was through Jesus’ crucifixion that mankind was redeemed, and thereby the gospel of the Lord Jesus spread to the ends of the universe, and those who opposed and condemned God’s work met with God’s punishment. In this way, we see that God’s righteous disposition is inviolable by man! Today, the Age of Kingdom has arrived. Since He began the work of judgment in China, this staunch bastion of Atheism, the incarnate Almighty God has been again frantically opposed

and condemned by religious leaders. So, too have there been the cruel arrests and persecutions by the satanic CCP regime. Yet the kingdom gospel of Almighty God has still spread across the whole of Mainland China. Those from various religions and denominations who truly, absolutely believe in God have returned before God's throne. All of the truths expressed by Almighty God are also publicly available online to be searched and sought by people from countries and territories around the world. The words of Almighty God carry authority, and power, and they have conquered the hearts of hundreds of millions of people. In particular, those who truly believe in God, and thirst for the true way have all returned before God's throne, and enjoy being watered and provided to by God's words. Almighty God really has made complete a group of overcomers and gained a group of people who are of one mind with God. Those in the religious community who oppose and condemn the work of God, meanwhile, have all been punished and cursed to varying degrees. Some have been laid bare as antichrists, and have met with punishment, that is unbearably harsh. Their deaths have been worse than Judas'. In this way, we see that God's righteous disposition is truly unoffendable to man. The satanic CCP regime, which competes against God and has set itself against God, has also been cursed by God. It is destined to be annihilated, which perfectly demonstrates God's righteous disposition! From the fact of the work of the two incarnations of God, we see the unique authority of God, which controls all things. God's disposition is a symbol that cannot be suppressed by any forces of darkness. All forces hostile to God shall topple amid God's punishment, and cease to exist. This is fact. We've experienced Almighty God's judgment by the word. We have seen that God's disposition is not only merciful and compassionate, but also righteous and majestic. Many are the times that we have misunderstood God because we don't

understand His will, yet God reminds, comforts, and exhorts us, and this allows us to experience God's mercy and compassion. But when we disobey God, He harshly judges, reveals, and disciplines us, which allows us to appreciate that God's disposition is righteous, majestic, and does not allow the offense of man! During our real experiences, we have seen how true, how real and vivid God's disposition is, God is so holy, so righteous, so amiable and venerable. God has really and truly appeared to work among man and is face-to-face with us, and personally guides us, and saves us. Almighty God is our Lord, our God, the one true God who created the heavens and earth and all things, and rules over all things.

—The movie script of Waiting

Footnotes:

a. The original text reads "it is a symbol of being unable to be."

b. The original text reads "as well as a symbol of being unable to be offended (and not tolerating being offended)."

V. Questions and Answers on the Conditions for Entering the Kingdom of Heaven

Question 1: The Lord Jesus died on the cross for us, He forgave all our sins and redeemed us from the hands of Satan. That is to say, He did this to save us and grant us access to the kingdom of heaven. Even after this redemption, we continue to sin and we have yet to be cleansed. Nevertheless, I believe that the Lord's forgiveness has made us righteous through our faith. As long as we sacrifice everything else to work and spend for God, as long as we are willing to endure suffering and pay the price, we'd be raptured into the kingdom of heaven. I think this is the Lord's promise to us. However, my brothers and sisters have now questioned this belief. They say that although we labor and work for the Lord, we still sin often and then confess our sins, so we have not yet been cleansed. They have stated that the Lord is holy, so unholy people cannot meet Him. My question is: We who have sacrificed everything else and spend for the Lord, can we really be raised up into the kingdom of heaven? We really don't know the answer to this question, so we'd like you to talk to us about it.

Answer: All believers think: The Lord Jesus redeemed us when He died on the cross, so we have already been absolved of all sin. The Lord no longer sees us as sinners. We have become righteous through our faith, and once saved, we are saved forever. As long as we endure until the end, when the Lord returns, we will be directly raptured into the heavenly kingdom. Well, is that the truth? Did God ever give any evidence in His words to back up this claim? If this viewpoint is not in line with the truth, what will the consequences be? We who believe in the Lord should use His own words as our basis for all things. This is especially true when it comes to the question of how to treat the Lord's return. Under no circumstances can we treat His return based on man's conceptions and imaginings. The consequences of such behavior are too serious to even contemplate. It's the same as when the Pharisees crucified the Lord Jesus on the cross while waiting for the

Messiah to come. What would the outcome be? The Lord Jesus has completed the work of redeeming mankind. This much is true, but is God's work of salvation for mankind finished? Does that mean that all of us believers in the Lord Jesus qualify to be raptured into the heavenly kingdom? No one knows the answer to this question. God once said, "**Not every one that said to Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of My Father which is in heaven**" (Mat 7:21), "**You shall therefore be holy, for I am holy**" (Lev 11:45). According to God's words, we can be sure that those who enter the heavenly kingdom have freed themselves from sin and have been cleansed. They are the ones who do God's will, obey God, love God, and revere Him. Because God is holy and those who enter the heavenly kingdom shall live together with Him, if we have not been cleansed how could we be qualified to enter the heavenly kingdom?! Therefore, some people's notion that we believers have been absolved from sin and we can enter the heavenly kingdom is a complete misunderstanding of God's will. It originated from our imaginations; it's our own conception. The Lord Jesus absolved us of sin; that is not false. However, the Lord Jesus never said that we have been totally cleansed through this absolution and are now eligible to enter the heavenly kingdom. No one can deny this fact. Then why do all the faithful think everyone who has been absolved from sin can enter the heavenly kingdom? What do they use as evidence? How do they support this claim? Many people say that they base this belief on the words of Paul and the other apostles, as written in the Bible. Well then, let me ask you, do the words of Paul and the other apostles represent the words of the Lord Jesus? Do they represent the words of the Holy Spirit? Man's words may be in the Bible, but does this mean they are words of God? There is one fact we can clearly see from the Bible: The people that are praised by God can hear His

voice and obey His work. They are the ones who follow His way, are the ones eligible to inherit what God has promised. This is a fact that no one can deny. We all know that even though the sins of us the faithful have been forgiven, we have still not been cleansed; we still sin and resist God often. God clearly told us, "**You shall therefore be holy, for I am holy**" (Lev 11:45), "**Not every one that said to Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of My Father which is in heaven**" (Mat 7:21). From God's words, we can be sure that even though man's sins have been forgiven, they are not eligible to enter the heavenly kingdom. People must be cleansed; they must become doers of God's will before they can enter the heavenly kingdom. This is an irrefutable fact. Apparently, understanding God's will is not nearly as simple as it seems. We don't become cleansed just because our sins have been forgiven. We must first obtain some reality of the truth and earn God's praise. Then we will be eligible to enter the heavenly kingdom. If we do not love the truth and in fact are weary of it and even hate it, if we only pursue rewards and the crown but do not care for God's will, much less to say do God's will, are we not doing evil? Does the Lord praise this sort of person? If so, we are just like those hypocritical Pharisees: Even though we've been forgiven of sin, we are still not able to enter the heavenly kingdom. This is an indisputable fact.

Let's continue fellowshiping. The Lord Jesus absolved us of all sins. What sins did He absolve? What kinds of sin do we confess to after we begin believing in the Lord? The main sins referred to are those factual sins that betray God's laws, commandments, or words. We humans betrayed God's laws and commandments and were thus condemned and punished by His law. That's why the Lord Jesus came to do His work of redemption. Thus, we need only pray to the Lord Jesus and confess and repent our sins

and He shall absolve us. After that, we will no longer be subject to condemnation and punishment according to His law. God will no longer treat us as sinners. So we can pray directly to God; we can cry out to God and share in His abundant grace and truth. This is the true meaning of the "salvation" that we often spoke of in the Age of Grace. This salvation has nothing to do with being cleansed and entering the heavenly kingdom. You could say that those are two separate things, because the Lord Jesus never said that all who have been saved and absolved can enter the heavenly kingdom. Let's read some of Almighty God's words, "**At the time, Jesus' work was the work to redeem all mankind. The sins of all who believed in Him were forgiven; as long as you believed in Him, He would redeem you; if you believed in Him, you were no longer a sinner, you were relieved of your sins. This is what it meant to be saved, and to be justified by faith. Yet in those who believed, there remained that which was rebellious and opposed God, and which still had to be slowly removed. Salvation did not mean man had been completely gained by Jesus, but that man was no longer of sin, that he had been forgiven his sins. Provided you believed, you would never more be of sin**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Vision of God's Work (2)). "**Before man was redeemed, many of Satan's poisons had already been planted within him and, after thousands of years of being corrupted by Satan, he has within him an established nature that resists God. Therefore, when man has been redeemed, it is nothing more than a case of redemption in which man is bought at a high price, but the poisonous nature within him has not been eliminated. Man that is so defiled must undergo a change before becoming worthy to serve God. By means of this work of judgment and chastisement, man will fully come to know the filthy and corrupt essence within his own self,**

and he will be able to change completely and become clean. Only in this way can man become worthy to return before the throne of God. … For all that man may have been redeemed and forgiven of his sins, it can only be considered as God not remembering the transgressions of man and not treating man in accordance with his transgressions. However, when man, who lives in a body of flesh, has not been set free from sin, he can only continue to sin, endlessly revealing his corrupt satanic disposition. This is the life that man leads, an endless cycle of sinning and being forgiven. The majority of mankind sin in the day only to confess in the evening. This way, even though the sin offering is forever effective for man, it will not be able to save man from sin. Only half the work of salvation has been completed, for man still has a corrupt disposition" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Mystery of the Incarnation (4)). Almighty God's words answer this question very clearly. As soon as we hear them, we understand them. In the Age of Grace, the Lord Jesus only did His work of redemption to absolve mankind of sin, making them righteous through faith and saved through faith. However, the Lord Jesus never said that everyone who has been forgiven of his or her sins can enter the heavenly kingdom. This is because the Lord Jesus may have absolved us of all sin, but He never absolved us of our satanic nature. Our inner arrogance, selfishness, deceit, evil etc., that is, our corrupt dispositions, still remain. These things are deeper than sin. They are much harder to resolve. If the satanic nature and corrupt dispositions, which are so resistant to God, have not been resolved, we cannot help but commit many sins. We may even commit sins that are even worse than breaking the law, that is, the more egregious sins. Why were the Pharisees able to condemn and resist the Lord Jesus? How could

they crucify Him on the cross? This proves that if our satanic nature has not been resolved we can still sin, resist God, and betray God.

We have believed in the Lord for all these years and experienced one thing ourselves, that is, although our sins have been absolved, we still can't resist sinning constantly. We still lie, trick, cheat and use sophistry in pursuit of reputation and status. We even shirk responsibility and get other people in trouble for our own sake. When confronted with natural and manmade disasters, or trials and tribulations, we blame and betray God. When God's work is not in line with our own conceptions, we deny, judge, and resist God. Although we believe in God in name, we still revere and follow other human beings. If we have positions, we exalt and bear witness to ourselves, just like the chief priests, scribes, and Pharisees. We act like we are God to try and make people revere and admire us. We even steal and take for ourselves the sacrificial offerings to God. We grow jealous and follow our own preferences and the whims of our flesh and emotions. We plant our own flags, form our own groups, and establish our own little kingdoms. These are all clear facts. We can see that if our satanic nature and dispositions are not resolved, we won't be eligible to enter the heavenly kingdom even if our sins are forgiven a million times. The fact that we can still sin and resist God shows that we still belong to Satan, are enemies of God, and will definitely be condemned and punished by Him. It's just as it says in the Bible, "**For if we sin willfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remains no more sacrifice for sins, But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries**" (Heb 10:26–27). Let's read some of Almighty God's words: "**A sinner such as you, who has just been redeemed, and has not been changed, or been perfected by God, can you be after God's heart? For you, you who are still of your old self, it**

is true that you were saved by Jesus, and that you are not counted as a sinner because of the salvation of God, but this does not prove that you are not sinful, and are not impure. How can you be saintly if you have not been changed? Within, you are beset by impurity, selfish and mean, yet you still wish to descend with Jesus—you should be so lucky! You have missed a step in your belief in God: You have merely been redeemed, but you have not been changed. For you to be after God's heart, God must personally do the work of changing and cleansing you; if you are only redeemed, you will be incapable of attaining sanctity. In this way you will be unqualified to share in the good blessings of God, for you have missed out a step in God's work of managing man, which is the key step of changing and perfecting. You, a sinner who has just been redeemed, are therefore incapable of directly inheriting God's inheritance" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Concerning Appellations and Identity). As you can see, we have only been redeemed by the Lord Jesus but still live in our satanic disposition, frequently sinning and resisting God. We must experience God's judgment and salvation in the last days to be completely freed from sin and be after God's heart. Then we will be eligible to enter the heavenly kingdom. Actually, the Lord Jesus once said, "**I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you to Myself; that where I am, there you may be also**" (Jhn 14:2–3). The Lord went back to prepare a place for us and after He has prepared a place for us, He will return to receive us. In truth, this "receiving" refers to His plans for us to be reborn in the last days. When the Lord comes to do His work, He will bring us before His throne to be judged, cleansed, and made perfect by God's words. He will make us into overcomers before the disasters arrive. The process of His receiving us is actually how He will cleanse us and

make us perfect. Now the Lord has come to earth to perform His work of judgment in the last days. We have been raptured before His throne to live together with Him. Doesn't this completely fulfill the prophecy of the Lord coming to receive us? After the great disasters end, Christ's kingdom will be established on earth. All who survive the refinement of the great disasters will have a place in the heavenly kingdom.

Some people say, disciples like Paul, those that suffer and sacrifice for the Lord, Aren't they all qualified to enter the heavenly kingdom? It's just as Paul once said, "I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith: From now on there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness" (2Ti 4:7–8). Many people think: Well, Paul labored for the Lord and inherited the crown of righteousness, so as long as we labor like Paul, we will all be able to inherit the crown of righteousness and enter the heavenly kingdom, right? Is that the truth? These words that Paul spoke, were they based on God's word? Did the Lord Jesus ever say that Paul received the rewards and inherited the crown? Did the Holy Spirit ever testify that Paul entered the heavenly kingdom? None of these things were written in the Bible. Yes. The Lord Jesus never said Paul was the one who would inherit the crown and enter the heavenly kingdom! Yes. These are only our own conceptions and imaginations! As you can see, Paul's words are not supported by the evidence. Therefore, we can't use Paul's words as the basis of how to enter the heavenly kingdom. As for obtaining eternal life and entering the heavenly kingdom, the Lord Jesus once said it very clearly, "**Not every one that said to Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of My Father which is in heaven. Many will say to Me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Your name? and in Your name have cast out devils? and in Your name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess to**

them, I never knew you: depart from Me, you that work iniquity" (Mat 7:21–23). The Lord Jesus' words are quite clear. People must leave their evil sins, be cleansed and follow God's will in order to enter the heavenly kingdom. If they labor and sacrifice by mere zeal, while continuing to sin and resist God, if they cannot follow God's way, then they are evildoers; they certainly will not be able to enter the heavenly kingdom. Paul, on the other hand, said that fighting the good fight, finishing his course and keeping the faith would allow him to enter the kingdom of heaven and be rewarded. Isn't this obviously in conflict with what the Lord Jesus said? According to Paul's viewpoint, as long as we labor for the Lord, we'll be able to receive the rewards and enter the heavenly kingdom. If that is the case, couldn't all those Jewish Pharisees that travel sea and land to spread the gospel while condemning and resisting the Lord Jesus enter the heavenly kingdom? Those that preach and cast out demons in the name of the Lord but do not follow God's way, aren't they eligible to enter the heavenly kingdom as well? Isn't that viewpoint just too absurd? Why were the Pharisees never able to gain the Lord Jesus' praise, no matter what they did? This was mainly because they only spread the gospel and endure suffering in pursuit of their own benefit and rewards. God is righteous. God can see into men's minds and hearts. Therefore, when the Lord Jesus did His work, they were completely exposed. They fanatically condemned and resisted the Lord Jesus to protect their own positions and meal tickets. They were enemies of the Lord Jesus; they crucified Him on the cross. The end result was that they were cursed and punished by God. This is a commonly known fact.

What becomes of the religious people in the last days? Many of those people are just like the Jewish Pharisees. Although they have labored for the Lord, everything they have done is in pursuit of blessings and rewards;

they have been trying to obtain the crown and rewards; they are not practicing the Lord's words or obeying the Lord.Therefore, when they do work and make sacrifices, they do so according to their own whims and desires. They exalt themselves and testify about themselves in pursuit of their positions and reputations. They form factions, establish their own kingdoms. Even after many of them have done some work and endured some suffering, they lean on their seniority, self-righteously asking God for a place in the heavenly kingdom. How can these people, especially the pastors and elders, earn God's praise? When faced with God's work of judgment in the last days, not only do they not accept it, they fanatically resist and condemn Almighty God in order to protect their own positions and meal-tickets. They crucified God on the cross again. They provoked God’s disposition a long time ago. Isn’t this a fact? Do we not understand it yet? These facts are enough to prove that we who sacrifice and labor for the Lord will not necessarily be able to enter the heavenly kingdom. We that believe in the Lord but do not practice His words or follow His commandments are not motivated by our love of God or a desire to obey Him; we are merely seeking blessings and entry to heaven. We are tricking and exploiting God. No matter how much work we do, no matter how we suffer, we will not earn God’s praise. Let's read more of Almighty God’s words, “**At a superficial glance, human beings seemed to be constantly bustling about as they expended themselves and worked for God, during which time they were in fact reckoning, in the secret recesses of their inmost hearts, the next step they should take to win blessings or to reign as kings. One could say that, as the human heart was enjoying God, it was at the same time being calculated toward God. Humanity in this condition meets with God’s deepest abhorrence and detestation; God’s disposition does not tolerate any human being deceiving or using**

Him" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Introduction). "**You must know what kind of people I desire; those who are impure are not permitted to enter into the kingdom, those who are impure are not permitted to besmirch the holy ground. Though you may have done much work, and worked for many years, in the end if you are still deplorably filthy, then it will be intolerable to the law of Heaven that you wish to enter My kingdom! From the foundation of the world until today, never have I offered easy access to My kingdom to those who curry favor with Me. This is a heavenly rule, and no one can break it! … If you only look to rewards, and do not seek to change your own life disposition, then all your efforts will be in vain—this is an unalterable truth!**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Success or Failure Depends on the Path That Man Walks). From God's words, we can see that He is holy and righteous. God will definitely not allow dirty, corrupt humans to enter His kingdom. This is determined by God's righteous disposition! Therefore, we must experience God's judgment and cleansing in the last days to obtain the truth, free ourselves from our corrupt disposition and be obtained by God, to be saved and enter the heavenly kingdom. This is an undoubtable fact.

—The movie script of Awakening from the dream

Question 2: How does Almighty God do His work of judgment in the last days? How does He express His words to judge, cleanse and perfect man? This is the truth that we desperately need to know now. If we realize Almighty God's work, then we can really hear God's voice and be raised up before God's throne. Please tell us in more detail!

Answer: Studying how Almighty God does His work of judgment in the last days is very important to our ability to obtain salvation by pursuing the truth. Almighty God works in the last days by expressing truths to judge and cleanse people. He does this solely to lift His saints into the kingdom of heaven. However, many believers in the religious community do not understand God's will. They think the Lord will return and directly raise all of the saints into the heavenly kingdom. They don't believe He will conduct the work of judgment and chastisement because, well, if He judged and chastised people, wouldn't He be condemning and punishing them too? Therefore, they refuse to accept God's work of judgment in the last days; they only wait for the Lord to descend on a cloud and raise them into the heavenly kingdom. In truth, this is a complete misunderstanding of God's will. The Lord Jesus did His work of redemption to pave the way for the work of judgment in the last days. God's final objective is to cleanse and save humanity, allowing them to rest in the heavenly kingdom. However, God's work of redeeming and saving man is planned; it proceeds in steps. It doesn't all just happen at once. The Lord Jesus has completed His work of redemption and has promised to come back and receive the saints. However, no one really knows how God takes the saints in the last days. In reality, when God comes to receive His saints in the last days, He brings them to His throne first to judge them, cleanse them and perfect them into overcomers. Isn't this how saints are raised into the kingdom of heaven? Still, this isn't something that's easy for people to understand. Before they

can go before God's throne, they must experience judgment, chastisement and cleansing. That's why people have formed their own conceptions about God's work of judgment in the last days. Then tell me, is God's chastisement and judgment really a blessing? Or is it condemnation and punishment? Many people don't understand this. Let's see what Almighty God says about it.

Almighty God says, "**What God curses is the disobedience of man, and what He judges are the sins of man. Although He speaks harshly and relentlessly, He reveals all that is within man, revealing through these stern words that which is substantive within man, yet through such judgment, He gives man a profound knowledge of the substance of the flesh, and thus man submits before God. The flesh of man is of sin and of Satan, it is disobedient, and it is the object of God's chastisement. Thus, in order to allow man to know himself, the words of God's judgment must befall him and there must be employed every kind of refinement; only then can God's work be effective**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only by Experiencing Painful Trials Can You Know the Loveliness of God).

"**Today God judges you, chastises you, and condemns you, but you must know that the point of your condemnation is for you to know yourself. He condemns, curses, judges, and chastises so that you might know yourself, so that your disposition might change, and, moreover, so that you might know your worth, and see that all of God's actions are righteous and in accordance with His disposition and the requirements of His work, that He works in accordance with His plan for man's salvation, and that He is the righteous God who loves, saves, judges, and chastises man. … God has not come to kill or destroy, but to judge, curse, chastise, and save**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of

God. You Should Put Aside the Blessings of Status and Understand God's Will to Bring Salvation to Man).

"**All of you live in a land of sin and licentiousness, and you are all licentious and sinful. Today you are not just able to look upon God, but more importantly, you have received chastisement and judgment, you have received truly profound salvation, which is to say, you have received God's greatest love. In all that He does, God is truly loving toward you. He has no ill intention. It is because of your sins that He judges you, so that you will examine yourselves and receive this tremendous salvation. All this is done for the purpose of making man complete. From beginning to end, God has been doing His utmost to save man, and has no desire to completely destroy the men He created with His own hands. Today, He has come among you to work, and is such salvation not even greater? If He hated you, would He still do work of such magnitude in order to personally guide you? Why should He suffer so? God does not hate you or have any ill intentions toward you. You should know that God's love is the truest love. It is only because people are disobedient that He has to save them through judgment; if not for this, saving them would be impossible. Because you do not know how to live and are not even aware of how to live, and because you live in this licentious and sinful land and are yourselves licentious and filthy devils, He cannot bear to let you become even more depraved, He cannot bear to see you living in this filthy land as you do now, trampled on by Satan at will, and He cannot bear to let you fall into Hades. He only wants to gain this group of people and thoroughly save you. This is the main purpose of doing the work of conquest on you—it is just for salvation**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Inside Truth of the Work of Conquest (4)).

God's work of judgment in the last days does not seek to condemn people; God does not want to kill people. He wants to make people acknowledge that they've been thoroughly corrupted by Satan. He wants them to know their nature and essence: They resist God and betray God. He wants them to know His righteous and holy disposition that cannot be offended. His work seeks to awaken men's hearts and spirits. He wants to save mankind from their corrupt dispositions so that they can live out the likeness of a real man to be saved. If we do not experience God's judgment and chastisement, we cannot acknowledge our own satanic natures, nor can we determine the true source of our sinning and resistance to God. What's more, without His judgment and chastisement, we definitely cannot understand God's righteous disposition; our corrupt disposition cannot be changed. We would have no way to truly obey and revere God. In that case, how would we be eligible to enter God's kingdom? As you can see, God judges people because He wants to cleanse them and save them. Experiencing God's judgment and cleansing is the greatest blessing we can receive. That is God's great love and salvation for corrupt humanity! Well, how does God perform His work of judgment? Almighty God says many things about this truth. Let's read some of Almighty God's words,

"**God's work in the present incarnation is to express His disposition primarily through chastisement and judgment. Building on this foundation, He brings more truth to man and points out to him more ways of practice, thereby achieving His objective of conquering man and saving him from his own corrupt disposition. This is what lies behind the work of God in the Age of Kingdom**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Preface).

"**In the last days, Christ uses a variety of truths to teach man, to expose the substance of man, and to dissect the words and deeds of**

man. These words comprise various truths, such as man's duty, how man should obey God, how man should be loyal to God, how man ought to live out normal humanity, as well as the wisdom and the disposition of God, and so on. These words are all directed at the substance of man and his corrupt disposition. In particular, the words that expose how man spurns God are spoken in regard to how man is an embodiment of Satan, and an enemy force against God. In undertaking His work of judgment, God does not simply make clear the nature of man with a few words; He exposes, deals with, and prunes over the long term. These methods of exposure, dealing, and pruning cannot be substituted with ordinary words, but with the truth of which man is utterly bereft. Only methods such as these can be called judgment; only through judgment of this kind can man be subdued and thoroughly convinced into submission to God, and moreover gain true knowledge of God. What the work of judgment brings about is man's understanding of the true face of God and the truth about his own rebelliousness. The work of judgment allows man to gain much understanding of the will of God, of the purpose of God's work, and of the mysteries that are incomprehensible to him. It also allows man to recognize and know his corrupt essence and the roots of his corruption, as well as to discover the ugliness of man. These effects are all brought about by the work of judgment, for the essence of this work is actually the work of opening up the truth, the way, and the life of God to all those who have faith in Him. This work is the work of judgment done by God" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth).

"**God has many means of perfecting man. He employs all manner of environments to deal with the corrupt disposition of man, and uses**

various things to lay man bare; in one regard, He deals with man, in another He lays man bare, and in another He reveals man, digging out and revealing the 'mysteries' in the depths of man's heart, and showing man his nature by revealing many of his states. God perfects man through many methods—through revelation, through dealing with man, through man's refinement, and chastisement—so that man may know that God is practical" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Those Who Focus on Practice Can Be Perfected).

"**God does the work of judgment and chastisement so that man may gain knowledge of Him, and for the sake of His testimony. Without His judgment of man's corrupt disposition, man could not possibly know His righteous disposition, which brooks no offense, and nor would man be able to turn his old knowledge of God into a new one. For the sake of His testimony, and for the sake of His management, He makes His entirety public, thus enabling man, through His public appearance, to arrive at knowledge of God, to be transformed in his disposition, and to bear resounding testimony to God. The transformation of the disposition of man is achieved through many different kinds of God's work; without such changes in his disposition, man would be unable to bear testimony to God and to be after God's heart. The transformation of man's disposition signifies that man has freed himself from Satan's bondage and from the influence of darkness, and has truly become a model and specimen of God's work, a witness of God, and one who is after God's heart**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Those Who Know God Can Bear Testimony to God).

Almighty God's words are too practical. God expresses His words and does His work of judgment in the last days in order to save humanity and

make them perfect! By reading Almighty God’s words of judgment, we finally understand that in this dark evil world, the entire human race lives under Satan’s domain. Those corrupted by Satan no longer have any trace of humanity. They are arrogant, crooked and crafty, selfish and licentious. They are bored of the truth and revere evil. They will do anything for the sake of their own positions and fame. It’s the same as animals that fight amongst themselves, killing one another. They’ve completely lost their humanity and reason. Even though they believe in God, they truly revere money, fame and status. They follow the worldwide tide of evil, frequently sinning, rebelling and resisting God. Although they sacrifice everything and endure suffering, they only do it to satisfy their own desires to obtain blessings. They do it to get rewards and enter the heavenly kingdom. They do not do it to pursue the truth or know or obey God. Although they believe in God, their hearts are filled with their own conceptions and imaginations about Him. No one really knows God's disposition and all that He has and is, what types of people God really likes, what types of people He hates, what things people do to resist God, offend His disposition and become cursed by Him, how many of people’s thoughts and conceptions are not in line with the truth, what kinds of reason people should have in the face of God, the realities of truths people should possess, and so on. Corrupt humanity knows nothing about these crucial truths of knowing, obeying and revering God. A human race like this that has been corrupted to its very core, if it does not experience God’s judgment and cleansing, how can it not resist and betray God? During the last days, God becomes flesh and expresses truths to save man according to the needs of corrupt mankind. God’s righteous and majestic disposition which cannot be offended is revealed to humanity. People's true nature and corruption are clearly revealed, which convinces men. We have experienced God’s judgment and

chastisement of His words; we have seen our own arrogance, selfishness and live according to our own satanic philosophies and rules. Everything we do, we do for our own fame and benefit. Even though we do work and preach sermons, we do it for our own reputation and status. We continually exalt ourselves, honor ourselves and make others exalt us. We do not do this to exalt God or bear witness to God at all. When God's work is not in line with our conceptions, we define and judge God instead. We stand in stiff-necked opposition to God and do not obey God at all. When we do our duty, we can still enjoy the pleasures of the flesh. We continually cheat and trick God; we are not loyal to God at all. In God's words of judgment and revelation, we can see that we have been deeply corrupted by Satan. We do not have any conscience, reason or human dignity. We are not fit to be called men. We are simply the ilk of Satan, the enemies of God. We feel shameful and unworthy to meet God. We can't help but kneel before God and curse ourselves, full of regret and self-hatred. When we really get a taste of God's righteous disposition which cannot be offended, we cannot help but fear God and understand that God has good intentions: to save humanity. God judges and chastises us because God hates our sins and rebellion and He wants to save us from our satanic disposition and obtain us. When we stubbornly stick our necks out in rebellion of and resistance to God, He chastens and disciplines us. When we give our hearts to God, God shows us mercy. He doesn't punish us for all that we do and are. He enlightens us and leads us and allows us to understand His will. Through God's chastisement and judgment, we unknowingly gain some true knowledge about God's disposition. He allows us to learn that His disposition contains His mercy and love. We have seen God's holiness and greatness. It has created our reverence and love of God. We see our satanic nature more and more clearly and gradually understand some truth. Our

ability to differentiate positive and negative things gradually increases. Our viewpoint on things changes and we gradually begin to thirst for the truth. We no longer wish to live by the philosophies and laws of Satan, or unreasonably try to get something from God. Our conscience and reason are restored. We start to seek out and practice the truth in everything we do. We perform the duty as created beings in a down-to-earth manner and obey God's sovereignty and arrangements. Our life disposition changes more and more; we begin to live out some likeness of a real man. Our ability to change like that is the effect of God's work of judgment. Today all brothers and sisters who accept Almighty God's work in the last days now know that we must accept and obey God's work of judgment in the last days to be saved and made perfect.

—The movie script of Awakening from the dream

Question 3: We've believed in the Lord Jesus for many years, always working for the Lord and suffering greatly. We have never denounced the Lord Jesus' name or betrayed Him. Therefore, according to the Lord's promise, He will not abandon us. If the Lord has arrived, He should have lifted us into the kingdom of heaven first. Why did you accept first while we were left behind? We are not convinced! If we do not accept Almighty God's work in the last days, will we really be unable to be raptured into the kingdom of heaven? That is what I care about the most. How do you interpret this?

Answer: This question is actually easy to explain. Those who have believed in the Lord for many years must have read these words: "**For the kingdom of heaven is like to a man that is an householder, which went out early in the morning to hire laborers into his vineyard. And when he had agreed with the laborers for a penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard. And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the marketplace, And said to them; Go you also into the vineyard, and whatever is right I will give you. And they went their way. Again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did likewise. And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and said to them, Why stand you here all the day idle? They say to him, Because no man has hired us. He said to them, Go you also into the vineyard; and whatever is right, that shall you receive. So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard said to his steward, Call the laborers, and give them their hire, beginning from the last to the first. And when they came that were hired about the eleventh hour, they received every man a penny. But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more; and they likewise received every man a penny. And when they had received it, they**

murmured against the manager of the house, Saying, These last have worked but one hour, and you have made them equal to us, which have borne the burden and heat of the day. But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do you no wrong: did not you agree with me for a penny? Take that your is, and go your way: I will give to this last, even as to you. Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with my own? Is your eye evil, because I am good? So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many be called, but few chosen" (Mat 20:1–16).

Jesus also mentioned about a parable of the wise virgins: "**Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened to ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom. And five of them were wise, and five were foolish. They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them: But the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept. And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom comes; go you out to meet him. Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps. And the foolish said to the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out. But the wise answered, saying, Not so; lest there be not enough for us and you: but go you rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves. And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage: and the door was shut. Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. But He answered and said, Truly I say to you, I know you not. Watch therefore, for you know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of man comes**" (Mat 25:1–13). There is a close relationship between these two prophecies, both of which are about welcoming the Lord's return. Some people had believed in the Lord for many years, but did not meet the Lord's return first. Other people had

believed in the Lord for a very short time, but actually met the Lord's return. Some people did not even believe in the Lord, but accepted the Lord because they felt good about it when they heard some people witness for the Lord. This fulfilled the word of the Lord: "**So the last shall be first, and the first last.**" Some people had believed in the Lord for many years. Since the Lord did not give them revelation, when they heard someone witness the return of the Lord, they did not accept but judged and condemned instead. Some people heard that someone witnessed the Lord. After seeking and examining, they confirmed that it was the Lord's voice and felt resentment in their hearts: "How did I fall behind after believing in the Lord for so long? They had believed in the Lord for such a short time, how did they accept the Lord first?" They were indignant and envious. Most importantly, a few who accepted the Lord's return received reward, but those who had believed for years received no reward. It seemed unfair to them, but the Lord said to such people, "**Is your eye evil, because I am good?**" The Lord's return in the last days is to reveal all people by expressing the truth. This is the almightiness and wisdom of the Lord! Do you see it now?

Some people are fully aware that the words that Almighty God expresses in His judgment work of the last days are the truth and that they can cleanse and save mankind. However, they refuse to accept. They still obstinately maintain their own conceptions and imaginations. They believe that as long as they adhere to the name of the Lord Jesus and labor and toil for the Lord, they will be able to be taken into the kingdom of heaven. What kind of people are they? It can be said that this kind of person is basically someone that does not accept the truth. Even more so, they do not obey God. They are unbelievers to the core! As believers in God, whatever path we walk on is the path that we choose for ourselves. God does not interfere

with our decision. However, we must understand that with each stage of new work that God initiates, He bestows upon man the truth and the way man should walk. We must accept and obey. God does not care how much work we have done in the past, how much we have suffered and how much of a price we have paid. So long as we do not obey the current words and work of God, do not attain cleansing by experiencing the judgment work of God in the last days in order to obtain the truth and break free of sin, we will encounter God's punishment. This has been determined by God's righteous disposition. Just as Almighty God says, "**I decide the destination of each person not on the basis of age, seniority, amount of suffering, and least of all, the degree to which they invite pity, but according to whether they possess the truth. There is no other choice but this. You must realize that all those who do not follow the will of God shall also be punished. This is an immutable fact. Therefore, all those who are punished are so punished for the righteousness of God and as retribution for their numerous evil acts**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Prepare Sufficient Good Deeds for Your Destination). We all know, when the Lord Jesus did His work, the Pharisees that believed that their hard work was meritorious and they were very qualified were stuck in the Age of Law. They obstinately adhered to the Old Testament of the Bible. They condemned and resisted the Lord Jesus. They refused to accept the Lord Jesus' salvation. In the end, they were punished by God. This is a fact that cannot be denied. Similarly, Almighty God of the last days has come and He expresses the truth and bestows the way of eternal life to mankind. If all we do is adhere to the name of the Lord Jesus while refusing and resisting the work of Almighty God in the last days, then regardless of how much work we have done in the past and how great our suffering was, we will be detested by God. We would become targets of His

abandonment and in the end, we will meet with God's punishment and extermination. This is a fact that will never change.

Let's read some passages of Almighty God's word: "**Christ of the last days brings life, and brings the enduring and everlasting way of truth. This truth is the path by which man gains life, and it is the only path by which man shall know God and be approved by God. If you do not seek the way of life provided by Christ of the last days, then you shall never gain the approval of Jesus, and shall never be qualified to enter the gate of the kingdom of heaven, for you are both a puppet and prisoner of history. Those who are controlled by regulations, by letters, and shackled by history will never be able to gain life nor gain the perpetual way of life. This is because all they have is turbid water which has been clung to for thousands of years instead of the water of life that flows from the throne. Those who are not supplied with the water of life will forever remain corpses, playthings of Satan, and sons of hell. How, then, can they behold God?**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life).

"**Those who wish to gain life without relying on the truth spoken by Christ are the most ridiculous people on earth, and those who do not accept the way of life brought by Christ are lost in fantasy. And so I say that those who do not accept Christ of the last days shall forever be despised by God. Christ is man's gateway to the kingdom during the last days, and there are none who can go around Him. None may be perfected by God except through Christ. You believe in God, and so you must accept His words and obey His way. You cannot only think of gaining blessings while being incapable of receiving the truth and incapable of accepting the provision of life. Christ comes during the**

last days so that all those who truly believe in Him may be provided with life. His work is for the sake of concluding the old age and entering the new one, and His work is the path that must be taken by all those who would enter the new age. If you are incapable of acknowledging Him, and instead condemn, blaspheme, or even persecute Him, then you are bound to burn for eternity and shall never enter the kingdom of God. For this Christ is Himself the expression of the Holy Spirit, the expression of God, the One whom God has entrusted to do His work on earth. And so I say that if you cannot accept all that is done by Christ of the last days, then you blaspheme the Holy Spirit. The retribution to be had by those who blaspheme the Holy Spirit is self-evident to all. I also tell you that if you resist Christ of the last days, if you spurn Christ of the last days, there will be no one else to bear the consequences on your behalf. Furthermore, from this day onward you will not have another chance to gain the approval of God; even if you try to redeem yourself, you will never again behold the face of God. For what you resist is not a man, what you spurn is not some puny being, but Christ. Do you know what the consequences of this will be? You will not have made a small mistake, but committed a heinous crime. And so I advise everyone not to bare your fangs before the truth, or make careless criticisms, for only the truth can bring you life, and nothing except the truth can allow you to be reborn and behold the face of God again" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life).

"**I have already said to you all that I should say; the road that you select is your choice alone. What you should understand is this: The work of God never waits for any that cannot keep pace with Him, and**

the righteous disposition of God shows no mercy to any man" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth).

Now we all understand. We've really seen that the Lord Jesus has returned. Almighty God is now doing the work of judgment beginning from the house of God. This is a revelation to everyone in the religious community! Now, the religious community is in an age of desolation and great exposition. Everyone will be sorted into their rightful place. Do you see? Isn't God's work of secret descent influential? What man could do something as great as this? The work of judgment done by Almighty God through expressing the truth in the last days will reveal everyone. God will reveal which people are wheat and which are tares; which people are wise virgins and which people are foolish virgins. Those that accept Almighty God's work of judgment in the last days are all wise virgins. They will be raised up before God's throne and accept the judgment and cleansing of His word. They will gradually understand and obtain the truth. They will grow to truly know God. They will relieve themselves of their satanic disposition and Satan's influence. In the end, they will be made perfect by God and become overcomers. This group of overcomers created by God will rule together with God in His future kingdom. They will be the pillars of God's kingdom. This will fulfill the prophecy: "**Him that overcomes will I make a pillar in the temple of My God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write on him the name of My God, and the name of the city of My God, which is new Jerusalem, which comes down out of heaven from My God: and I will write on him My new name**" (Rev 3:12). When God makes these overcomers, His work of judgment that starts from His house through incarnation, will come to an end. Then He will send the great disaster, punishing the evil and rewarding the good. All that resist and

condemn Almighty God will fall in the once-in-a-millennium disaster and be punished. All that have been cleansed and made perfect by God will be protected by Him and survive the great disaster. They will enter God's kingdom and inherit His promises and blessings. This will completely fulfill the following prophecy: "**The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of His Christ; and He shall reign for ever and ever**" (Rev 11:15). "**Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away**" (Rev 21:3–4). Let's read more of Almighty God's words:

"**When humans have been restored to their original likeness, and when they can fulfill their respective duties, keep to their own proper places and submit to all of God's arrangements, God will have obtained a group of people upon the earth who worship Him, and He will also have established a kingdom upon the earth that worships Him. He will have eternal victory upon the earth, and all those who are opposed to Him will perish for all eternity. This will restore His original intention in creating humanity; it will restore His intention in creating all things, and it will also restore His authority upon earth, among all things, and among His enemies. These will be the symbols of His total victory. Thenceforth, humanity will enter into rest and begin a life that is on the right track. God will also enter into eternal rest with humanity, and commence an eternal life shared by both Himself and humans. The filth and disobedience upon the earth will have disappeared, and all the wailing will have dissipated, and everything in this world that opposes God will have ceased to exist. Only God and those people to whom He**

has brought salvation will remain; only His creation will remain" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God and Man Will Enter Into Rest Together).

"**As My words are consummated, the kingdom is gradually formed on earth and man is gradually returned to normality, and thus there is established on earth the kingdom in My heart. In the kingdom, all the people of God recover the life of normal man. Gone is the frosty winter, replaced by a world of cities of spring, where spring lasts all year. No longer are people faced with the gloomy, miserable world of man, and no longer do they endure the cold chill of the world of man. People do not fight with each other, countries do not go to war against each other, no longer is there carnage and the blood that flows from carnage; all lands are filled with happiness, and everywhere teems with warmth between men**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Words to the Entire Universe, Chapter 20).

"**Such a life is man's future life on earth, the most beautiful life on earth, the kind of life that man longs for, the kind that man has never before achieved in the history of the world. It is the final outcome of the 6,000 years of work of management; it is what mankind yearns for most, and it is also God's promise to man. But this promise cannot come to pass immediately: Man will enter the future destination only once the work of the last days has been completed and he has been completely conquered, that is, once Satan has been utterly defeated. After man has been refined, he will be without a sinful nature, because God will have defeated Satan, meaning that there will be no encroachment by hostile forces, and no hostile forces at all that can attack the flesh of man. And so man will be free and holy—he will have entered eternity**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God.

Restoring the Normal Life of Man and Taking Him to a Wonderful Destination).

—The movie script of Awakening from the dream

Question 4: All of us have believed in the Lord for many years, and have always followed the example of Paul in our work for the Lord. We have been faithful to the name and way of the Lord, and the crown of righteousness surely awaits us. Today, we need only focus on working hard for the Lord, and watching for His return. Only thus, can we be taken into the kingdom of heaven. That's because in the Bible it is said that "for they shall not be ashamed that wait for Me" (Isa 49:23). We believe the Lord's promise: He will take us into the kingdom of heaven at His return. Could there really be anything wrong with practicing in this way?

Answer: In watching for the arrival of the Lord, most people believe that they need only work hard for the Lord, and follow the example of Paul, in order to be directly taken into the kingdom of heaven when the Lord arrives. To them, it seems right to practice in this way, and no one disagrees. Yet we who believe in God should seek the truth in all things. Though practicing in that way is in keeping with people's conceptions, is it in keeping with God's wishes? I think we should know: God's words are the principles of our actions, they are the standard by which all people, things, and matters are measured. If we practice according to the words of God, we will surely receive God's approval. If we go against the words of God, and practice according to our own conceptions and imaginings, then we will surely be detested and rejected by God. Can we really be directly taken into the kingdom of heaven by watching and waiting and working hard for the Lord? Let us look at what the Lord Jesus said "**Not every one that said to Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of My Father which is in heaven. Many will say to Me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Your name? and in Your name have cast out devils? and in Your name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess to them, I never knew you:**

depart from Me, you that work iniquity" (Mat 7:21–23). In the words of the Lord Jesus we see that the Lord Jesus only said "but he that does the will of my Father which is in heaven." He did not say that all those who are faithful to the Lord Jesus' name and work hard for the Lord will be rewarded, and enter into the kingdom of heaven. Is this not fact? The Lord Jesus didn't say that people need only work hard for the Lord to enter into the kingdom of heaven. To me, these are our conceptions and imaginings. If, as in our conceptions, all those who keep the Lord's name and work hard for Him will enter into the kingdom of heaven, why were some of those who preached and cast out devils in the Lord Jesus' name condemned as evildoers by the Lord? This shows that working hard for the Lord is not necessarily the same as doing the will of God. And why is that? Because many people work hard for the Lord so that they might be blessed, and not for truly obeying God. Their satanic disposition is still there. They still have conceptions about God, and still disobey, oppose, and condemn Him. Some even hate the truth, like the Pharisees. No matter how hard they work for the Lord, how could such people do the will of God? In nature, such people oppose God. To enter into the kingdom of heaven simply by working hard for the Lord, this is intolerable to Heaven! Don't you all agree?

So who exactly do those who do God's will refer to? Those who do God's will are those who truly obey God. Obedience to God is shown by magnifying God, revering God, submitting to God's work, practicing and experiencing God's word, and thereby gaining knowledge of God, having true love for Him and being able to bear witness to Him. It's shown by not resisting or betraying God anytime, under any circumstances. Those who achieve this are doers of God's will. We have seen how, though they work hard for the Lord and make great sacrifices, many of those who believe in the Lord do so in order to be rewarded, and enter the kingdom of heaven,

and enjoy rich blessings. It is not to love God and obey Him Such devotion to God is nothing more than making a deal with Him. Despite working hard for God, many people have never put the truth into practice, nor do they exalt or testify to God. Instead, they often make an idol of themselves, and make others worship and follow them. Everything they do is to maintain their own position and income. Are such people those who put God's words into practice and obey God? Are they those who do the will of God? Such people serve God, but they also oppose Him, they are the hypocritical Pharisees. It can be said that they are evildoers. How could people like this be qualified to enter into the kingdom of heaven? From this we see that those who appear to be working hard for the Lord, yet have never put the truth into practice, are not exalting and testifying to God for loving Him and carrying out His will. Such people do not do the will of God! They work hard for the Lord in order to receive His blessings and enter the kingdom of heaven, yet there is no change in their life disposition, they still oppose God. Like the Pharisees, they are only pretending to be good, and will ultimately be cursed by God! Almighty God says, "**I decide the destination of each person not on the basis of age, seniority, amount of suffering, and least of all, the degree to which they invite pity, but according to whether they possess the truth. There is no other choice but this. You must realize that all those who do not follow the will of God shall also be punished. This is an immutable fact. Therefore, all those who are punished are so punished for the righteousness of God and as retribution for their numerous evil acts**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Prepare Sufficient Good Deeds for Your Destination). Almighty God's words make it very clear. Whether or not we will ultimately enter the kingdom of heaven is not based on how much work we do, or how much we have suffered. It is based on whether or not we put

the words of God into practice, whether or not we abide by God's commandments and whether or not we do God's will. Such are the criteria and principles of entry into the kingdom of heaven. And yet, there are those who blindly hold to the words of Paul "I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith: From now on there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness…." (2Ti 4:7–8) They take Paul's fallacious views as the theoretical basis for entry into the kingdom of heaven. So regardless of how much they suffer, or what sacrifices they make, these people are still incapable of receiving God's approval, much less can they enter the kingdom of heaven!

We just fellowshiped that people can only enter the kingdom of heaven by doing the will of the heavenly Father. So what are God's requirements for watching and waiting for the arrival of the Lord? Many people believe that they need only work hard for the Lord, and suffer as they bear the cross, and be faithful to the Lord's name. By doing this, they believe, they're watching and waiting, and when the Lord arrives He will surely not forsake them. In fact, Jesus spoke very clearly about watching and waiting. "**And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom comes; go you out to meet him**." (Mat 25:6). There's also Revelation "**Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he that watches, and keeps his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame**" (Rev 16:15). "**Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear My voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with Me**" (Rev 3:20). In the Book of Revelation there are also several mentions that "**He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the church**." In these prophecies we clearly see that when the Lord Jesus returns during the last days, He will speak to the churches. Thus the Lord asked us to be clever virgins, and pay attention to hearing His voice. We

need to come out and welcome the Lord once we hear His voice. Only then will we be those who watch and wait for the Lord's return and who go to the wedding feast of the Lamb and are taken before God's throne. The wedding feast of the Lamb foretold in the Book of Revelation refers to accepting God's judgment and chastisement during the last days, and delighting in the water of the river of life that flows from God's throne, that is, accepting all the truths expressed by Christ of the last days, and finally being purified by God to become an overcomer. Only these overcomers will enter the kingdom of heaven. Today, Christ of the last days, Almighty God has expressed all truths for the salvation and purification of man. The words of Almighty God have been published online for people in countries and territories around the world to seek and examine. By seeking and examining the words and work of Almighty God, those clever virgins have recognized the voice of God, and have returned before the throne of God. Only people such as this are attending the wedding feast of the Lamb, and are the overcomers whom God will make before the disaster. It can be said that only these people are the ones who will enter into the kingdom of heaven. Many people believe that watching and waiting for the coming of the Lord only involves working hard for the Lord. They do not seek the truth in the big issue of the coming of the Lord. They blindly cling to their own conceptions and imaginings, and refuse to hear God's voice, and never behold the appearance of the Lord. Watching and waiting in this way, then, is neither real nor meaningful. Watching and waiting has nothing to do with our actions. What's key is whether or not we can hear the voice of the Lord, and whether or not we welcome the return of the Lord. Whether or not we can achieve this effect is what's key. Let's read another passage of the words of Almighty God, "**The return of Jesus is a great salvation for those who are capable of accepting the truth, but for those who are**

unable to accept the truth it is a sign of condemnation. You should choose your own path, and should not blaspheme against the Holy Spirit and reject the truth. You should not be an ignorant and arrogant person, but someone who obeys the guidance of the Holy Spirit and longs for and seeks the truth; only in this way will you benefit. I advise you to tread the path of belief in God with care. Do not jump to conclusions; what is more, do not be casual and thoughtless in your belief in God. You should know that, at the very least, those who believe in God should be humble and reverential. Those who have heard the truth and yet turn their nose up at it are foolish and ignorant. Those who have heard the truth and yet carelessly jump to conclusions or condemn it are beset by arrogance. No one who believes in Jesus is qualified to curse or condemn others. You should all be someone with sense and who accepts the truth" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. By the Time You Behold the Spiritual Body of Jesus, God Will Have Made Heaven and Earth Anew).

Today, the incarnate Almighty God does the work of judgment of the last days. Through expressing the truth, Almighty God reveals every kind of man. And God's sheep will hear the voice of God. All those who seek and examine the true way, and accept the truth, are saved by God. At the same time, God reveals those wicked people who are arrogant and do not accept the truth, as well as the antichrists who condemn and blaspheme against Almighty God. These people are all condemned and eliminated by God. Today, the work of God become flesh has almost reached its end. Which is to say, the work of judgment beginning from the house of God has basically finished. So, the work of the church's rapture will finish very soon. The clever virgins shouldn't waste any time in examining and accepting Almighty God's work of the last days. If they do not, the doors of salvation

shall close. If you wait until the Lord publicly appears whilst riding upon a cloud, you might be thinking of the Lord's words, "**because you have seen Me, you have believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed**" (Jhn 20:29). I don't know whether these words mean receiving God's approval or being condemned by God.

—The movie script of Waiting

Question 5: We follow the example of Paul and we work very hard for the Lord, just like Paul said: “I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith.” Is this not following the will of God? Practicing in this way should mean that we are qualified to be raptured and to enter into the kingdom of heaven, so why must we accept God’s work of judgment and purification in the last days before we can be brought into the kingdom of heaven?

Answer: There are many believers in the Lord who follow the example of Paul. Are they really doing the will of the heavenly Father? Are they really worthy of entering the kingdom of heaven? Let’s have a look at what the Lord Jesus said: “**Not every one that said to Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of My Father which is in heaven. Many will say to Me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Your name? and in Your name have cast out devils? and in Your name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess to them, I never knew you: depart from Me, you that work iniquity**” (Mat 7:21–23). We can see from the words of the Lord Jesus that when the Lord returns, there will be many people who preach and work in the name of the Lord who will not only not gain His praise, but will instead be identified as evildoers by the Lord. This shows that making sacrifices, expending yourself and working hard in His name does not mean that you are doing the will of the heavenly Father. So then what really is doing His will? It mainly refers to being able to love God in your heart, to honor Him as great, fearing God and shunning evil, being able to put the Lord’s words into practice, obeying His commandments, frequently exalting and bearing witness to God, genuinely expending yourself for Him, remaining free of any deals or requests, being able to stand witness for God during trials, and obeying God’s sovereignty and arrangements. Only this is doing God’s will.

Just as the Lord Jesus said: "**You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like to it, You shall love your neighbor as yourself**" (Mat 22:37–39). So, all those who do God's will are those who have cast off evil and achieved purification. They are all people who can put the truth into practice and genuinely obey God. They are all able to frequently put the Lord's words into practice and keep His commandments, and they all love God in their hearts, and are able to live relying on the Lord's words. If someone doesn't love God in their heart, they try to make deals with God while working and preaching, they also frequently resist God and rebel against Him and are unable to put His words into practice, how can this person be called someone who does the heavenly Father's will? And how could anyone say that they have already cast off sinfulness and achieved purification? We can all see the following fact. After believing in the Lord, many people are able to preach and work in His name, carry the cross and suffer, and even go to prison and be martyred. All this represents is that they have some faith in the Lord, some enthusiasm for Him. But it cannot be denied that while people are working hard they still frequently rebel against God, resist Him, and do things according to their own will and their own preferences. They do not focus on carrying out the Lord's words or holding His commandments. Some even lust for fame and status; they exalt and bear witness to themselves, or even form their own faction or establish their own little kingdom. There are also a number of people who don't work and suffer in order to love and satisfy God, but for the sake of being rewarded, being crowned. That is why after they've done some work and endured some suffering, they try to capitalize on their past and flaunt their seniority. They audaciously demand the blessings of the kingdom of heaven from God. This is particularly true of

the pastors and elders of the religious world; when Almighty God came to express the truth and do the work of judgment in the last days, they continued to rely on their notions and imaginations to resist and condemn Him, fabricate rumors, spread lies to deceive and control believers and hinder their investigation of the true way. Their sins of resisting God are even more serious than those of the Pharisees who resisted the Lord Jesus. They have committed the heinous sin of nailing God to the cross again, and they have offended God's disposition. What is even more deplorable is that after resisting and condemning Christ of the last days—Almighty God—they still see themselves as outstanding contributors who are utterly devoted to the Lord, and they are still waiting for the Lord Jesus to descend and rapture them into the kingdom of heaven. This is inconceivable! These facts demonstrate that there are many who are able to make sacrifices, expend themselves, and work hard in the name of the Lord, but this does not prove that they do God's will, and it particularly does not prove that they are praised by God, or that they are worthy of entering the kingdom of heaven and receiving rewards. Since their internal satanic natures have not been resolved and they have not been able to cast off the binds of sin, even while they are working they do evil and resist God, and are even in direct opposition to God. How can they be called someone who does God's will? And how can they be worthy of entering the kingdom of heaven? Let's read Almighty God's words.

Almighty God says, "**You must know what kind of people I desire; those who are impure are not permitted to enter into the kingdom, those who are impure are not permitted to besmirch the holy ground. Though you may have done much work, and worked for many years, in the end if you are still deplorably filthy, then it will be intolerable to the law of Heaven that you wish to enter My kingdom! From the**

foundation of the world until today, never have I offered easy access to My kingdom to those who curry favor with Me. This is a heavenly rule, and no one can break it! You must seek life. Today, those who will be made perfect are the same kind as Peter: They are those who seek changes in their own disposition, and who are willing to bear testimony to God and perform their duty as a creature of God. Only people such as this will be made perfect. If you only look to rewards, and do not seek to change your own life disposition, then all your efforts will be in vain—this is an unalterable truth!" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Success or Failure Depends on the Path That Man Walks). It is clearly said in the word of Almighty God. God is holy and righteous. God absolutely forbids any filthy and corrupt people to enter His kingdom. However, Paul said, "I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith: From now on there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness…." These words are Paul's own conceptions and imaginings. They are not at all in accordance with God's words or the truth. They are the exact opposite of God's words!

Many people are asking, "We work hard for the Lord and adhere to the name and the way of the Lord. Why can't we enter the kingdom of heaven?" It is not just whether we follow the will of God. The most important thing is that our sinful nature has not been resolved. Therefore, the experience of God's judgment work in the last days is necessary for someone to receive cleansing to accomplish change in life disposition and become a person who obeys the will of the heavenly Father. Only this way can he be eligible to be brought into the kingdom of heaven. Now we may understand why we often commit sins during the day and confess sins at night, and never manage to forgo sin? The root cause is our nature of Satan which often dominates us to resist and rebel against God. Even if we often

confess our sins and repent to the Lord, we cannot break away from the binding of sin. Such is the dilemma and status quo of all believers in the Lord. For in the Age of Grace, the Lord Jesus only performed the work of redemption so man could be forgiven of his sin and be eligible to pray to God, commune with God and enjoy the grace and blessings of God. But the redemption work of the Lord Jesus only forgave our sins without pardoning our satanic nature. Even if we were able to work hard in the name of the Lord, run around and expend, we still could not break away from the control and binding of sin. So the Lord Jesus said that in the last days He would return, which is to resolve our sinful nature and satanic disposition. In the last days, Almighty God has come to carry out His work of judgment and cleansing of man based upon the foundation of the redemption work in the Age of Grace. By expressing the truth, God reveals and judges man's satanic nature, and cleanses man's satanic disposition, so that we can be completely delivered from the influence of Satan and be saved and gained by God. Let us read the words of Almighty God: "**Before man was redeemed, many of Satan's poisons had already been planted within him and, after thousands of years of being corrupted by Satan, he has within him an established nature that resists God. Therefore, when man has been redeemed, it is nothing more than a case of redemption in which man is bought at a high price, but the poisonous nature within him has not been eliminated. Man that is so defiled must undergo a change before becoming worthy to serve God. By means of this work of judgment and chastisement, man will fully come to know the filthy and corrupt essence within his own self, and he will be able to change completely and become clean. Only in this way can man become worthy to return before the throne of God. All the work done this day is so that man can be made clean and be changed; through judgment**

and chastisement by the word, as well as through refinement, man can purge away his corruption and be made pure. Rather than deeming this stage of work to be that of salvation, it would be more apt to say it is the work of purification. In truth, this stage is that of conquest as well as the second stage in the work of salvation. It is through judgment and chastisement by the word that man arrives at being gained by God, and it is through the use of the word to refine, judge, and disclose that all of the impurities, notions, motives, and individual aspirations within man's heart are completely revealed" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Mystery of the Incarnation (4)). "**Though Jesus did much work among man, He only completed the redemption of all mankind and became man's sin offering; He did not rid man of all his corrupt disposition. Fully saving man from the influence of Satan not only required Jesus to become the sin offering and bear the sins of man, but it also required God to do even greater work to rid man completely of his satanically corrupted disposition. And so, now that man has been forgiven of his sins, God has returned to the flesh to lead man into the new age, and begun the work of chastisement and judgment. This work has brought man into a higher realm. All those who submit under His dominion shall enjoy higher truth and receive greater blessings. They shall truly live in the light, and they shall gain the truth, the way, and the life**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Preface). From the words of Almighty God, we realize that we have been profoundly corrupted by Satan. The nature of Satan is deep in us. Although our sins were forgiven through the redemption work of the Lord Jesus, and we could live before God by the grace of the Lord Jesus, we are still living in the satanic disposition and unable to practice God's word and lead our lives according to God's word, because the nature of Satan in us has not been

resolved. This is not the type of people who will ultimately be gained by God. The people God will gain are those who have been cleansed of their corrupt disposition, those who are free of corruption and obedient to the will of God. So we still need the judgment work of Almighty God to resolve the roots of our sins, namely, the satanic disposition within us. When our satanic disposition has been cleansed, our separation from Satan's influence has been complete, and we can truly obey and worship God, then we will truly be saved and gained by God, and qualify for God's promise to enter His kingdom. There is no doubt about it.

—The movie script of The Mystery Of Godliness

Question 6: We forsake everything else, spread the Lord's gospel, and shepherd the church. This kind of labor is the way to implement the heavenly Father's will. Is there anything wrong with our practice this way?

Answer: Spreading the Lord's gospel and working for Him doesn't necessarily mean you're doing the will of the heavenly Father. To truly do the heavenly Father's will, man must follow the Lord's way and keep His commandments. Man must perform his duty as the Lord demands. Just like what the Lord Jesus said, "**You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like to it, You shall love your neighbor as yourself**" (Mat 22:37–39). As far as doing the heavenly Father's will is concerned, the most important requirement is obeying and practicing the Lord Jesus' current words. This is the most basic principle. If man does not focus on following the Lord Jesus' words and instead focuses on following man's words in the Bible, they are not doing the heavenly Father's will. To do the heavenly Father's will is to follow God's words. People always exalt the words of the apostles contained in the Bible instead of exalting and bearing witness to those of the Lord Jesus Himself. By doing so, they are not doing God's will; Instead, they are resisting Him. Those who are doing God's will can obey God, practice His words, accept His commission, and bear witness to God, regardless of what He says or does. And those people no longer rebel against God or resist Him. They are the ones that God praises. Take Abraham, for example, he was able to follow God's words. He willingly gave his beloved only son back to God. God rewarded Abraham for his absolute obedience. He blessed Abraham's descendants, allowing them to eventually become great nations. Another example is Job. He revered God and stayed away from evil. During his trials, when his wealth and children were taken away, he

cursed himself instead of blaming God; he continued to bless the holy name of Jehovah God. Therefore, he was a perfect man in God's eyes. Peter is yet another example. He followed the Lord Jesus all his life, longing for and pursuing the truth. After accepting the Lord's commission, he shepherded the church, in strict accordance with the Lord's requirements. Eventually he was able to obey God until death and love Him above everything else. All of them obeyed and revered God. People like this are the ones who truly do the heavenly Father's will. If you say that laboring for the Lord means implementing the heavenly Father's will, then why, after the Pharisees traveled over land and sea to spread the gospel and worked hard, were they eventually condemned and cursed by the Lord Jesus? That's because they believed in God but did not follow His way. When the Lord Jesus came to do a new work, not only did the Pharisees not accept it, they led the entire Jewish people in fanatically condemning and resisting the Lord Jesus. They even bore false witness against Him. Everything they did was a betrayal of the Lord's way; they took the Lord Jesus as their enemy. Although these people were enduring much suffering and laboring hard outwardly, how can we say they were doing the heavenly Father's will?

—The movie script of Stinging Memories

Question 7: Today we believe in the Lord Jesus; we suffer and sacrifice to spread the Lord's name, forsaking everything else. We are doing the heavenly Father's will. This means we have already been made holy. When the Lord arrives, He will definitely rapture us into the kingdom heaven.

Answer: As for who can enter the kingdom of heaven: The Lord Jesus said, "**Not every one that said to Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of My Father which is in heaven**" (Mat 7:21). The Lord Jesus clearly told us that only those who do the heavenly Father's will can enter the kingdom of heaven. Brothers and sisters, although people sacrifice to spread the Lord's name, forsaking all else, we cannot deny that they also sin quite a lot. The fact that they sin means that they belong to Satan and are still filthy and corrupt. They can still resist and betray God. It means they have not truly been cleansed. If they were made kings, they would set up their own kingdoms in opposition to God. This is enough to prove that they haven't truly been cleansed and made holy. How can people that resist God this way be qualified to enter the heavenly kingdom? Sacrificing for the Lord, spreading the gospel, establishing the church, supporting the faithful, etc., these are all man's good behaviors. If people practice these behaviors out of love for God, if they truly are sacrificing for God, if they intentionally obey and satisfy God, if they do not seek to satisfy their own intents or make a deal with God, then these behaviors are truly good deeds; God will remember these behaviors and bless these people. If they are doing it in an attempt to make a deal with God, if they seek to satisfy their fleshly desires, if they're doing it to enter the kingdom of heaven and be rewarded, then these behaviors are just attempts to trick God; these people are resisting God! Therefore, is the fact that man practices these outward good behaviors evidence that they are

doing the heavenly Father's will? Does it mean they're holy? Definitely not! Their good behaviors are directed by their sinful natures. They are only doing those things because they want to make a deal with God, to satisfy their extravagant desires. This proves that there are too many impurities in men's heart. How can people like this truly love God and obey God? Men are subject to and controlled by their sinful natures. When God does and says something that are not in line with their own conceptions, they judge Him, deny and condemn God. When God puts them through trials, they misunderstand, blame and betray God. They worship and follow man while believing in God. They listen to man before they listen to God. They when serving God can still often act on their own conceptions, exalt themselves, bear witness to themselves, and take God as their enemies. Men are bound and controlled by their sinful nature. As soon as they gain power, they will oppose God and establish their own kingdoms. This is just like what the Jewish chief priests, scribes and Pharisees did; when the Lord Jesus came to do His work, they fanatically condemned and resisted Him in order to protect their own positions. As a result, the Lord Jesus' salvation was never accepted by the Jews. Were they not establishing their own kingdoms in opposition to God? Therefore, even for people who are outwardly laboring and behaving well, if their sinful natures have not been resolved and their satanic dispositions have not been cleansed, if they can't act according to God's words but do things by their own will, how can they really follow God's will, regardless of how much they suffer or what work they do? Those that do God's will are undoubtedly those that obey God absolutely. They are definitely of the same mind as God. They surely will not rebel against or resist God. These people are the ones who are qualified to enter the kingdom of heaven and receive God's promises.

—The movie script of Stinging Memories

Question 8: Since believing in the Lord, we have given everything to expend ourselves and have worked very hard for the Lord, and we have undergone quite a lot of persecution and tribulation. We have even been imprisoned for Him and we'd rather die than deny the name of the Lord or betray Him. I think that this is carrying out God's will. By suffering for the Lord and standing witness we can achieve holiness, and be qualified to see the Lord. As long as we continue to uphold this, when He returns we will be raptured into the kingdom of heaven.

Answer: Working hard for the Lord is doing God's will—this is a notion of most people in the religious world. As far as people see it, that's quite right, but does it accord with the truth, and is it in line with the Lord's will? Let's first look at a fact. When the Jewish Pharisees traveled over land and sea to preach and do His work, to other people it looked like they were upstanding in behavior and pious. So why were they condemned and cursed by the Lord Jesus, who said "**Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites**"? God can see into people's hearts! Even though the Pharisees worked hard, they were just carrying out religious rituals and explaining knowledge and theory from the Bible. They did not put God's word into practice at all, and they did not follow His commandments. Every single thing they did was for blessings, for rewards, and it was also for their status and to make a living. In their hearts, they didn't love God at all and they didn't have any reverence for Him. Their mad resistance and condemnation of the Lord Jesus completely exposed their nature of hating the truth and their hypocritical essences. That is why the Lord Jesus hated and cursed them. From this fact we can see that being able to work hard absolutely does not represent doing God's will, and someone being upstanding in their behavior does not represent purification. As long as a person does not love God in their heart, does not put God's words into practice, and does not

keep His commandments, all of their hard work is in vain. It is all meaningless and absolutely cannot gain God's praise. Anyone who is capable of resisting and condemning Christ in the flesh will certainly suffer the hatred and damnation of God. So then what really is doing God's will? This refers to people being able to put God's words into practice, obeying His commandments, being able to perform their duty in accordance with His words and the principles of His words, relying on their love for God to expend themselves for Him, having a heart of magnifying God, being able to fear God and shun evil, and frequently exalting Him and bearing witness to Him. Only this is truly doing God's will. We can all see that there truly are many people who suffer quite a lot after believing in the Lord, that they pay quite a great price and even go to prison or are martyred and still do not depart from the Lord. The only thing this means is that they have genuine faith in the Lord. However, they are not pursuing the truth while they are working hard and they do not place emphasis on putting the Lord's words into practice or keeping His commandments. Instead, they follow their own will and are obstinate and arrogant. After believing in God for many years, their disposition in life has not changed at all—they are still arrogant and do not obey anyone else. They frequently tell lies and engage in deceit, and even though they are able to do a lot of work and suffer a great deal, and they have some good behaviors and testimony, everything they do is for the sake of gaining blessings, gaining rewards. It is to enter into the kingdom of heaven and be crowned. Paying a price and expending oneself this way is trying to make a deal with the Lord and it is deceitful in nature. Personal motives and objectives are hidden within. They absolutely are not people who love and obey the Lord, so how could it be said that they do God's will? What's more, although they wave the flag of working and expending themselves for the Lord, they have never exalted Him or borne witness to

Him. Rather, they are showing themselves off in all things to have people look up to them. They are struggling for fame and fortune and setting up their own little kingdoms. Their hard work is for the same purpose as the Pharisees'—it is entirely for their status and their living. This has nothing to do with doing God's will. Instead, it is doing evil and resisting God. We can see from this that if a person cannot put God's words into practice and they cannot keep His commandments, if they do not have a heart of love and obedience for God, then no matter how much they suffer and how much work they do, they still are not doing God's will, and it particularly does not mean that they have cast off sinfulness and achieved purification, so how could they be worthy of entering into the kingdom of heaven? Just as the Lord Jesus said: "**Not every one that said to Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of My Father which is in heaven. Many will say to Me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Your name? and in Your name have cast out devils? and in Your name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess to them, I never knew you: depart from Me, you that work iniquity**" (Mat 7:21–23).

So then, what kind of person is one who does God's will? Let's first take a look at a passage of Almighty God's words. Almighty God says, "**Jesus was able to complete God's commission—the work of all mankind's redemption—because He gave every care to God's will, without making any plans or arrangements for Himself. So, too, was He the intimate of God—God Himself—which is something you all understand very well. (Actually, He was the God Himself who was testified to by God. I mention this here to use the fact of Jesus to illustrate the issue.) He was able to place God's management plan at the very center, and always prayed to the heavenly Father and sought**

the will of the heavenly Father. … He lived for thirty-three years, throughout which He always did His utmost to meet God's will according to God's work at the time, never considering His own personal gain or loss, and always thinking of the will of God the Father" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. How to Serve in Harmony With God's Will). God's words allow us to understand how the Lord Jesus did God's will, and this way we are clear on what a person who truly does God's will is. He has a heart of loving God, he is considerate of God's will, he can put His words into practice and obey His commandments, and he can obey God's designs and arrangements. At any time, in any environment, he is able to uphold God's commission, and complete His commission. He lives only to carry out God's will—He is someone who exalts and bears witness to God. He is someone who has absolutely devotion, obedience, and love for God. Just as the Lord Jesus said: "**If a man love Me, he will keep My words…. He that loves Me not keeps not My sayings**" (Jhn 14:23–24). "**If you continue in My word, then are you My disciples indeed …**" (Jhn 8:31). "**You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like to it, You shall love your neighbor as yourself**" (Mat 22:37–39). All those who truly do God's will are able to put the truth into practice and obey God. They can accept God's commission and devote themselves to it until death. They are able to genuinely love God and live by His words. Take Peter for example. He sacrificed his entire life to God, and everything he did relied on his love for God to practice the truth and satisfy God. He shepherded the churches strictly according to the Lord's will and requirements, and he never asked for anything from God for his own personal gain or loss. All he sought was to love God in his heart; even until

the time he was martyred he felt he was unworthy of dying for the Lord, and asked to be crucified. In the end, he did achieve obedience till the death and the supreme love for God. It is because Peter was a person who genuinely loved the Lord that the Lord Jesus gave him the keys to the kingdom of heaven. And there was Job who was completely upright, who feared God and shunned evil things, and whether God gave to him or took from him, whether God blessed him or brought disaster upon him, he was able to worship and praise God's name through it all. He unfailingly followed God's path, so in God's eyes he was a perfect person. God commending all of these figures throughout the ages was not only because they worked hard. What's more important is that as they could follow God's path, fear God and shun evil, genuinely love and obey God, offer up their entire lives to God, expend themselves to carry out God's will, and endure endless struggles in their lives—only this is what made them people who truly do God's will, who are worthy of receiving God's promise and being raptured into the kingdom of heaven.

—The movie script of Stinging Memories

VI. Questions and Answers on Being Saved and Being Fully Saved

Question 1: The Bible says, “For with the heart man believes to righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made to salvation” (Rom 10:10). We have already been saved through our faith in Jesus. Once we’re saved, we’re eternally saved. When the Lord arrives we will definitely be able to enter the kingdom of heaven.

Answer: “Once we’re saved, we’re forever saved and can enter the kingdom of heaven,” this is just man’s conception and imagining. This is not at all in accordance with God’s words. The Lord Jesus never said that people could enter the kingdom of heaven just by being saved through faith. The Lord Jesus said that only those who do the heavenly Father’s will can enter the kingdom of heaven. Only the Lord Jesus’ words have authority and are the truth. Men’s conceptions and imaginations are not the truth. They are not the standards by which one can enter the kingdom of heaven. Regarding the “salvation through faith” that we talk about, this “salvation” only refers to having one’s sins forgiven, not being convicted or condemned to death by the law. It doesn’t mean that the person who has been “saved” can walk in God’s way, has been freed from sin, and has become holy. It definitely does not mean he can enter the kingdom of heaven. Although we’re forgiven of sin through faith, our sinful nature still remain. We still can often sin and resist God. We live in a constant cycle of sinning and then confessing our sins. How can people like that enter the kingdom of heaven? The Bible says, “and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord” (Heb 12:14). If you say frequent sinners can enter the kingdom of heaven, that isn’t in line with the facts. You dare say that those impure and corrupt men, those frequent sinners, live in the kingdom of heaven? Have you ever seen an impure, evil person in the kingdom of heaven? The Lord is righteous and holy. Would the Lord allow frequent sinners to enter the kingdom of heaven? The Lord Jesus once said, “**Truly, truly, I say to you,**

Whoever commits sin is the servant of sin. And the servant stays not in the house for ever: but the Son stays ever" (Jhn 8:34–35). Therefore, we can see that those who have not broken free of their sin and attained holiness will not be able to enter the kingdom of heaven. If what you say is true, and those who gain salvation through faith can enter the kingdom of heaven, then why did the Lord Jesus say this, "**Not every one that said to Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of My Father which is in heaven**"? Why did He say He would separate the goats from the sheep and the wheat from the tares? Therefore, "Those who are saved through faith will be allowed to enter the kingdom of heaven" cannot be true! That belief is directly contradicted by the Lord Jesus' words!

—The movie script of Stinging Memories

Question 2: It is said in the Bible, “Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God’s elect? It is God that justifies. Who is he that condemns?” (Rom 8:33–34). This proves that the Lord Jesus’ crucifixion on the cross forgives us of all sin. The Lord doesn’t see us as sinners anymore. Who can accuse us now?

Answer: It’s written in the Bible, “Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God’s elect?” Here, we must be very clear. Who, exactly, are members of God’s elect? Those frequent sinners, they who sell out the Lord and their friends, they who steal the offerings to God, fornicators, the timid, and the hypocritical Pharisees, are they God’s elect? If anyone that believes in God is part of God’s elect, then how do we explain what Revelation says, “**For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and fornicators, and murderers, and idolaters, and whoever loves and makes a lie**”? Therefore, not all people that believe in God are part of God’s elect. Only those who really serve the Lord and love God, those that bear true witness to Him are part of God’s elect. For example, Abraham, Job, and Peter obeyed God and revered God. They had righteous deeds and bore good witnesses. What they did obtained God’s approval. No one could accuse them. When did God say that all the faithful were righteous? The majority of them often sin, resist God, and betray God. That is a fact. The Lord Jesus never said the majority of believers were righteous. Therefore, God’s elect refer to those who have righteous deeds and can follow God’s will.

—The movie script of Stinging Memories

Question 3: It's written, "There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus …" (Rom 8:1). Because we believe in Christ Jesus, it has already been guaranteed that we won't be condemned and can enter the kingdom of heaven!

Answer: You think that as long as man believes in Jesus Christ, he's already in Jesus Christ. That is man's conception. "Them which are in Christ Jesus" does not refer to everyone that believes in the Lord Jesus The majority of people that believe in the Lord Jesus cannot obtain God's praise, just as the Lord Jesus said, "**Many Are Called, but Few Are Chosen**." Among those who are not chosen, some only believe in the Lord to gain temporary benefits from their faith; some never love the truth, nor do they practice the truth; some even do evil in resistance to God. Especially religious leaders, the majority of them walk the path of the Pharisees; they are all antichrists. Some of them just believe in God in name; they're non-believers. You say all those who believe in the Lord Jesus are already in Christ Jesus; those words don't make any sense. "There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus." Which group of people does this really refer to? Those who can keep God's commandments, practice the truth, and obey God, that is to say, those who pursue the truth and obtain life, who can obey Christ, refrain from committing acts of evil in resistance to God, and are fully compatible with Christ. Those are the people who are in Christ. It's certainly not the case that everyone who believes in the Lord Jesus is in Christ Jesus. There are some believers whose faith is not acknowledged by God. For instance, the Lord Jesus once said, "**Many will say to Me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Your name? and in Your name have cast out devils? and in Your name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess to them, I never knew you: depart from Me, you that work iniquity**" (Mat

7:22–23). Can you say those mentioned here who prophesy, cast out devils, and do many wonderful works in the Lord's name are all in Christ? Are they not all people that have been condemned by God? Therefore, "faith in Jesus Christ" and "being in Christ" are two different things. Those that believe in the Lord but cannot earn His praise are not in Christ, because God's work of salvation does not proceed the way everyone thinks it does. It's not like all people who believe in God can be saved. Many of them will be eliminated, especially those who sin willfully after they have received the knowledge of the truth. These sins include stealing offerings, denying God, betraying God, failing to practice the truth, being timid or adulterous, etc. Those people will still be condemned and abandoned by God. Those who commit great acts of evil will be punished. It is just as it says in Hebrews 10:26: "**For if we sin willfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remains no more sacrifice for sins**." Therefore, we can see that not all believers of the Lord are in Christ. Only believers that love the truth, are able to pursue the truth, and thereby obey Christ, really know Christ, have no conceptions about Christ, do not rebel against or resist Him, take Christ's heart as their heart and can do God's will are the people who are in Christ. They are the ones who will obtain God's praise and enter His kingdom.

—The movie script of Stinging Memories

Question 4: People are sinful, but the sin offering of the Lord Jesus is forever effective. As long as we confess our sins to the Lord, He will forgive us. We are sinless in the Lord's eyes, so we can enter the kingdom of heaven!

Answer: The Lord Jesus has forgiven mankind's sins, but that doesn't mean man doesn't have sin. That doesn't mean man has been freed from the control of their sins or have attained sanctity. The Lord Jesus forgives man's sins. What does "sin" really refer to in this context? It refers to adultery, theft, etc., anything that violates laws, commandments or God's words is sin. Any action that resists, condemns or judges God is also sin. Any blasphemy against God is sin, sin that cannot be forgiven! In the Age of Grace, the Lord Jesus served as a sin offering for humanity. Only those that prayed to the Lord and repented would not be condemned or put to death. That is to say, God would no longer see them as sinners. Man who was forgiven of their sins could pray directly to the Lord and share in His grace. That is the true meaning of "Sins are forgiven." Although man's sins have been forgiven because of the sin offering of the Lord Jesus, that doesn't mean they have stopped sinning and resisting God. Man's sinful nature still remains, so they are still able to resist and betray God and take Him as their enemy. How can people like that be qualified to enter the kingdom of heaven? It's just as Almighty God says, "**A sinner such as you, who has just been redeemed, and has not been changed, or been perfected by God, can you be after God's heart? For you, you who are still of your old self, it is true that you were saved by Jesus, and that you are not counted as a sinner because of the salvation of God, but this does not prove that you are not sinful, and are not impure. How can you be saintly if you have not been changed? Within, you are beset by impurity, selfish and mean, yet you still wish to descend with Jesus—**

you should be so lucky! You have missed a step in your belief in God: You have merely been redeemed, but you have not been changed. For you to be after God's heart, God must personally do the work of changing and cleansing you; if you are only redeemed, you will be incapable of attaining sanctity. In this way you will be unqualified to share in the good blessings of God, for you have missed out a step in God's work of managing man, which is the key step of changing and perfecting. You, a sinner who has just been redeemed, are therefore incapable of directly inheriting God's inheritance" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Concerning Appellations and Identity). The Lord Jesus' work of redemption only forgave man's sins; it didn't resolve their corrupt disposition. Man's inner arrogance, selfishness, greed, deceitfulness and other aspects of their satanic disposition still remain. This corrupt disposition is deeper than sin; it is much more tenacious than sin. It is the source of our sinning and resistance of God. If these corrupt satanic dispositions are not resolved, man will continue to sin, resist God, and judge and condemn Him according to their own imaginations and conceptions. When they suffer and are persecuted, they can deny God and even betray Him as Judas did. When they hold positions of power, they can establish independent kingdoms in resistance to God. Some people even steal God's offerings and offend His disposition; they will be condemned and extinguished by God. Now most pastors and leaders in the religious community do not abide by the words of the Lord Jesus. They interpret the Bible based on their own conceptions. They treat the words of men in the Bible as the words of God. They exalt men's words instead of testifying about the Lord Jesus' words. This makes the faithful worship men and follow men, and have no place in their hearts for the Lord Jesus. These believers become trapped and controlled under the religious leaders'

domain. This is especially true when the Lord Jesus returns to do His work of judgment. Those pastors and leaders do not pursue or study God's work. Instead, they condemn His work, judge Him, and blaspheme against Him. They make up lies to deceive the believers and seal off the church. They publicly take God as their enemy and offend God's disposition. This is the most serious resistance of God that there is. This is a sin that cannot be forgiven! Their evil behavior is even more egregious than that of the Pharisees in resistance to the Lord Jesus! Therefore, if people's nature that resists God is not resolved, if their satanic corrupt disposition is not cleansed, they'll be capable of any evil behavior in resistance of God. How can these kinds of people enter God's kingdom? Therefore, according to His management plan to save mankind and the actual requirements of corrupt humanity, God expresses many different aspects of the truth in the last days, and carries out His work which fulfills the prophecy in the Bible, "Judgment must begin at the house of God," and is to resolve the key problem that corrupt mankind is controlled by their satanic nature. That is the way that man will gradually free themselves from their corrupt satanic disposition, stop rebelling against and resisting God, become able to truly obey and revere God. Only then will they be cleansed and enter the kingdom of heaven.

—The movie script of Stinging Memories

Question 5: You say that people who believe in God must accept God's work of judgment in the last days, and only then can their corrupt disposition be changed. But we, in accordance with the Lord's requirements, practice humility and patience, love our enemies, bear our crosses, subdue our bodies, abandon worldly things, and we work and preach for the Lord and so on. So aren't all these our changes? Can't they become the credentials for our entry into the kingdom of heaven? I believe that as long as we seek in this way, we can attain purification, and enter into the kingdom of heaven?

Answer: We can love our enemy, bear the cross, overcome our body, and spread the gospel of the Lord. These are positive behaviors coming from our belief in the Lord. Our exhibition of such good behaviors signifies that our faith in the Lord is true. These good behaviors may appear correct to people, as if these are in line with the word of God, but it does not mean that we are practicing God's word and following the will of the heavenly Father, it doesn't mean that we have quit our sinful nature and become sanctified. There is a reason why we cannot just look at people's good behaviors by appearance. We also need to look at their intentions and ultimate purposes. If our intention is to obey God, love God, and satisfy God, this kind of good behavior is practicing the truth and obeying the will of the heavenly Father. On the other hand, if our good behavior is solely for the solicitation of blessing and reward, for the reward of a crown, but not from a loving heart for God, then this kind of good behavior is the hypocritical behavior of the Pharisees instead of doing the heavenly Father's will. If the mere exhibition of good behavior signifies that we are following the will of the heavenly Father, signifies that we have become sanctified, then why do we often commit sins and resist God? Why do we still lead the lifestyle of sinning during the day and confessing at night?

This adequately shows that the mere exhibition of good behaviors does not mean that we are practicing the truth and living out the reality of God's word. Nor does it mean that we have an understanding or a fearful heart to God, much less the ability to love and obey God. As Almighty God says: "**Mere behavioral changes are unsustainable; if there is no alteration in people's life dispositions, then sooner or later, their vicious sides will show themselves. Because the source of the changes in their behavior is fervor, coupled with some work by the Holy Spirit at the time, it is extremely easy for them to become fervent or to exhibit temporary kindness. As the unbelievers say, 'Doing one good deed is easy; what's hard is doing a lifetime of good deeds.' People are incapable of doing good deeds throughout their entire lives. One's behavior is directed by the life; whatever one's life is, so is one's behavior, and only that which is revealed naturally represents the life, as well as one's nature. Things that are fake cannot last. … Behaving well is not the same as submitting to God, much less does it equal being compatible with Christ. Changes in behavior are based on doctrine and born of fervor; they are not based upon true knowledge of God or upon the truth, much less do they rest upon guidance from the Holy Spirit. Even though there are times when some of what people do is directed by the Holy Spirit, this is not an expression of the life, much less is it the same as knowing God; no matter how good a person's behavior is, it does not prove that they have submitted to God or that they put the truth into practice**" (The Word, Vol. 3. The Discourses of Christ of the Last Days. The Difference Between External Changes and Changes in Disposition). Almighty God's word clearly explains to us about the essence and source of good behavior. The good behavior of man comes from enthusiasm, which is the practices based on his notions of rules and regulations, not from

comprehension of the practicing principles after understanding many truths, or the desire to love and satisfy God from understanding the intention of God. Good behavior stems from man's conceptions and imaginations. Man's conceptions and imaginations come from man's own opinions and his corrupt nature. Therefore no matter what we do, whatever pain we suffer or the price we pay, it is not practice of the truth. It does not mean obedience to God or the outcome of the Holy Spirit's work. Even when we exhibit good behavior and the ability to follow the rules while we appear to be very pious and spiritual, we are still prone to committing sin and resisting God because of our inveterate corrupt disposition of Satan, our unresolved sinful nature, and lack of true understanding of God. As we can see, many well behaving people still frequently commit sins and confess their sins after believing in God. This is an undeniable fact. When they show good behaviors while sinning and resisting God at the same time, it adequately proves that they are not following the will of the heavenly Father. They do not readily deserve the praise of God. The Jewish Pharisees were law-abiding people with impeccable behaviors cosmetically. But when the Lord Jesus came to work, why did they frantically resist, condemn, scheme, and crucify the Lord Jesus? This was enough to explain that the nature of resisting God was innate in them. Regardless of how well they were behaving overtly, it did not mean that they understood, obeyed and were compatible with God, much less followed God's will and became sanctified. If we want to resolve our sinful nature and become sanctified, we must experience God's work of judgment in the last days, understand the ample truths therein and gain real knowledge of God, thus begetting true obedience and fear of God. Otherwise the deep-rooted corrupt disposition of Satan in us will never be cleansed and altered, and we will never be after God's heart and admitted to the kingdom of God.

The Lord Jesus just did the work of redemption. Therefore, during the Age of Grace, man couldn't break free from their sins and be purified, regardless of how they strived or read the Bible. In the last days, God starts His judgment work from His house according to the steps of His management plan for saving humanity; through this work, He will cleanse and change humanity, allowing them to be freed from their sins and attain purification. Almighty God says, "**Though Jesus did much work among man, He only completed the redemption of all mankind and became man's sin offering; He did not rid man of all his corrupt disposition. Fully saving man from the influence of Satan not only required Jesus to become the sin offering and bear the sins of man, but it also required God to do even greater work to rid man completely of his satanically corrupted disposition. And so, now that man has been forgiven of his sins, God has returned to the flesh to lead man into the new age, and begun the work of chastisement and judgment. This work has brought man into a higher realm. All those who submit under His dominion shall enjoy higher truth and receive greater blessings. They shall truly live in the light, and they shall gain the truth, the way, and the life**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Preface). "**Through the sin offering, man has been forgiven his sins, for the work of the crucifixion has already come to an end and God has prevailed over Satan. But the corrupt disposition of man still remaining within him, man can still sin and resist God, and God has not gained mankind. That is why in this stage of work God uses the word to expose the corrupt disposition of man, causing him to practice in accordance with the right path. This stage is more meaningful than the previous one, as well as more fruitful, for now it is the word that directly supplies man's life and enables the disposition of man to be completely renewed; it is a**

much more thorough stage of work. Therefore, the incarnation in the last days has completed the significance of God's incarnation and completely finished God's management plan for man's salvation" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Mystery of the Incarnation (4)). From God's words, we can see that the Lord Jesus' work of redemption set the foundation for God's work of salvation in the last days and the work of judgment in the last days is the core, the focal point, of God's work of salvation. It is the key, the most important part of the salvation of mankind. Through experiencing God's work in the Age of Grace, we are forgiven of our sins, but we cannot be freed from them, nor can we attain purification. Only God's work of judgment in the last days can work the necessary truth into men, allow them to really know God, change their life dispositions obey and worship God, and be after God's heart. That is how God will complete His management plan to save mankind.

—The movie script of Stinging Memories

Question 6: You say that if people want to be freed from sin and be cleansed, they must accept Almighty God's work of judgment in the last days. How does God judge and cleanse people in the last days? Throughout all these years that I've believed in the Lord, I thought that it'd be great if there came a time when people no longer sinned. At that time, I thought, life would no longer be painful!

Answer: As for how Almighty god judges and cleanses people in the last days, let's read some more of Almighty God's words! Almighty God says, "**God's work in the present incarnation is to express His disposition primarily through chastisement and judgment. Building on this foundation, He brings more truth to man and points out to him more ways of practice, thereby achieving His objective of conquering man and saving him from his own corrupt disposition. This is what lies behind the work of God in the Age of Kingdom**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Preface).

"**In the last days, Christ uses a variety of truths to teach man, to expose the substance of man, and to dissect the words and deeds of man. These words comprise various truths, such as man's duty, how man should obey God, how man should be loyal to God, how man ought to live out normal humanity, as well as the wisdom and the disposition of God, and so on. These words are all directed at the substance of man and his corrupt disposition. In particular, the words that expose how man spurns God are spoken in regard to how man is an embodiment of Satan, and an enemy force against God. In undertaking His work of judgment, God does not simply make clear the nature of man with a few words; He exposes, deals with, and prunes over the long term. These methods of exposure, dealing, and pruning**

cannot be substituted with ordinary words, but with the truth of which man is utterly bereft. Only methods such as these can be called judgment; only through judgment of this kind can man be subdued and thoroughly convinced into submission to God, and moreover gain true knowledge of God. What the work of judgment brings about is man's understanding of the true face of God and the truth about his own rebelliousness. The work of judgment allows man to gain much understanding of the will of God, of the purpose of God's work, and of the mysteries that are incomprehensible to him. It also allows man to recognize and know his corrupt essence and the roots of his corruption, as well as to discover the ugliness of man. These effects are all brought about by the work of judgment, for the essence of this work is actually the work of opening up the truth, the way, and the life of God to all those who have faith in Him. This work is the work of judgment done by God" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth).

"**By means of this work of judgment and chastisement, man will fully come to know the filthy and corrupt essence within his own self, and he will be able to change completely and become clean. Only in this way can man become worthy to return before the throne of God. All the work done this day is so that man can be made clean and be changed; through judgment and chastisement by the word, as well as through refinement, man can purge away his corruption and be made pure. Rather than deeming this stage of work to be that of salvation, it would be more apt to say it is the work of purification**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Mystery of the Incarnation (4)).

"**God does the work of judgment and chastisement so that man may gain knowledge of Him, and for the sake of His testimony. Without**

His judgment of man's corrupt disposition, man could not possibly know His righteous disposition, which brooks no offense, and nor would man be able to turn his old knowledge of God into a new one. For the sake of His testimony, and for the sake of His management, He makes His entirety public, thus enabling man, through His public appearance, to arrive at knowledge of God, to be transformed in his disposition, and to bear resounding testimony to God. The transformation of the disposition of man is achieved through many different kinds of God's work; without such changes in his disposition, man would be unable to bear testimony to God and to be after God's heart. The transformation of man's disposition signifies that man has freed himself from Satan's bondage and from the influence of darkness, and has truly become a model and specimen of God's work, a witness of God, and one who is after God's heart" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Those Who Know God Can Bear Testimony to God).

From God's words, we can see that God uses the truths He has expressed in the last days to judge and chastise corrupted humanity. Every word of His judgment displays His righteous disposition and all that He has and is; they are all words that can be mankind's life. Therefore, they are all the truth. These words of truth are judgment on corrupt humanity. They are chastisement, condemnation, observation and purification to them. God uses His words of truth to cleanse corrupt humans of their satanic disposition, and to resolve the problem of their nature and substance: resistance to God. That is the significance of God using His work of judgment to cleanse, save and perfect humanity. During His judgment work in the last days, the words expressed by Almighty God reveal all the mysteries of His 6,000-year management plan. They clearly reveal the

purpose of God's three stages of work of salvation and the substance of every stage of work, especially the path by which believers can change their disposition and be cleansed. At the same time, Almighty God thoroughly exposes man's nature and substance corrupted by Satan, the truth of their corruption, and the roots of their sins. This makes people reflect on themselves and realize that they have the very satanic natures. They see that they live out a completely demonic, satanic likeness. This allows them to truly repent and makes them willing to accept Almighty God's chastisement and judgment, trials and refinement. They then pursue the truth and a change in disposition under the guidance of God's words. Gradually, they are able to free themselves from the controls and restrictions of their corrupt satanic disposition. Eventually they are able to rebel against Satan, forsake evil, and return to God. This allows people to resolve their sinful nature at the root.

In addition, through experiencing and practicing God's words, they unconsciously understand many truths. For example: What does it mean to be saved? What is full salvation? What does it mean to do God's will? What does it mean to act on one's own desires? What does it mean to follow God? What does it mean to follow man? What are the Pharisees? Who does God save? Who does God abandon? The most important thing is for people to actually experience God's righteous and unoffendable disposition in the judgment and chastisement of His words. Through knowing God, these people gradually become able to revere Him and shun evil. They live their lives according to God's words. As they begin to understand the truth, these people gradually gain a deeper knowledge of God. They obey God, and practice the truth, more and more. They unknowingly release themselves from sin and attain sanctity. This end result is something that everyone who believes in the Lord during the Age of Grace "but does not accept God's

work in the last days can never achieve." Therefore, only if people accept Almighty God's judgment and chastisement by the word in the last days, will they be able to understand the truth and know God and completely break free of satanic influences and corrupt disposition. They will be able to live according to the truth and God's words. That is the true meaning of full salvation.

—The movie script of Stinging Memories

Question 7: If we do not accept Almighty God's work of judgment, then can we really do the heavenly Father's will? Can we really enter the kingdom of heaven?

Answer: If men only accept the Lord Jesus' redemptive work in the Age of Grace, but do not accept Almighty God's work of judgment and chastisement in the last days, they will not be able to free themselves from sin, do the heavenly Father's will, and enter God's kingdom. This is beyond doubt! That's because during the Age of Grace, the Lord Jesus did His work of redemption. Due to the stature of the people at that time, the Lord Jesus only gave them the way of repentance, and asked people to understand a few rudimentary truths and paths to practice them. For example: He asked people to confess their sins and repent and bear the cross. He taught them about humility, patience, love, fasting, baptism, etc. These are a few very limited truths that people of that time could understand and attain. The Lord Jesus never expressed other deeper truths that have to do with changing life disposition, being saved, becoming cleansed, being made perfect, etc., because at that time, the people lacked the necessary stature to bear those truths. Man must wait until the Lord Jesus returns to do His work in the last days. He will bestow upon corrupt mankind all the truths they need to be saved and perfected according to God's management plan of saving mankind and the needs of the corrupt mankind. It is just as the Lord Jesus said, "**I have yet many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now. However, when He, the Spirit of truth, is come, He will guide you into all truth: for He shall not speak of Himself; but whatever He shall hear, that shall He speak: and He will show you things to come**" (Jhn 16:12–13). The Lord Jesus' words are very clear. During the Age of Grace, the Lord Jesus never gave corrupt humans all the truths they required to be saved. There are still many deeper, higher truths, that is, there are many

truths that the Lord Jesus did not tell mankind that will allow people to be freed from their corrupt satanic dispositions and achieve holiness, as well as truths that man requires to obey and know God. Therefore, in the last days, Almighty God expresses all truths necessary to save mankind. He uses these truths to judge, chastise, cleanse, and perfect all who accept Almighty God's salvation in the last days. In the end, these people will be made complete and taken into God's kingdom. This is how God's management plan to save mankind shall be completed. If people only accept the Lord Jesus' redemptive work, but do not accept Almighty God's work of judgment in the last days, they will never be able to obtain the truths and change their disposition. They will never become one who does God's will and will definitely never be qualified to enter God's kingdom.

People of the last days have been deeply corrupted by Satan; they are filled with Satan's poison. Their viewpoints, principles of survival, outlook on life, values, etc. go against the truth and are in enmity to God. All men worship evil and have become enemies of God. If a humanity that is full of corrupt satanic disposition, does not experience Almighty God's judgment and chastisement and burning and cleansing by words, how can they rebel against Satan and free themselves from its influence? How can they revere God, shun evil, and do God's will? We can see that many people have believed in the Lord Jesus for years, but despite the fact that they enthusiastically testify that Jesus is the Savior and work hard for many years, their failure to know God's righteous disposition and revere God still causes them to judge and condemn God's work and deny and reject God's return when Almighty God carries out His work in the last days. They even re-crucify Christ on the cross when He returns in the last days. This is enough to show that if men do not accept Almighty God's work of judgment and chastisement in the last days, the source of men's sin and

satanic nature will never be resolved. Their resistance of God will cause them to perish. This is a fact that no one can deny! Among believers, only those who honestly accept God's judgment and chastisement in the last days will obtain the truth as life, become those who do the heavenly Father's will, and become the ones who know God and are compatible with Him. They are the ones who will be qualified to share in God's promise and be taken into His kingdom.

—The movie script of Stinging Memories

Question 8: As to those who have believed in the Lord Jesus for many years and sacrificed for Him their entire lives, if they do not accept Almighty God's work in the last days, they really won't be able to be raptured into the kingdom of heaven?

Answer: As for this problem, Almighty God has already given us a clear answer. Almighty God says, "**If you do not seek the way of life provided by Christ of the last days, then you shall never gain the approval of Jesus, and shall never be qualified to enter the gate of the kingdom of heaven, for you are both a puppet and prisoner of history. Those who are controlled by regulations, by letters, and shackled by history will never be able to gain life nor gain the perpetual way of life. This is because all they have is turbid water which has been clung to for thousands of years instead of the water of life that flows from the throne. Those who are not supplied with the water of life will forever remain corpses, playthings of Satan, and sons of hell. How, then, can they behold God? If you only try to hold on to the past, only try to keep things as they are by standing still, and do not try to change the status quo and discard history, then will you not always be against God? The steps of God's work are vast and mighty, like surging waves and rolling thunders—yet you sit passively awaiting destruction, clinging to your folly and doing nothing. In this way, how can you be considered someone who follows the footsteps of the Lamb? How can you justify the God that you hold on to as a God who is always new and never old? And how can the words of your yellowed books carry you across into a new age? How can they lead you to seek the steps of God's work? And how can they take you up to heaven? What you hold in your hands are letters that can provide but temporary solace, not truths that are capable of giving life. The scriptures you read can only enrich your**

tongue and are not words of wisdom that can help you know human life, much less the paths that can lead you to perfection. Does this discrepancy not give you cause for reflection? Does it not make you realize the mysteries contained within? Are you capable of delivering yourself to heaven to meet God on your own? Without the coming of God, can you take yourself into heaven to enjoy family happiness with God? Are you still dreaming now? I suggest, then, that you stop dreaming and look at who is working now—look to see who is now carrying out the work of saving man during the last days. If you do not, you shall never gain the truth, and shall never gain life.

"**Those who wish to gain life without relying on the truth spoken by Christ are the most ridiculous people on earth, and those who do not accept the way of life brought by Christ are lost in fantasy. And so I say that those who do not accept Christ of the last days shall forever be despised by God. Christ is man's gateway to the kingdom during the last days, and there are none who can go around Him. None may be perfected by God except through Christ. You believe in God, and so you must accept His words and obey His way. You cannot only think of gaining blessings while being incapable of receiving the truth and incapable of accepting the provision of life. Christ comes during the last days so that all those who truly believe in Him may be provided with life. His work is for the sake of concluding the old age and entering the new one, and His work is the path that must be taken by all those who would enter the new age. If you are incapable of acknowledging Him, and instead condemn, blaspheme, or even persecute Him, then you are bound to burn for eternity and shall never enter the kingdom of God**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work

of God. Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life).

Almighty God, Christ of the last days, gives people the true way of eternal life. Almighty God is the Christ who appears in the last days, and He is man's gateway to the kingdom of heaven. No one can bypass Him. We must accept the truths expressed by Almighty God in order to obtain life, become those who follow God's will, obtain God's salvation in the last days, and be taken into the kingdom of heaven. Just like what's written in 1 Peter, "Who are kept by the power of God through faith to salvation ready to be revealed in the last time" (1Pe 1:5).

We have believed in the Lord for all these years and always been hopeful that we could enter the heavenly kingdom. Even though we knew the Lord Jesus said only those who do the heavenly Father's will can enter the heavenly kingdom, no one really understood what He meant. Only the truth expressed by Christ of the last days—Almighty God shows us the path to the kingdom of heaven, illustrates the heavenly Father's will and reveals all mysteries to us. He makes us understand many truths and allows us to set more realistic and accurate goals to pursue. Brothers and sisters, Almighty God is the return of the Lord Jesus. Almighty God's words are the truth; they are God's voice, the expression of the Holy Spirit. It is by the grace of God that we were given an opportunity to accept Almighty God's way of eternal life today. This is a blessing! We cannot miss this golden opportunity!

—The movie script of Stinging Memories

Question 9: If we accept Almighty God, are we guaranteed to enter the kingdom of heaven?

Answer: Almighty God has spoken very clearly about this problem. Let's first take a look at what he has said.

"**The return of Jesus is a great salvation for those who are capable of accepting the truth, but for those who are unable to accept the truth it is a sign of condemnation. You should choose your own path, and should not blaspheme against the Holy Spirit and reject the truth. You should not be an ignorant and arrogant person, but someone who obeys the guidance of the Holy Spirit and longs for and seeks the truth; only in this way will you benefit**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. By the Time You Behold the Spiritual Body of Jesus, God Will Have Made Heaven and Earth Anew).

"**I will let all who follow Me know this fact: Those who cannot fully accept My words, those who cannot practice My words, those who cannot find a purpose in My words, and those who cannot receive salvation because of My words, are those who have been condemned by My words and, moreover, have lost My salvation, and My rod shall never stray from them**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. You Ought to Consider Your Deeds).

"**If you have faith in God, yet seek not the truth or the will of God, nor love the way that brings you closer to God, then I say that you are one who is trying to evade judgment, and that you are a puppet and a traitor who flees from the great white throne. God will not spare any of the rebellious who escape from under His eyes. Such men shall receive even more severe punishment. Those who come before God to be judged, and have moreover been purified, shall forever live in the**

kingdom of God. Of course, this is something that belongs to the future" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth).

From Almighty God's words, we can see that God saves people based on a principle. It's not the case that all who accept Almighty God's work can be saved and enter the kingdom of heaven. Whether people that accept Almighty God's work will have a good final destination or not is dependent on whether they love and pursue the truth and whether they accept and obey God's judgment and chastisement, thereby obtaining the truth, releasing themselves from corrupt satanic disposition and being cleansed. God's judgment and chastisement in the last days is the only chance for the corrupt mankind to be fully saved. Only those that love the truth, obey God's judgment and chastisement, His trials and refinement, obtain the truth, and are cleansed will be brought into His kingdom. Those that do not accept the truth or obey God's judgment and chastisement will be abandoned by Him. And those that commit all kinds of evil will be punished. God's work of judgment in the last days will classify everyone according to their kind. Whether people can accept and obey God's judgment and chastisement, obtain the truth, and be cleansed is directly related to whether they can obtain salvation and enter the kingdom of heaven. Whether or not people can accept God's work in the last days is related to their fate, destination and final result. Let's read another passage from Almighty God's words. "**Do you understand now what is judgment and what is truth? If you do, then I exhort you to submit obediently to being judged, otherwise you shall never have the opportunity to be commended by God or to be brought by Him into His kingdom. Those who only accept judgment but can never be purified, that is, those who flee amidst the work of judgment, shall forever be detested and rejected**

by God. Their sins are more numerous, and more grievous, than those of the Pharisees, for they have betrayed God and are rebels against God. Such people who are not worthy even to do service shall receive more severe punishment, a punishment that is, moreover, everlasting. God shall not spare any traitor who once evinced loyalty with words but then betrayed Him. People such as these shall receive retribution through punishment of the spirit, soul, and body. Is this not precisely a revelation of the righteous disposition of God? Is this not God's purpose in judging man, and revealing him? God consigns all who perform all kinds of wicked deeds during the time of judgment to a place infested with evil spirits, and lets these evil spirits destroy their fleshly bodies as they wish, and those people's bodies emit the stench of corpses. Such is their fitting retribution. God writes down in their record books each and every one of the sins of those disloyal false believers, false apostles, and false workers; then, when the time is right, He casts them amidst the unclean spirits, letting these unclean spirits defile their entire bodies at will, so that they may never be reincarnated and never again see the light. Those hypocrites who do service for a time but are incapable of remaining loyal to the end are numbered by God among the wicked, so that they walk in the counsel of the wicked and become part of their disorderly rabble; in the end, God shall annihilate them. God casts aside and takes no notice of those who have never been loyal to Christ or have never contributed anything of their strength, and at the changing of the age He shall annihilate them all. They shall no longer exist on earth, much less gain passage into the kingdom of God. Those who have never been sincere to God, but are forced by circumstance into dealing with Him perfunctorily, are numbered among those who do service for His people. Only a small

number of such people will survive, while the majority shall perish along with those who are not qualified even to do service. Ultimately, God shall bring into His kingdom all those who are of the same mind as God, the people and the sons of God, and those predestined by God to be priests. They will be the distillation of God's work. As for those who cannot be classed in any of the categories set by God, they shall be numbered among the unbelievers—and you can surely imagine what their outcome shall be. I have already said to you all that I should say; the road that you select is your choice alone. What you should understand is this: The work of God never waits for any that cannot keep pace with Him, and the righteous disposition of God shows no mercy to any man" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth).

—The movie script of Stinging Memories

VII. Questions and Answers on the Name of God

Question 1: It is clearly written in the Bible: “Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever” (Heb 13:8). So the name of the Lord does not change, but you say that the name of the Lord Jesus will change in the last days. How can you explain that?

Answer: Brothers and sisters, the Bible says, “Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever”. (Heb 13:8). This refers to the fact that God’s disposition and His essence are eternal and unchanging. It does not mean that His name will not change. Let’s take a look at the words of Almighty God.

Almighty God says, “**There are those who say that God is immutable. That is correct, but it refers to the immutability of God’s disposition and His essence. Changes in His name and work do not prove that His essence has altered; in other words, God will always be God, and this will never change. If you say that the work of God is unchanging, then would He be able to finish His six-thousand-year management plan? You only know that God is forever unchanging, but do you know that God is always new and never old? If the work of God is unchanging, then could He have led mankind all the way to the present day? If God is immutable, then why is it that He has already done the work of two ages? … the words ‘God is immutable’ refer to what God inherently has and is. Regardless, you cannot make the work of six thousand years hinge upon a single point, or circumscribe it with dead words. Such is the stupidity of man. God is not as simple as man imagines, and His work cannot linger in any one age. Jehovah, for example, cannot always stand for the name of God; God can also do His work under the name of Jesus. This is a sign that God’s work is always progressing in a forward direction.**

"**God is always God, and He will never become Satan; Satan is always Satan, and it will never become God. God's wisdom, God's wondrousness, God's righteousness, and God's majesty shall never change. His essence and what He has and is shall never change. As for His work, however, it is always progressing in a forward direction, always going deeper, for He is always new and never old. In every age God assumes a new name, in every age He does new work, and in every age He allows His creations to see His new will and new disposition**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Vision of God's Work (3)).

We can see from Almighty God's words that God Himself is unchanging. This refers to God's disposition and essence, not His name. Although God has performed different work and has adopted different names during different ages through His process of saving mankind, His essence can never change. God will always be God. So, regardless of whether His name is Jehovah or Jesus, His essence never changes. It is always the same God working. However, at the time, the Jewish Pharisees did not know that God's name changes along with the transition in the age, in His work. They believed that only Jehovah could be their God, their Savior because over the ages they had maintained that only Jehovah is God, and there is no other Savior but Jehovah. As a result, when God changed His name and came to perform the work of redemption with the name "Jesus," they madly condemned and resisted the Lord Jesus. In the end, they nailed Him to the cross, committing a heinous crime, and suffering God's punishment. Just the same, now that we are in the last days, if we deny God's essence and that this is the work of one God because He has changed His work and His name, that would be human recklessness and

ignorance. Each name that God has taken in each age has great significance, and they all hold great salvation for mankind.

God is always new, and never old. He is the God who encompasses all things. The individual names of God cannot possibly represent His entirety. So, as the ages progress, His names also continue to change. Almighty God says, "**The name of Jesus was taken for the sake of the work of redemption, so would He still be called by the same name when He returns in the last days? Would He still be doing the work of redemption? Why is it that Jehovah and Jesus are one, yet They are called by different names in different ages? Is it not because the ages of Their work are different? Could a single name represent God in His entirety? This being so, God must be called by a different name in a different age, and He must use the name to change the age and to represent the age. For no one name can fully represent God Himself, and each name is able only to represent the temporal aspect of God's disposition in a given age; all it needs to do is to represent His work. Therefore, God can choose whatever name befits His disposition to represent the entire age**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Vision of God's Work (3)). "**Could the name of Jesus—'God with us'—represent God's disposition in its entirety? Could it fully articulate God? If man says that God can only be called Jesus and may not have any other name because God cannot change His disposition, these words are blasphemy indeed! Do you believe that the name Jesus, God with us, alone can represent God in His entirety? God may be called by many names, but among these many names, there is not one that is able to encapsulate all of God, not one that can fully represent God. And so, God has many names, but these many names cannot fully articulate God's disposition, for God's disposition is so rich that it**

simply exceeds man's capacity to know Him. There is no way for man, using the language of mankind, to encapsulate God fully. … One particular word or name does not have the capacity to represent God in His entirety, so do you think His name can be fixed? God is so great and so holy, yet you will not permit Him to change His name in each new age? Therefore, in every age in which God personally does His own work, He uses a name that befits the age in order to encapsulate the work that He intends to do. He uses this particular name, one that possesses temporal significance, to represent His disposition in that age. This is God using the language of mankind to express His own disposition" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Vision of God's Work (3)). God is the wise, almighty Ruler. He is great, He is abundant, and He is all-encompassing. Any one particular name cannot possibly represent all that God is. On top of that, in each age God has only done a portion of His work, and He has only revealed a portion of His disposition. He has not expressed all that He has and is. So, in each stage of His work He uses a particular name that holds the significance of that age to represent His work in that age, and the disposition that He is expressing. This is a principle of God's work, and it is the primary reason that He changes His name.

—The movie script of God's Name Has Changed?!

Question 2: God's name in each age cannot represent God's all, so what is the significance of His name in each age?

Answer: This question is very critical. Today Almighty God has already told us the answer. He says, **"'Jehovah' is the name that I took during My work in Israel, and it means the God of the Israelites (God's chosen people) who can take pity on man, curse man, and guide the life of man; the God who possesses great power and is full of wisdom. 'Jesus' is Emmanuel, which means the sin offering that is full of love, full of compassion, and which redeems man. He did the work of the Age of Grace, and He represents the Age of Grace, and can only represent one part of the work of the management plan. That is to say, only Jehovah is the God of the chosen people of Israel, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, the God of Jacob, the God of Moses, and the God of all the people of Israel. And so, in the current age, all the Israelites, apart from the Jewish people, worship Jehovah. They make sacrifices to Him on the altar and serve Him in the temple wearing priests' robes. What they hope for is the reappearance of Jehovah. Only Jesus is the Redeemer of mankind, and He is the sin offering that redeemed mankind from sin. Which is to say, the name of Jesus came from the Age of Grace and came into existence because of the work of redemption in the Age of Grace. The name of Jesus came into existence to allow the people of the Age of Grace to be reborn and saved, and is a particular name for the redemption of the whole of mankind. Thus, the name Jesus represents the work of redemption, and denotes the Age of Grace. The name Jehovah is a particular name for the people of Israel who lived under the law. In each age and each stage of work, My name is not baseless, but holds representative significance: Each name represents one age. 'Jehovah' represents the Age of Law, and is the**

honorific for the God worshiped by the people of Israel. 'Jesus' represents the Age of Grace, and is the name of the God of all those who were redeemed during the Age of Grace. If man still longs for the arrival of Jesus the Savior during the last days, and still expects Him to arrive in the image He bore in Judea, then the entire six-thousand-year management plan would have stopped in the Age of Redemption, and could not have progressed any further. The last days, furthermore, would never arrive, and the age would never be brought to an end. This is because Jesus the Savior is only for the redemption and salvation of mankind. I took the name of Jesus only for the sake of all the sinners in the Age of Grace, but it is not the name by which I shall bring the whole of mankind to an end" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Savior Has Already Returned Upon a 'White Cloud').

From the words of Almighty God, we have understood the meaning of the names God has taken in each age. In the Age of Law, His name was Jehovah, and that name represented what He expressed to mankind in that age: a disposition of majesty, wrath, curse, and mercy. Then, God began the work of the Age of Law with the name of Jehovah. He issued His law and commandments and officially led newborn mankind in their life on earth. He required people to strictly adhere to the law and learn to worship Him, to honor Him as great. Blessings and grace would follow anyone who upheld the law. Anyone who violated the law would be stoned to death or would be incinerated by the fires of heaven. That is why the Israelites who lived under the law strictly upheld it and held the name of Jehovah as holy. They lived under the name of Jehovah for a few thousand years, until the Age of Law ended. At the end of the Age of Law, since mankind had become more and more corrupt and they were sinning more and more, there was no way for people to continue to uphold the law. Everyone was facing

the constant danger of being punished for violating the law, which is why God carried out His work of redemption under the name of Jesus. He opened up the Age of Grace and brought the Age of Law to an end, expressing God's disposition of love and mercy. He also bestowed His bountiful grace upon man, and in the end was crucified for man's sake, thus redeeming us from our sins. From then on, we have begun to pray to the name of the Lord Jesus and to revere His name as holy, to enjoy His forgiveness of our sins, and His rich grace. The name "Jesus" is so that the people of the Age of Grace could be born again and gain salvation. Its meaning is being a sin offering of mercy and love for mankind's redemption. The name "Jesus" represents God's work of redemption, and it also represents His disposition of mercy and love. From the two stages of work, we can see that God has already completed that the name He adopts in each age has its own particular significance. Each name represents God's work in that age and the disposition He expresses in that age. In the Age of Grace, when the Lord came, if He was not called Jesus, but was called Jehovah, then God's work would have stopped in the Age of Law, and corrupt mankind never could have gained God's redemption. In the end, man would have been condemned and punished for violating the law, and when God came in the last days, if He were still called Jesus, corrupt mankind could only gain redemption of their sins, but could never have their corrupt disposition cleansed to enter into the kingdom of God. This is because those redeemed by the Lord Jesus were forgiven of their sins, but their internal sinful nature still exists. They still sin frequently, so they have not been fully gained by God. So, in order to entirely save mankind from sin, God is now performing another stage of work of fully purifying and saving mankind, on the foundation of the work of the Lord Jesus. God's name changes accordingly again and becomes Almighty God. As for God

being called Almighty God in the last days, this was actually prophesied long ago. We can find this through careful review. Let's read Revelation 1:8. "**I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, said the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty**." Now, everyone please turn to chapter 11:16-17. "**And the four and twenty elders, which sat before God on their seats, fell on their faces, and worshipped God, Saying, We give you thanks, O LORD God Almighty, which are, and were, and are to come; because you have taken to you your great power, and have reigned.**" This was also prophesied in Revelation 4:8, 16:7, 19:6 and many other places in the Bible. God's new name in the last days is the Almighty, that is, Almighty God.

God is a wise God, and every single thing He does has great significance. The name Almighty God fully represents His work and the disposition He expresses in the last days. Without God personally unveiling these mysteries to us, no matter how many years we spent reading the Bible, we wouldn't know these things. Let's read the words of Almighty God together.

Almighty God says, "**The work of God throughout all of His management is perfectly clear: The Age of Grace is the Age of Grace, and the last days are the last days. There are distinct differences between each age, for in each age God does work which is representative of that age. For the work of the last days to be done, there must be burning, judgment, chastisement, wrath, and destruction to bring the age to an end. The last days refer to the final age. During the final age, will God not bring the age to an end? To end the age, God must bring chastisement and judgment with Him. Only in this way can He bring the age to an end. … Therefore, during the Age of Law Jehovah was the name of God, and in the Age of Grace the name of**

Jesus represented God. During the last days, His name is Almighty God —the Almighty, who uses His power to guide man, conquer man, and gain man, and in the end, bring the age to its close" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Vision of God's Work (3)).

"**I was once known as Jehovah. I was also called the Messiah, and people once called Me Jesus the Savior with love and esteem. Today, however, I am no longer the Jehovah or Jesus that people knew in times past; I am the God who has returned in the last days, the God who shall bring the age to an end. I am the God Himself that rises up from the end of the earth, replete with My entire disposition, and full of authority, honor, and glory. People have never engaged with Me, never known Me, and have always been ignorant of My disposition. From the creation of the world until today, not one person has seen Me. This is the God who appears to man in the last days but is hidden among man. He resides among man, true and real, like the burning sun and the blazing flame, filled with power and brimming with authority. There is not a single person or thing that shall not be judged by My words, and not a single person or thing that shall not be purified through the burning of fire. Eventually, all nations shall be blessed because of My words, and also smashed to pieces because of My words. In this way, all people during the last days shall see that I am the Savior returned, and that I am the Almighty God that conquers all of mankind. And all shall see that I was once the sin offering for man, but that in the last days I also become the flames of the sun that incinerate all things, as well as the Sun of righteousness that reveals all things. This is My work in the last days. I took this name and am possessed of this disposition so that all people may see that I am a righteous God, the burning sun, the blazing flame, and so that all may worship Me, the one true God, and**

so that they may see My true face: I am not only the God of the Israelites, and I am not just the Redeemer; I am the God of all creatures throughout the heavens and the earth and the seas" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Savior Has Already Returned Upon a 'White Cloud').

In the last days, God is doing His work of judgment of the Age of Kingdom under the name "Almighty God." He has exposed mankind's corrupt nature and judged our unrighteousness through His words so that we may know our nature and our essence through reading these words, see the truth of how deeply we have been corrupted by Satan, understand the root of our corruption, and know God's righteousness, and His disposition which will not tolerate mankind's offenses. He also points out a path and direction for us to change our dispositions so that we may abandon evil, pursue the truth, achieve a change in disposition and be saved by God. God has come to perform the work of judging and purifying mankind, dividing people according to their kind, and rewarding good and punishing evil, in order to thoroughly save corrupt mankind from Satan's domain and bring an end to God's six-thousand-year management plan. God has appeared to mankind in the last days with His disposition of righteousness, majesty, and wrath which will not tolerate offense. He has openly displayed His inherent disposition, and what He has and is to everyone. He has come to judge and chastise all of mankind's corruption and unrighteousness with such disposition, to fully save us from sin and restore the original likeness of man. He wants all people to see not only His wisdom in creating the heavens, the earth, and all things, but even more the wisdom of His practical work in mankind. He not only created all things, but He also rules over all things. He was not only able to be a sin offering for mankind, but He is also able to perfect, transform, and purify us. He is the First, and the

Last. No one can fathom His wondrousness or His actions. So, calling God by His name of Almighty God is most fitting. The work of the Holy Spirit now is just to uphold the work done under the name of Almighty God. Anyone who prays to the name of Almighty God and truly worships Almighty God can gain the work of the Holy Spirit, and enjoy the rich sustenance for life and watering given by God. Or else they will fall into darkness and lose their way. Currently, the churches who are still stuck in the Age of Grace are experiencing unprecedented desolation. Believers are becoming indifferent in their faith, preachers have nothing to preach about, and people are not moved when they pray to God. In addition, more and more people are succumbing to the temptations of the world. The primary reason of it is that they have not accepted the name of Almighty God, and they have not kept up with God's new work.

—The movie script of God's Name Has Changed?!

VIII. Questions and Answers on the Inside Story of the Bible

Question 1: I have studied the Bible for more than 20 years. I can be certain that there is no word of God outside of the Bible. All of God's word is in the Bible. Anything that violates or goes beyond the Bible is heresy and fallacy!

Answer: "There is no word of God outside of the Bible, anything that goes beyond the Bible is heresy," people who understand the Bible all know the process through which the Bible was formed. Because of the disputes and omissions of the editors at the time, a part of God's word conveyed by prophets was not recorded in the Old Testament. This is an openly accepted fact. So how can you say that God's work and word don't exist outside of the Bible? Are the omitted prophecies of the prophets not the word of God? Even in the New Testament, the Lord Jesus said more than just those words. John 21:25 states: "And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written." This verifies that the work and word of the Lord Jesus are also not completely recorded in the New Testament. Therefore, "There is no work or word of God outside of the Bible" does not conform with the facts. Brothers and sisters, we should also know that, regardless of the Old Testament or the New Testament, they were only recorded and produced by man after God completed a stage of His work. Initially, the Bible was only the Old Testament. The work and word of the Lord Jesus all went beyond the Old Testament. If we go according to the saying that anything that exceeds the Bible is heresy, then haven't we condemned the Lord Jesus? Brothers and sisters, we can see from these facts that the saying "There is no work or word of God outside of the Bible, anything that exceeds the Bible is heresy" is erroneous!

Regarding this aspect of the truth, let's take a look at what the word of Almighty God says. "**During the time of Jesus, Jesus led the Jews and all those who followed Him according to the Holy Spirit's work in Him at the time. He did not take the Bible as the basis of what He did, but spoke according to His work; He paid no heed to what the Bible said, nor did He search in the Bible for a path to lead His followers. Right from when He began to work, He spread the way of repentance—a word of which there was absolutely no mention in the prophecies of the Old Testament. Not only did He not act according to the Bible, but He also led a new path, and did new work. Never did He refer to the Bible when He preached. During the Age of Law, no one had ever been able to perform His miracles of healing the sick and casting out demons. So, too, were His work, His teachings, and the authority and power of His words beyond any man in the Age of Law. Jesus simply did His newer work, and even though many people condemned Him using the Bible—and even used the Old Testament to crucify Him—His work surpassed the Old Testament; if this were not so, why did people nail Him to the cross? Was it not because it said nothing in the Old Testament of His teaching, and His ability to heal the sick and cast out demons? … To people, it appeared as if His work had no basis, and there was much of it that was at odds with the records of the Old Testament. Was this not man's error? Does doctrine need to be applied to the work of God? And must God work according to the foretelling of prophets? After all, which is greater: God or the Bible? Why must God work according to the Bible? Could it be that God has no right to exceed the Bible? Can God not depart from the Bible and do other work? Why did Jesus and His disciples not keep the Sabbath? If He were to keep the Sabbath and practice according to the commandments of the Old Testament, why**

did Jesus not keep the Sabbath after He came, but instead washed feet, covered head, broke bread, and drank wine? Is this not all absent from the commandments of the Old Testament? If Jesus honored the Old Testament, why did He break with these doctrines? You should know which came first, God or the Bible! Being the Lord of the Sabbath, could He not also be the Lord of the Bible?" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Concerning the Bible (1)). For many years, we have thought that anything that moves away from the Bible is heresy. Today after reading Almighty God's word we understand that God's work has never been based on the Bible or references to the Bible, and moreover He does not search in the Bible for a path to lead His followers. Instead, He bestows upon people a new path and performs new work. Brothers and sisters, God is the Ruler of all things. He is not just the Lord of the Sabbath, but is moreover the Lord of the Bible. God has the authority to perform His own work and perform new work based on mankind's needs. Therefore, "There is no word or work of God outside of the Bible, anything that departs from the Bible is heresy" is a saying that cannot stand.

The Bible is a record of the two previous stages of God's work. The Old Testament is a record of the work of Jehovah God in Israel during the Age of Law, that is, the work of God in the Age of Law that we often speak of. The New Testament is a record of the work of Lord Jesus in the Age of Grace, that is, the work of God in the Age of Grace that we often speak of. God's work in the Age of Law was not based on the Bible, and God's work in the Age of Grace was not based on the Bible either. None of God's work was performed with the Bible as its basis. It's OK to use the Bible as a basis for man to measure man's work, to measure man's preaching and service, but we should measure more based on whether or not there is enlightenment from the Holy Spirit. If we merely always use the Bible to measure and

define God’s work, then we will become people who resist God’s work. It’s just like the Pharisees who resisted the Lord Jesus back then. They stubbornly held on to the scriptures and measured the Lord Jesus’ work by the scriptures. When they saw the words and work of the Lord Jesus exceeded the Old Testament, they crazily condemned and blasphemed. They are precisely people who resisted God’s work and were condemned by God. Are we still going to deny such a fact?

—The movie script of Disclose the Mystery About the Bible

Question 2: The truths in the Bible are already complete. Having the Bible is enough for our belief in God. We don't need any new words!

Answer: The content recorded by the Bible is limited. The Old Testament only recorded the work of Jehovah God, while the New Testament only recorded the work of the Lord Jesus. But regarding God's work of the last days, the Bible only contains prophecies. The precise details are not recorded in the Bible. This is because the work of God in the last days is judgment work, it is new work outside of the Bible. God is the Expressor of truth, and moreover the Ruler of all things in the universe. His richness is inexhaustible and always in supply. He cannot be fathomed by any created being. Therefore, the content of the Bible cannot completely explain all of God's deeds. Let's read a passage of Almighty God's word! Almighty God says, "**The things that are recorded in the Bible are limited; they cannot represent the work of God in its entirety. The Four Gospels have fewer than one hundred chapters altogether, in which are written a finite number of happenings, such as Jesus cursing the fig tree, Peter's three denials of the Lord, Jesus appearing to the disciples following His crucifixion and resurrection, teaching about fasting, teaching about prayer, teaching about divorce, the birth and genealogy of Jesus, Jesus' appointment of the disciples, and so forth. However, man values them as treasures, even comparing the work of today against them. They even believe that all the work Jesus did in His life amounted only to so much, as if God were only capable of doing this much and nothing further. Is this not absurd?**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Mystery of the Incarnation (1)). "**No one knows the reality of the Bible: that it is nothing more than a historical record of God's work, and a testament to the previous two stages of God's work, and that it offers you no understanding of the**

aims of God's work. Everyone who has read the Bible knows that it documents the two stages of God's work during the Age of Law and the Age of Grace. The Old Testament chronicles the history of Israel and Jehovah's work from the time of creation until the end of the Age of Law. The New Testament records Jesus' work on earth, which is in the Four Gospels, as well as the work of Paul—are these not historical records? Bringing up the things of the past today makes them history, and no matter how true or real they might be, they are still history—and history cannot address the present, for God does not look back on history! And so, if you only understand the Bible, and understand nothing of the work God intends to do today, and if you believe in God but do not seek the work of the Holy Spirit, then you do not understand what it means to seek God. If you read the Bible in order to study the history of Israel, to research the history of God's creation of all the heavens and earth, then you do not believe in God. But today, since you believe in God, and pursue life, since you pursue the knowledge of God, and do not pursue dead letters and doctrines or an understanding of history, you must seek God's will of today, and you must look for the direction of the Holy Spirit's work. If you were an archeologist you could read the Bible—but you are not, you are one of those who believe in God, and you had best seek God's will of today" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Concerning the Bible (4)).

From the word of Almighty God we can see that the Bible is just a historical record of God's past work and cannot save man. The Bible cannot be compared to God at all. God is the source of the living water of life; His words and utterances have no end, never stopping flowing, whereas what is recorded in the Bible is very limited. This is a fact nobody can deny. Brothers and sisters, God is always new and never old. He performs new

work and expresses new words in every age. During the Age of Grace, the Lord Jesus performed new work and expressed new words, but the Jewish priests and Pharisees at the time held on to the Old Testament and not only rejected and condemned the Lord Jesus' work but even nailed Him to the cross and committed a monstrous sin. Now, Almighty God—Christ of the last days—has expressed all truths that save and purify mankind, which are not recorded in the Bible at all. Since they are not recorded, then the Bible cannot represent God's work of the last days and all His words. we cannot keep holding on to the Bible. We must seek God's present will and the work of the Holy Spirit. Only that conforms with God's will. God has once said these words, allow me to read them to everyone! "**If you had eaten and drunk the Old Testament during the Age of Grace—if you had put into practice what was required in the time of the Old Testament during the Age of Grace—Jesus would have rejected you, and condemned you; if you had applied the Old Testament to the work of Jesus, you would have been a Pharisee. If, today, you put the Old and New Testament together to eat and drink, and practice, then the God of today will condemn you; you will have fallen behind the Holy Spirit's work of today! If you eat and drink the Old Testament and the New Testament, then you are outside the stream of the Holy Spirit!**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Concerning the Bible (1)). Almighty God's words tell us that if we had held on to the Old Testament during the Age of Grace then the Lord Jesus would not have praised us, and we would not have received God's grace and God's redemption of man, and moreover we would not have enjoyed the peace and joy after God redeemed our sins. Today, Almighty God has come. If we still hold on to the New and Old Testaments of the Bible, then we will not receive God's praise and moreover we will not receive God's salvation of the last days!

—The movie script of Disclose the Mystery About the Bible

Question 3: The Lord Jesus said it Himself that the Bible is His testimony. That's why our belief in the Lord must be based on the Bible. The Bible is our only path to knowing the Lord.

Answer: Then let's see whether one can truly know the Lord based on the Bible. The answer to this question can be found in the word of Almighty God. Allow me to read it to everyone! "**The Jews all read the Old Testament and knew of Isaiah's prophecy that a male infant would be born in a manger. Why, then, despite being fully aware of this prophecy, did they still persecute Jesus? Was it not because of their rebellious nature and ignorance of the work of the Holy Spirit? At the time, the Pharisees believed the work of Jesus to be different from what they knew of the prophesied male infant, and people today reject God because the work of God incarnate does not conform to the Bible. Is not the essence of their rebelliousness toward God the same? … You need not look for further substantiation from the Bible; if it is the work of the Holy Spirit, then you must accept it, for you believe in God to follow God, and you should not investigate Him. You should not seek further evidence of Me to prove that I am your God, but should be able to discern whether I am of benefit to you—this is what is most crucial. Even if you find much irrefutable proof within the Bible, it cannot bring you fully before Me. You merely live within the confines of the Bible, and not before Me; the Bible cannot help you know Me, nor can it deepen your love for Me. Though the Bible prophesied that a male infant would be born, none could fathom upon whom that prophecy would come to pass, for man did not know the work of God, and this is what caused the Pharisees to stand against Jesus**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. How Can Man Who Has Delimited God in His Notions Receive the Revelations of God?). People in the Age of Law

held on to the Scriptures and did not seek or investigate God's new work. In the end, they crucified the Lord Jesus. We can see from these facts that we cannot get to know God or God's work merely based on the Bible. we all know that back in the day, the people who followed the Lord Jesus sought to know God based on the actual work and word of the Lord Jesus and the enlightenment and guidance of the Holy Spirit. Not one person got to know God based on the Bible. This is a fact. Brothers and sisters, we also cannot use only the Bible as our basis to measure the work of Almighty God today. The Bible can only be used as a reference. The main thing is to confirm it based on whether or not there is the truth and the work of the Holy Spirit. Only then can the correct decision be made.

Almighty God has already told us clearly. "**Today, everyone wants to find the prophecies of the work of the last days in the Bible, they want to discover what work God does during the last days, and what signs there are for the last days. In this way, their worship of the Bible becomes more fervent, and the closer it gets to the last days, the more blind credence they give to the prophecies of the Bible, particularly those about the last days. With such blind faith in the Bible, with such trust in the Bible, they have no desire to seek the work of the Holy Spirit. In people's notions, they think that only the Bible can bring the work of the Holy Spirit; only in the Bible can they find the footsteps of God; only in the Bible are hidden the mysteries of God's work; only the Bible—not other books or people—can clarify God's everything and the entirety of His work; the Bible can bring the work of heaven to earth; and the Bible can both begin and conclude the ages. With these notions, people have no inclination to search for the work of the Holy Spirit. So, regardless of how much of a help the Bible was to people in the past, it has become an obstacle to God's latest work. Without the**

Bible, people can search for the footsteps of God elsewhere, yet today, His footsteps have been contained by the Bible, and extending His latest work has become doubly difficult, and an uphill struggle. This is all because of the famous chapters and sayings from the Bible, as well as the various prophecies of the Bible" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Concerning the Bible (1)). "**Since we are searching for the footprints of God, it behooves us to search for God's will, for the words of God, for His utterances—because wherever there are new words spoken by God, the voice of God is there, and wherever there are the footsteps of God, God's deeds are there. Wherever there is the expression of God, there God appears, and wherever God appears, there the truth, the way, and the life exist**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Appearance of God Has Ushered in a New Age). Almighty God has already told us clearly through His word that we should not stubbornly hold on to the Bible when believing in God and should keep up with the footsteps of the work of the Holy Spirit and seek God's footprints in His new work and words. To ascertain whether it is God's work and the true way, we need to see if it has the work of the Holy Spirit, if there are expressions of truth, and if it can give people supply of life. If what is expressed is the truth and life, then it is undoubtedly God's work, and there must be the confirmation of the Holy Spirit. If we want to get to know God's work of the last days, then we must search and investigate inside God's words and utterances to see if they are the expression of God, if they can bring people the direction ahead in a new age, if they have the truth, if they can bring people supply of life, and if they can change people's corrupt disposition to help them achieve purification. Only that is the standard of verifying the true way! Brothers

and sisters, we should have a look at God’s utterances and words of the new age!

—The movie script of Disclose the Mystery About the Bible

Question 4: You say the words in the book The Word Appears in the Flesh are God's new word! But the Revelation clearly states: "**For I testify to every man that hears the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add to these things, God shall add to him the plagues that are written in this book**" (Rev 22:18). Don't you add to the Bible?

Answer: "shall not add to the word, nor take away from it" as stated in the scriptures. You think we are adding to the Bible. OK, then let's explore this problem. Brothers and sisters, John said "if any man shall add to these things," but did not say "if any man shall add to the Bible." Additionally, when John said these words the New Testament did not exist. The New Testament was formed around 300 AD. The Book of Revelation was only formed later than AD 90; it was a record of John's visions on the Island of Patmos. Clearly, this book as stated by John refers to the text of prophecies known as the Book of Revelation, not the entire Bible. Therefore, "shall not add to these things" does not mean that there won't be new work and words of God in the future. Back then, what John saw was only a vision and was not the reality of God's work of the last days. Almighty God's work and word of the last days are not additions to the prophecies of the Book of Revelation, but the fulfillment of the prophecies of the Book of Revelation. Let's take a look at two passages from the Bible. Revelation 2:17 states: "**He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches; To him that overcomes will I give to eat of the hidden manna…**" This part of the scriptures mention: "**what the Spirit says to the churches**" and "**the hidden manna.**" These are actually referring to the words expressed by Almighty God of the last days! There's also Revelation 5:1-5. Let's read it: "**And I saw in the right hand of him that sat on the throne a book written within and on the backside, sealed with seven seals. And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the**

book, and to loose the seals thereof? And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look thereon. And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon. And one of the elders said to me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Juda, the Root of David, has prevailed to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof" we all thought the book was referring to the Bible, but this part of the scriptures mention that this book has not been looked upon by anyone. This shows that this book is not a reference to the Bible. The scriptures mention: "**And I saw in the right hand of him that sat on the throne a book written within and on the backside, sealed with seven seals**" (Rev 5:1). This shows that the content of this book was not recorded in the Book of Revelation. This verse tells us that only Christ of the last days is worthy of opening up this book and loosing the seven seals.

John also did not write about the utterances of the seven thunders, which was mentioned in the Book of Revelation. This shows that we have to wait for God to come in the last days to reveal these mysteries to us. If we use "shall not add to these things" to restrict God's work and word, then how can that book be opened up? How can the prophecies of the Book of Revelation be fulfilled? Almighty God has now come, opening up the seven seals and the book, and revealing all the mysteries people throughout the ages did not understand. This is precisely the utterances of the seven thunders and the words spoken by the Holy Spirit toward the churches. This is real! Then let's read another passage of Almighty God's word! "**When you have finished reading this book, when you have experienced each step of the work of God incarnate in the Age of Kingdom, you will feel that desires you have had for many years have finally been realized. You will feel that only now have you truly seen God face to face; only**

now have you gazed upon His countenance, heard His personal utterances, appreciated the wisdom of His work, and truly sensed how real and almighty He is. You will feel that you have gained many things that people in times past had never seen nor possessed. At this time, you will clearly know what it is to believe in God, and what it is to conform to God's will. Of course, if you cling to views of the past, and reject or deny the fact of the second incarnation of God, then you will remain empty-handed, acquiring nothing, and ultimately you will be pronounced guilty of opposing God. Those who are able to obey the truth and submit to the work of God shall be claimed under the name of the second incarnate God—the Almighty. They will be able to accept God's personal guidance, gaining more and higher truths, as well as real life. They shall behold the vision never seen before by people of the past: 'And I turned to see the voice that spoke with me. And being turned, I saw seven golden candlesticks; And in the middle of the seven candlesticks one like to the Son of man, clothed with a garment down to the foot, and girt about the breasts with a golden girdle. His head and His hairs were white like wool, as white as snow; and His eyes were as a flame of fire; And His feet like to fine brass, as if they burned in a furnace; and His voice as the sound of many waters. And He had in His right hand seven stars: and out of His mouth went a sharp two edged sword: and His countenance was as the sun shines in its strength' (Revelation 1:12–16). This vision is the expression of God's entire disposition, and the expression of His entire disposition is also the expression of the work of God in His present incarnation. In the torrents of chastisements and judgments, the Son of man expresses His inherent disposition by means of utterances, allowing all those who accept His chastisement and judgment to see the true face of the Son of

man, which is a faithful depiction of the face of the Son of man seen by John" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Preface).

—The movie script of Disclose the Mystery About the Bible

Question 5: Paul said in 2 Timothy 3:16: “All scripture is given by inspiration of God….” This shows that everything in the Bible is the word of God. But there are actually people who say that not everything in the Bible is the word of God. Isn’t this denying the Bible and deceiving people?

Answer: About the viewpoint “All scripture is given by inspiration of God,” we must understand the context in which Paul said these words. At the time Paul wrote letters to Timothy's church there was only the Old Testament. The New Testament had not been formed yet and there were just dozens of epistles scattered around and kept by various churches. This shows that these words of Paul were referring to the Old Testament. The Israelites only regard the Old Testament as the Bible. The New Testament was not formed until after AD 300. Church leaders at the time held a meeting as they thought the last days were near, and that the utterances of Jesus and the epistles of the apostles should be brought together into a book, and distributed to the various churches like the Old Testament. Therefore, they compiled together the epistles written by Jesus' apostles and disciples, and following research and confirmation, selected 27 books to become the New Testament, which was later combined with the Old Testament to become the complete Bible. This is how the New and Old Testaments were formed. Further, regarding the formation of the Bible, we must also understand just who wrote it and who recorded it. The Bible has several dozen authors, but none of them said the epistles they wrote were inspired by God. if God had said all scripture is given by inspiration of God, then God should have said it via prophets, but the books of prophets contain no such words. The Lord Jesus has also never said such words. The apostles have also never said the epistles they wrote and their testimonies were all inspired by God, and moreover they did not dare to say they were God's words. This is fact! But later on, all believers in God think that all

that God uttered is in the Bible, and that even though the New and Old Testament were written by men, they were both inspired by God. But have we ever thought about whether this conforms with the facts?

The Bible was inspired by God, and everything in the Bible is the word of God. This is a fact openly accepted in Christianity. This is only the opinion of men. Men's opinions cannot represent God! Only God is most clear on the inside story of the Bible. Let's take a look at what Almighty God says! Almighty God says, "**In fact, apart from the books of prophecy, most of the Old Testament is a historical record. Some of the epistles of the New Testament come from people's experiences, and some come from the enlightenment of the Holy Spirit; the Pauline epistles, for example, arose from the work of a man, they were all the result of the Holy Spirit's enlightenment, and they were written for the churches, and were words of exhortation and encouragement for the brothers and sisters of the churches. They were not words spoken by the Holy Spirit—Paul could not speak on behalf of the Holy Spirit, and neither was he a prophet, much less did he see the visions that John beheld. His epistles were written for the churches of Ephesus, Philadelphia, Galatia, and other churches**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Concerning the Bible (3)). "**Not everything in the Bible is a record of the words personally spoken by God. The Bible simply documents the previous two stages of God's work, of which one part is a record of the foretelling of the prophets, and one part is the experiences and knowledge written by people used by God throughout the ages. Human experiences are tainted with human opinions and knowledge, and this is something which is unavoidable. In many of the books of the Bible are human notions, human biases, and humans' absurd comprehension. Of course, most of the words are the**

result of the enlightenment and illumination of the Holy Spirit, and they are correct understandings—yet it still cannot be said that they are entirely accurate expressions of the truth. Their views on certain things are nothing more than knowledge derived from personal experience, or the enlightenment of the Holy Spirit. The foretelling of the prophets was personally instructed by God: The prophecies of the like of Isaiah, Daniel, Ezra, Jeremiah, and Ezekiel came from the direct instruction of the Holy Spirit; these people were seers, they had received the Spirit of prophecy, and they were all prophets of the Old Testament. During the Age of Law, these people, who had received the inspirations of Jehovah, spoke many prophecies, which were directly instructed by Jehovah" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Concerning the Bible (3)). Almighty God's word has explained it very clearly. The Bible is not a record of all the words personally spoken by God Himself and only documents God's work. In the Bible, only the words of Jehovah God and the Lord Jesus, as well as the words spoken by prophets as inspired by God are truly the word of God. The rest is mostly historical records, as well as men's experiences and knowledge. Therefore, the saying "All scripture is given by inspiration of God" does not conform with historical fact!

—The movie script of Disclose the Mystery About the Bible

Question 6: Since Paul stated that "All scripture is given by inspiration of God," it is not wrong, because he was an apostle of God. God was telling mankind through Paul that scriptures were all inspired by God and are all the word of God. Do you dare deny this?

Answer: This issue is highly representative. Next, let us communicate on whether these epistles written by Paul and other apostles were really inspired by God and whether they can represent the word of God. That way we will know how to treat these epistles of the apostles. Before we continue communicating, allow us to first read two passages of Almighty God's word! Almighty God says, "**The Pauline epistles of the New Testament are epistles that Paul wrote for the churches, and not inspirations from the Holy Spirit, nor are they the direct utterances of the Holy Spirit. They are merely words of exhortation, comfort, and encouragement that he wrote for the churches during the course of his work. So, too, are they a record of much of Paul's work at the time. They were written for all who are brothers and sisters in the Lord, so that the brothers and sisters of the churches at that time would follow his advice and abide by the way of repentance of the Lord Jesus. By no means did Paul say that, be they the churches of that time or of the future, all must eat and drink the things he wrote, nor did he say that his words all came from God. According to the circumstances of the church at that time, he simply communed with the brothers and sisters, and exhorted them, and inspired belief in them, and he simply preached or reminded people and exhorted them. His words were based upon his own burden, and he supported the people through these words. … All he said that was edifying and positive to people was right, but it did not represent the utterances of the Holy Spirit, and it could not represent God. It is an egregious understanding, and a tremendous blasphemy,**

for people to treat the records of a man's experiences and a man's epistles as the words spoken by the Holy Spirit to the churches! … His identity was merely that of a working apostle, and he was merely an apostle who was sent by God; he was not a prophet, nor a foreteller. To him, his own work and the lives of the brothers and sisters were of the utmost importance. Thus, he could not speak on behalf of the Holy Spirit. His words were not the words of the Holy Spirit, much less could they be said to be the words of God, for Paul was nothing more than a creature of God, and was certainly not the incarnation of God. … If people see the epistles or words like Paul's as the utterances of the Holy Spirit, and worship them as God, then it can only be said that they are too indiscriminating. To speak more harshly, is this not simply blasphemy? How could a man talk on behalf of God? And how could people bow down before the records of his epistles and of the words he spoke as if they were a holy book, or a heavenly book? Could the words of God be casually uttered by a man? How could a man talk on behalf of God? And so, what say you—could the epistles that he wrote for the churches not be tainted with his own ideas? … If you say that his epistles are the words of the Holy Spirit, then you are absurd, and you are committing blasphemy! The Pauline epistles and the other epistles of the New Testament are equivalent to the memoirs of the more recent spiritual figures: They are on a par with the books of Watchman Nee or the experiences of Lawrence, and so on. It is simply that the books of recent spiritual figures are not compiled into the New Testament, yet the essence of these people was the same: They were people who were used by the Holy Spirit during a certain period, and they could not directly represent God" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Concerning the Bible (3)).

We can see from Almighty God’s word that although the epistles of the apostles largely conform with God's intentions, yet there is a difference between conforming with God’s intentions and being the word of God. The epistles of Peter and Paul only appeared one after the other following the Lord Jesus’ resurrection and ascension into heaven. When these letters were sent to the churches, how did the brothers and sisters of the churches regard them? They would have said, “These are letters from Brother Peter, these are letters from Brother Paul.” They would not have treated these letters as the word of God, because these apostles never said that they were God. They only admitted that they were disciples who followed the Lord Jesus. Therefore, the brothers and sisters of the churches at the time would have treated these letters and words as the words of other brothers. Peter and Paul also never said that their words were inspired by God or were the word of God. That’s the historical context of the time. But today, we treat these epistles and words of the apostles as the word of God and regard them in the same category as the word of God. This is against historical fact! The epistles of these apostles only came out of their burden to the church. It was to support the churches at the time. Their epistles cannot represent the word of God. God’s words are God’s words, man’s words are man’s words. If we cannot distinguish which are God’s words and which are man’s words in the Bible, that’s a very serious problem. In fact, there is only a portion of God’s word in the Bible. Only the words personally spoken by Jehovah God, the words of Moses as instructed by Jehovah God, the words conveyed by prophets from Jehovah God, and the words personally spoken by the Lord Jesus are truly the word of God. We can see that the words of prophets all have a special label. They say, “Thus said the LORD.” This explains that they are conveying God’s words and making people see clearly that they are mimicking the original words of God. Therefore, only the words conveyed

by prophets from God, the words personally spoken by Jehovah God that were recorded, and the words personally spoken by the Lord Jesus that were recorded by the apostles are the true word of God. Only this portion of the words in the Bible is the word of God. Apart from this portion, all the words spoken by the apostles and things recorded by God's servants are man's testimonies and man's words.

It is not accurate to say that the Bible was inspired by God and all God's word just based on one line from the epistle of an apostle. In the age of the apostles, no one would have treated the letters of Peter and Paul as the word of God, and no one would have regarded these apostles as Christ. These apostles never dared to call themselves Christ either. Only Christ represents God and the Holy Spirit. Thus, we should not treat the words of these apostles as the word of God. The words of these apostles don't represent God and moreover don't represent the Holy Spirit. Also, God has never testified to the Bible as such. The Lord Jesus only said that the Bible is a testimony of God, but did not say that the Bible was inspired by God and was all God's words. The Holy Spirit has also never testified to anyone about the Bible in this way. Only the Holy Spirit and God incarnate know best about the inside story of the Bible. No man can fathom the inside story of the Bible. The Bible is a record of God's work and personal experiences and testimonies written by people who served God. It is merely man conveying God's words or man bearing witness to God's work by describing their own experiences after receiving the enlightenment of the Holy Spirit. None of this was personally written by God. That's a fact! Though the records and epistles of the apostles were enlightened by the Holy Spirit, they cannot represent the word of God. Therefore, "All scripture is given by inspiration of God and all the word of God" is the wrong viewpoint. It doesn't conform with the facts whatsoever!

The word of God is the truth. A life of experience can only live out a limited portion. No matter how much of God man knows, he cannot express God’s words. No matter how weighty man’s testimony, his words cannot be compared to God’s words. This is because the difference between God’s essence and man’s essence is heaven and earth. Man can never express God’s words. Even the prophets could merely convey God’s words. Even those used by the Holy Spirit cannot express God’s words. All they can discuss are their own experiences and testimonies. Christ has a divine essence, so what He expresses is naturally God’s words. Man’s substance is humanity, so what he expresses is naturally man's experiences and knowledge. Even if it conforms with the truth, it cannot be compared in the same breath as God’s words. People of today go against historical fact and insist that man’s words in the Bible are God’s words. This is something that completely deceives people and resists God. It is regarded as blaspheming God.

—The movie script of Disclose the Mystery About the Bible

Question 7: I have studied the Bible for more than 20 years. I discovered that the Bible was written by more than 40 different authors during different times, but the content of what they wrote had no errors whatsoever. This shows that God is the true author of the Bible and that the Bible comes from the Holy Spirit.

Answer: The Bible was written by more than 40 authors and that there were no errors. Are there really no errors? Let's communicate on this issue specifically. Actually, Almighty God—Christ of the last days—has already opened up these mysteries for us. Almighty God says, "**The Gospel of Matthew of the New Testament documents Jesus' genealogy. At the start, it says that Jesus was a descendant of Abraham and of David, and the son of Joseph; next it says that Jesus was conceived by the Holy Spirit, and born of a virgin—which would mean He was not the son of Joseph or the descendant of Abraham and of David. The genealogy, though, insists on associating Jesus with Joseph. Next, the genealogy begins to record the process by which Jesus was born. It says Jesus was conceived by the Holy Spirit, that He was born of a virgin, and not the son of Joseph. Yet in the genealogy it is clearly written that Jesus was the son of Joseph, and because the genealogy is written for Jesus, it records forty-two generations. When it goes to the generation of Joseph, it hurriedly says that Joseph was the husband of Mary, words which are given in order to prove that Jesus was the descendant of Abraham. Is this not a contradiction? The genealogy clearly documents Joseph's ancestry, it is obviously the genealogy of Joseph, but Matthew insists that it is the genealogy of Jesus. Does this not deny the fact of Jesus' conception by the Holy Spirit? Thus, is the genealogy by Matthew not a human idea? It is ridiculous! This is how you can know that this book did not come entirely from the Holy Spirit**" (The Word,

Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Concerning the Bible (3)). Through God's word we understand that the genealogy by Matthew was not God's idea. How could God have a genealogy? Matthew knew that Jesus was conceived by the Holy Spirit, and yet he gave Him a genealogy saying that Jesus was the son of David and the son of Joseph. Isn't this denying that Jesus was conceived by the Holy Spirit. Jesus and Joseph are not related. Matthew's words are contradictory. Clearly, this genealogy did not come from the Holy Spirit and was man's idea. Then how do you explain John 8:58: "**Jesus said to them, Truly, truly, I say to you, Before Abraham was, I am**"? From here we can see that the genealogy of the Lord Jesus was man's idea. It was written by Matthew around AD 50, and was not written at the direct instruction of the Holy Spirit.

There is another passage on this in God's word. Allow me to read it to everyone! Almighty God says, "**If the Four Gospels all came from the Holy Spirit, then why is it that Matthew, Mark, Luke and John each said something different about the work of Jesus? If you do not believe this, then look at the accounts in the Bible of how Peter denied the Lord three times: They are all different, and they each have their own characteristics. … Carefully read the Four Gospels; read what they recorded about the things that Jesus did, and the words He spoke. Each account is quite simply different, and each has its own perspective. If what was written by the authors of these books all came from the Holy Spirit, then it should all be the same and consistent. Why then are there discrepancies? Is man not extremely foolish, to be unable to see this? … After Luke and Matthew had heard the words of Jesus, and seen the work of Jesus, they spoke of their own knowledge, in the manner of reminiscences detailing some of the facts of the work done by Jesus. Can you say that their knowledge was completely revealed by the Holy**

Spirit?" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Concerning Appellations and Identity). Let's look at the differences between the three times Peter denied the Lord in the Gospels. Matthew 26:75 states: "**Before the cock crow, you shall deny me thrice**." But in Mark 14:72, it states: "**Before the cock crow twice, you shall deny me thrice**." The content of what they recorded is the same, but there is a deviation in time. If it came from the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, there would be no deviation at all. The facts prove that these were human records and were not inspired by the Holy Spirit.

Through the word of Almighty God we see that the Four Gospels are human records and not inspired by the Holy Spirit. That's why there are deviations. They should be perfectly accurate if they came from God. Just as Luke said: "For as much as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely believed among us, Even as they delivered them to us, which from the beginning were eyewitnesses, and ministers of the word" (Luk 1:1-2). This shows that the Four Gospels came from what the authors heard and saw. Some of it was written based on what was preached by preachers and their personal investigations. It was not given to them directly by inspiration of God. It is precisely because history books are written based on memory and the hearsay of others that there will inevitably be errors and human ideas mixed in. since the Bible is not entirely inspired by God and not all the word of God, then just who is the true author of the Bible? Let's look at what the word of Almighty God says. "**In fact, it is merely a human record. It was not personally named by Jehovah, nor did Jehovah personally guide its creation. In other words, the author of this book is not God, but men. The Holy Bible is only the respectful title given to it by man. This title was not decided by Jehovah and Jesus after They had a discussion**

amongst each other; it is nothing more than a human idea. For this book was not written by Jehovah, much less by Jesus. Instead, it is the accounts given by many ancient prophets, apostles, and seers, which were compiled by later generations into a book of ancient writings that, to people, seems especially holy, a book that they believe contains many unfathomable and profound mysteries that are waiting to be unlocked by future generations" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Concerning the Bible (4)). Almighty God's word clearly tells us that the author of the Bible is men, not God. Human records will inevitably be mixed with human ideas and errors. If Almighty God had not opened up these mysteries of the Bible to us today, we would have never understood.

—The movie script of Disclose the Mystery About the Bible

Question 8: How can we believe in the Lord and gain life if we move away from the Bible?

Answer: The question you raised is very key. This is something all of us believers want to know. The Lord Jesus once said these words: "**Search the scriptures; for in them you think you have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me. And you will not come to me, that you might have life**" (Jhn 5:39-40). In the past, we searched the Bible repeatedly, thinking that eternal life can be gained from the Bible. In reality, the Bible is only a testimony of God. if we want to gain the truth and life from our belief in God, relying on the testimony of the Bible is not enough. Almighty God says, "**Christ of the last days brings life, and brings the enduring and everlasting way of truth. This truth is the path by which man gains life, and it is the only path by which man shall know God and be approved by God. If you do not seek the way of life provided by Christ of the last days, then you shall never gain the approval of Jesus, and shall never be qualified to enter the gate of the kingdom of heaven, for you are both a puppet and prisoner of history. … The steps of God's work are vast and mighty, like surging waves and rolling thunders—yet you sit passively awaiting destruction, clinging to your folly and doing nothing. In this way, how can you be considered someone who follows the footsteps of the Lamb? How can you justify the God that you hold on to as a God who is always new and never old? And how can the words of your yellowed books carry you across into a new age? How can they lead you to seek the steps of God's work? And how can they take you up to heaven? What you hold in your hands are letters that can provide but temporary solace, not truths that are capable of giving life. The scriptures you read can only enrich your tongue and are not words of wisdom that can help you know human life, much less the**

paths that can lead you to perfection. Does this discrepancy not give you cause for reflection? Does it not make you realize the mysteries contained within? Are you capable of delivering yourself to heaven to meet God on your own? Without the coming of God, can you take yourself into heaven to enjoy family happiness with God? Are you still dreaming now? I suggest, then, that you stop dreaming and look at who is working now—look to see who is now carrying out the work of saving man during the last days. If you do not, you shall never gain the truth, and shall never gain life" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life). We understand from the word of Almighty God that only Christ can express truths to redeem and save mankind. Man must come to Christ to gain the truth and gain life. The Bible cannot replace God's authority and power, nor can it represent God in giving life to man, and moreover it cannot substitute the work of the Holy Spirit. Only by accepting and obeying Christ of the last days can we gain the work of the Holy Spirit, gain the truth, and gain life. We cannot gain life unless we accept the words expressed by Christ of the last days, because the Bible is not God; it is merely a testimony of God's work. From this, we can see that life does not originate from the Bible, but from Christ. Christ is the Lord of the Bible and the source of life.

In the past our belief in God was only based on the Bible. In our eyes, the Bible represented the Lord and represented God. The Bible had taken over the place of God in our hearts. Rather than say that we were believing in God, it might be said that we were actually believing in the Bible. Therefore, when Almighty God—Christ of the last days—performed His work, we thought that the words and deeds of Almighty God did not conform with the Bible, and thus denied and rejected it, and even further

condemned and resisted it. we know that God's disposition is righteous and unoffendable. Back then, Jewish chief priests, scribes and Pharisees had believed in God for generations, but they held on to the Old Testament and used its laws to condemn the Lord Jesus and crucified Him. Now, Almighty God has come, and we have once again used the Bible to resist the work of Almighty God. How is this different to the Pharisees resisting the Lord Jesus during the Age of Grace? We should learn from the failure of the Pharisees! The Lord Jesus once said: "**I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man comes to the Father, but by me**" (Jhn 14:6). I didn't understand the meaning of this verse before I accepted God's work of the last days. But now I understand. Only Christ of the last days is the gateway to entering the kingdom of heaven. Only by accepting and obeying Christ of the last days can we be saved and enter the kingdom of heaven.

Let's read a passage of Almighty God's word! "**Those who wish to gain life without relying on the truth spoken by Christ are the most ridiculous people on earth, and those who do not accept the way of life brought by Christ are lost in fantasy. And so I say that those who do not accept Christ of the last days shall forever be despised by God. Christ is man's gateway to the kingdom during the last days, and there are none who can go around Him. None may be perfected by God except through Christ. You believe in God, and so you must accept His words and obey His way. You cannot only think of gaining blessings while being incapable of receiving the truth and incapable of accepting the provision of life. Christ comes during the last days so that all those who truly believe in Him may be provided with life. His work is for the sake of concluding the old age and entering the new one, and His work is the path that must be taken by all those who would enter the new age. If you are incapable of acknowledging Him, and instead condemn,**

blaspheme, or even persecute Him, then you are bound to burn for eternity and shall never enter the kingdom of God. For this Christ is Himself the expression of the Holy Spirit, the expression of God, the One whom God has entrusted to do His work on earth. And so I say that if you cannot accept all that is done by Christ of the last days, then you blaspheme the Holy Spirit. The retribution to be had by those who blaspheme the Holy Spirit is self-evident to all. I also tell you that if you resist Christ of the last days, if you spurn Christ of the last days, there will be no one else to bear the consequences on your behalf. Furthermore, from this day onward you will not have another chance to gain the approval of God; even if you try to redeem yourself, you will never again behold the face of God. For what you resist is not a man, what you spurn is not some puny being, but Christ. Do you know what the consequences of this will be? You will not have made a small mistake, but committed a heinous crime. And so I advise everyone not to bare your fangs before the truth, or make careless criticisms, for only the truth can bring you life, and nothing except the truth can allow you to be reborn and behold the face of God again" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life). From the word of God we see that no one can enter the kingdom of heaven unless it is through Christ of the last days. When God's new work befalls us, whether we accept or reject it will decide our fate. It can be said that our attitude toward Christ of the last days is our attitude toward God. If we ultimately still resist and reject Him, then we shall lose the opportunity to be saved and lose eternal salvation. We can see from this God's righteous disposition. Since 1991, Almighty God—Christ of the last days—has expressed several million words. It is in this book, The Word Appears in the Flesh, that God has opened up to us the

greatest mystery of His 6,000-year management plan, and pointed out to us believers of God the only path to receiving salvation.

—The movie script of Disclose the Mystery About the Bible

IX. Questions and Answers on God's Work of Judgment in the Last Days

Question 1: You say that God becomes flesh in the last days to do the work of judgment. Does this have any basis in the Bible, or fulfill any biblical prophecies? Without a biblical basis, we shouldn't be so quick to believe it.

Answer: Any major incidents of God's work are prophesied in the Bible, and there are quite a few prophecies relating to the second coming of the Lord Jesus and God's work of judgment in the last days. But what we should understand is that prophecies only tell people what will happen. They are reminders for people to be watchful and to seek and investigate carefully in the last days, so they won't be abandoned or eliminated by God. That's all the prophecies can do. The prophecies can't help us know God's work, nor understand the truth, or help us obey God, or increase our love for God. So, our best course is to directly investigate the words expressed by Almighty God, and the work done by Him, and from these determine whether they are truly God's voice and expression. That is the most important, and wisest, course of action. This is much more realistic and useful than searching for a basis in biblical prophecies. We all know that when the Lord Jesus came to do work, the apostles and believers who followed Him only recognized gradually, through His work and words, that the Lord Jesus was Christ, the Messiah prophesied to come. The chief priests, scribes, and Pharisees who knew the laws and studied the Bible knew very well that the Lord Jesus' words were the truth, had authority, and had power, but because they hated the truth, they not only refused to follow the Lord Jesus, they used the letters and rules in the Bible to oppose and condemn the Lord Jesus, and finally nailed Him to the cross. This shows us that the Bible can't lead or guide us to accept the return of the Lord. For those of us who await the Lord's return, the Bible only serves as corroboration. The clever virgins don't welcome the Groom using the Bible.

When they hear the Groom's voice, they ascertain it is God's voice and go to meet the Lord. Those who rely on biblical prophecy, rather than seeking God's voice, and who reject and condemn Almighty God's work in the last days— they are the most foolish virgins, those who God will abandon and eliminate.

Let's read a passage from Almighty God: "**Can you accept, without question, all the work of the Holy Spirit? If it is the work of the Holy Spirit, then it is the right stream, and you should accept it without any misgivings; you should not pick and choose what to accept. If you gain more insights from God and exercise more caution toward Him, then is this not uncalled for? You need not look for further substantiation from the Bible; if it is the work of the Holy Spirit, then you must accept it, for you believe in God to follow God, and you should not investigate Him. You should not seek further evidence of Me to prove that I am your God, but should be able to discern whether I am of benefit to you —this is what is most crucial. Even if you find much irrefutable proof within the Bible, it cannot bring you fully before Me. You merely live within the confines of the Bible, and not before Me; the Bible cannot help you know Me, nor can it deepen your love for Me**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. How Can Man Who Has Delimited God in His Notions Receive the Revelations of God?). To discern whether Almighty God is the returned Lord Jesus, we cannot rely solely on evidence in the Bible. The most important thing is whether the words expressed by Almighty God are truth, whether that which Almighty God expresses is God's disposition and what God has and is, whether Almighty God's words are the truth, the way, and the life necessary to us, whether they can relieve all of our confusion about belief in God, whether they can save us from our corrupt satanic dispositions and satanic natures, and whether they can help

us escape the influence of Satan, achieve purity, and enter the kingdom of heaven. That's the most important factor.

—The movie script of From the Throne Flows the Water of Life

Question 2: The Lord Jesus was crucified as a sin offering to redeem mankind. We have accepted the Lord, and obtained salvation through His grace. Why do we still have to accept Almighty God's work of judgment and purification in the last days?

Answer: In the Age of Grace, the Lord Jesus did the work of redemption. It was not God's work of judgment in the last days to thoroughly save mankind. What the work of redemption achieved was that the Lord Jesus served as the sin offering for us all, and that He redeemed us from the clutches of Satan, made us repent our sins, and accept God's salvation. He qualified us to go before God and enjoy God's grace and blessing. That was the real significance of the work of redemption. But many people don't understand. They always think the Lord Jesus' work of redemption granted complete salvation to all mankind, and allowed us entry into the kingdom of heaven. That notion comes entirely from man's imagination. We were given redemption by the Lord Jesus, that much is true, but did that change our sinful natures? Does the fact that God forgave our sins mean we've truly been holy? Then why do we still sin so frequently? Can those who sin so frequently ever really be approved by the Lord? Not many people have considered this problem, and we've never seen anyone truly understand this problem. The Lord Jesus redeemed us from a state of sin. Our sins were forgiven, we were granted salvation by grace, this is a fact. But, as we believe in the Lord and follow the Lord, we also often betray the Lord's teachings, and give in to our fleshly desires to sin. We do things like lie, commit fraud, deceive, engage in intrigue, seek fame and fortune, we give in to vanity, lust for wealth, and follow evil worldly trends… In times of bitterness and trial, we often misunderstand and blame God, or even leave and betray God. When God's work doesn't accord with the notions of man, we carelessly judge and condemn God. At

the same time we follow God, we worship and follow men. We live in a cycle of sinning and repenting, that's hard to escape. We can't free ourselves from the binds and control of our satanic nature, this is a fact. And although the Lord Jesus' work of redemption is done, and our sins are forgiven, and we are no longer cursed for violating God's laws, and can come before God to pray to Him and enjoy the entirety of God's grace, that does not mean God's work of saving mankind is over, because the sinful nature inside us still remains. We are still compelled by our satanic nature to oppose and betray God. And without knowing God, we will never fear God and distance ourselves from evil, even less can we reach a state of complete obedience to God, the compatibility with God and sanctity. We haven't been truly gained by God. We all know, God is holy, and righteous. If people are unsanctified, they can't see the Lord. God won't allow the impure or corrupt into His kingdom. This is decided by God's righteous disposition. So, in the last days, God has, according to His management plan to save mankind, carried out His work of judgment and chastisement, to remove the shackles and restraints of sin from the corrupt mankind and the root causes of sinning and help mankind completely escape the influence of Satan, be saved by God, and enter God's kingdom. Let's look at two more passages from Almighty God.

Almighty God says, "**A sinner such as you, who has just been redeemed, and has not been changed, or been perfected by God, can you be after God's heart? For you, you who are still of your old self, it is true that you were saved by Jesus, and that you are not counted as a sinner because of the salvation of God, but this does not prove that you are not sinful, and are not impure. How can you be saintly if you have not been changed? Within, you are beset by impurity, selfish and mean, yet you still wish to descend with Jesus—you should be so lucky! You**

have missed a step in your belief in God: You have merely been redeemed, but you have not been changed. For you to be after God's heart, God must personally do the work of changing and cleansing you; if you are only redeemed, you will be incapable of attaining sanctity. In this way you will be unqualified to share in the good blessings of God, for you have missed out a step in God's work of managing man, which is the key step of changing and perfecting. You, a sinner who has just been redeemed, are therefore incapable of directly inheriting God's inheritance" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Concerning Appellations and Identity).

"**By means of this work of judgment and chastisement, man will fully come to know the filthy and corrupt essence within his own self, and he will be able to change completely and become clean. Only in this way can man become worthy to return before the throne of God. All the work done this day is so that man can be made clean and be changed; through judgment and chastisement by the word, as well as through refinement, man can purge away his corruption and be made pure**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Mystery of the Incarnation (4)).

In the last days, God will completely save man from Satan's influence, allow man to truly turn to God and become compatible with Christ, and become holy people who revere and obey God. The only way to achieve that is through Almighty God's work of judgment in the last days. Only through the judgment and revelations in Almighty God's words can people finally come to know the truth of how they've been corrupted by Satan, and the essence of their nature, and know God's righteous and majestic disposition that is intolerant of offense. Only in this way can people produce true remorse and repentance, wills to hate the flesh and rebel

against Satan, and hearts that fear God, truly escape the dark influence of Satan, turn to God, and be gained by God. Only in this way can mankind finally be saved and enter the kingdom of heaven.

—The movie script of From the Throne Flows the Water of Life

Question 3: I've believed in the Lord for many years and I've read the Bible quite a bit, so why haven't I seen the Lord prophesying that in the last days He will become flesh again and become the Son of man to perform the work of judgment? You bear witness that the Lord Jesus has already been incarnated again, that He is Almighty God, and that He's doing the work of judgment in the last days. Is there any biblical basis for this? Is this affirmed by the religious world?

Answer: Whether or not there is a biblical basis for God incarnating in the last days and doing the work of judgment is actually quite clear to anyone with their eyes open. The Bible prophesies in at least 200 places that God will do the work of judgment in the last days, and there is clear scripture proof of God becoming flesh to do the work of judgment in the last days. The Lord Jesus said, "**For the Father judges no man, but has committed all judgment to the Son.…**" (Jhn 5:22). "**And has given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man**" (Jhn 5:27). The Lord Jesus directly prophesied that God of the last days will become flesh as the Son of man to carry out His judgment. All references to "Son" or "Son of man" are certainly references to Christ in the flesh. If He were a Spirit, He cannot be called the "Son of man." When God becomes flesh, He becomes a regular, normal person, and only then is He called the Son of man, that is, Christ. That is utterly certain. So, when the Lord Jesus returns in the last days, of course He is the Son of man in the flesh who walks among mankind to utter words and do the work of judgment in the last days. We bear witness that Almighty God is the return of the Lord Jesus who is doing the work of judgment in the last days, and this completely fulfills the biblical prophecies. The Lord Jesus also said: "**And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world. He that rejects me, and receives**

not my words, has one that judges him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day" (Jhn 12:47-48). The Lord Jesus' words were very clear: He came to do the work of redemption, not the work of judgment, and He would judge people in the last days using the words He speaks. Almighty God has accomplished what the Lord Jesus prophesied, and He has done the work of judgment that begins with the house of God. This book, "The Word Appears in the Flesh," is made up of personal utterances from Almighty God, and it is a record of God's work of judgment in the last days. Let's read some of Almighty God's words.

"**In the last days, Christ uses a variety of truths to teach man, to expose the substance of man, and to dissect the words and deeds of man. These words comprise various truths, such as man's duty, how man should obey God, how man should be loyal to God, how man ought to live out normal humanity, as well as the wisdom and the disposition of God, and so on. These words are all directed at the substance of man and his corrupt disposition. In particular, the words that expose how man spurns God are spoken in regard to how man is an embodiment of Satan, and an enemy force against God. In undertaking His work of judgment, God does not simply make clear the nature of man with a few words; He exposes, deals with, and prunes over the long term. These methods of exposure, dealing, and pruning cannot be substituted with ordinary words, but with the truth of which man is utterly bereft. Only methods such as these can be called judgment; only through judgment of this kind can man be subdued and thoroughly convinced into submission to God, and moreover gain true knowledge of God. What the work of judgment brings about is man's understanding of the true face of God and the truth about his own rebelliousness. The work of judgment allows man to gain much**

understanding of the will of God, of the purpose of God's work, and of the mysteries that are incomprehensible to him. It also allows man to recognize and know his corrupt essence and the roots of his corruption, as well as to discover the ugliness of man. These effects are all brought about by the work of judgment, for the essence of this work is actually the work of opening up the truth, the way, and the life of God to all those who have faith in Him. This work is the work of judgment done by God" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth).

We are all clear that in the Age of Grace, the stage of work the Lord Jesus did was that of redemption, so by undergoing His work we can experience a fact: Although we have gained forgiveness through His sacrifice to atone for our sins, our sinful natures have not been resolved. We are subjected to the constraints of our satanic natures and frequently sin and resist God. We live within the torment of the binds and control of our satanic natures, and we frequently cannot help but rebel against and resist God. We cannot put the Lord's words into practice, and doubt often crops up in our hearts as to whether we can be in line with God's will with our frequent sinning, and whether we can really enter the kingdom of heaven. This is why God has become flesh in the last days to do a stage of the work of judgment and purification targeting the needs of corrupt mankind, so that man may completely cast off the influence of Satan, achieve salvation, and be gained by God. By expressing the truth, Almighty God judges and exposes the essence and truth of how deeply mankind has been corrupted by Satan, unveils and dissects the source of mankind's sinfulness and resistance to God, vividly and thoroughly dissects mankind's nature and essence, and reveals to mankind His righteous, majestic disposition that will not tolerate offenses. From the judgment of Almighty God's words we can

see how deeply we've been corrupted by Satan and that our natures are full of satanic elements such as arrogance and conceit, selfishness and deceit, greediness and evil, and disgust for the truth. We can see that we only believe in God to gain blessings and enter the kingdom of heaven, and for the sake of our own benefit we often lie and deceive; when God's work does not accord with our notions, we judge Him, resist Him, and betray Him. We can also see that we simply are the embodiment of Satan, like living demons with hardly any likeness of a human being. We then begin to hate ourselves and to prostrate ourselves before God, and repent. From God's judgment and chastisement, we see His righteous disposition that will not tolerate offenses and that His holiness cannot be sullied. This causes us to develop a heart of reverence for God and become willing to accept the truth and obey God's designs and arrangements. By undergoing His judgment and chastisement our dispositions in life change, we possess a conscience and reason more and more, become able to put the truth into practice and rely on God's words for our lives. We gradually enter into the reality of the truth and come to have the likeness of a true human being. Almighty God's work of judgment in the last days resolves the source of mankind's sinfulness and resistance to God from its root, ending thousands of years of human life of sinning and then confessing. This allows corrupt mankind to thoroughly cast off Satan's dark influence, and be gained and saved by God. This is the goal and the significance of God doing the work of judgment. This clearly shows us that the work of judgment done by Almighty God of the last days is the work of purifying and perfecting mankind, and is built upon the foundation of the Lord Jesus' work of redemption. It is the work that the Lord Jesus wanted to do in His return. Thus, Almighty God is the Lord Jesus returned.

—The movie script of Waiting

Question 4: Just then, you said that the most prophesied thing in the Bible is God's judgment work in the last days. There are at least 200 places in the Bible mentioning that God will come to carry out His judgment. This is completely true. This was stated even more clearly in 1 Peter 4:17: "**For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God.**" It seems God's judgment work in the last days is a certainty. But what you witnessed is God of the last days coming into the flesh to do His judgment work. This is different to what we accept. We believe the Lord in the last days will appear to mankind and work in the form of Jesus' spiritual body following the resurrection. This is also the view of the majority in religious circles. This concept of the returned Lord appearing to man and working in the flesh is something we still cannot see through, so please communicate some more with us.

Answer: It is good to see that you have affirmed that the Lord's return is to judge and cleanse people. It's just that you're still unclear on the method of the Lord's arrival. The majority of believers think that the Lord's reappearance before mankind will be through the spiritual body of Jesus that rose to heaven after the resurrection, and that the Lord would not possibly be incarnated into the Son of man again. Then in what method does the returned Lord appear before mankind to carry out His judgment? As a spiritual body or God in the flesh? This has become a question of utmost concern to believers of God. Our testimony of God coming into the flesh in the last days to do His judgment work is something that has a clear prophecy in the Bible. The Lord Jesus said, "**For the Father judges no man, but has committed all judgment to the Son….**" (Jhn 5:22). "**And has given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man**" (Jhn 5:27). The Lord Jesus directly prophesied that God of the last days will become flesh as the Son of man to carry out His judgment. All

references to “Son” or “Son of man” are certainly references to Christ in the flesh. For instance, Jesus in the flesh was the Son of man. Born to a human being, with a normal humanity. Adopting an ordinary and normal person’s image to live among people. That’s why He’s called the Son of man, Christ. If He were a Spirit, He cannot be called the “Son of man.” Just as Jehovah God is a Spirit, so He cannot be called the “Son of man.” The spiritual body of the Lord Jesus after the resurrection is not the body of God incarnate, so He cannot be called the Son of man either. anyone that has man’s image but is a spiritual body cannot be called the Son of man. Just as the Lord Jesus has prophesied, “**For as the lightning, that lightens out of the one part under heaven, shines to the other part under heaven; so shall also the Son of man be in his day. But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation**” (Luk 17:24-25). This is even more proof that the Lord’s return is through incarnation in the flesh as the Son of man. If it were through the spiritual body of the resurrected Lord, then He wouldn’t have to endure much suffering, and He certainly wouldn’t be rejected of this generation. A spiritual body is of course supernatural. Not only will He be able to perform miracles, anything He says will also immediately come true. If it’s like this, then mankind will surely follow Him. Believers, non-believers, even the devil Satan would follow. If that were the case, then how could the Lord’s return be rejected of this generation? Also, if it were a spiritual body that came to rapture the saints, then all believers would be even more unlikely to reject God. Is that not the truth? So in accordance with the Lord Jesus’ prophecy, we can be absolutely certain that the Lord Jesus must return in the flesh as the Son of Man to utter His voice and do the judgment work of the last days. It cannot possibly be the spiritual body of the resurrected Jesus—this is certainly undeniable.

In the last days God is incarnated as the Son of Man to do His judgment work, just like when the Lord Jesus came to earth to spread the gospel of the kingdom of heaven. Mankind saw the Lord Jesus as an ordinary Son of man, but His words and work had authority, power, and made people convinced. We can tell from the Lord Jesus' words and work that everything expressed by the Lord Jesus is the truth, allowing everyone to be utterly convinced. Naturally, people would believe that the Lord Jesus was certainly sent by God, and that He was God Himself who did God's work. Similarly, when the incarnate Almighty God appears in the last days to do His work, many people hear God's voice, and can all see the truth manifested like light in the realm of man. It allows everyone to see the incarnate Son of man can express the truth and judge and cleanse corrupt mankind. And it allows people to see from the truth expressed by the incarnate Son of man God's righteous disposition, so people can revere and obey God in their hearts, and be completely saved and gained by God. Almighty God speaks words and does His work of judgment beginning at the house of God, cleansing and saving all those who have come before God's throne, and making a group of overcomers before the disaster. Now, the words of Almighty God and the overcoming testimonies of God's chosen people about experiencing His judgment, cleansing and perfection have already been made public on the Internet, facing the entire world and openly testifying that Almighty God is the return of the Lord Jesus, that Almighty God is the appearance of the one true God who judges and saves mankind. Just as Almighty God says, "**I will watch over the whole earth and, appearing in the East of the world with righteousness, majesty, wrath, and chastisement, I shall reveal Myself to the myriad hosts of humanity!**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Words to the Entire Universe, Chapter 26).

—The movie script of Song of Victory

Question 5: You testified that God becomes flesh again as the Son of man and does His work of judgment beginning at the house of God. This completely conforms with the Bible's prophecy, and I can accept it. But I don't understand whether this is the same as the great white throne judgment in the Book of Revelation. What we think is that the great white throne judgment is targeted at the non-believers that belong to the devil Satan. When the Lord comes, the believers will be taken up into heaven, and then He will send disaster to destroy the non-believers. That's the judgment before the great white throne. You testify to the start of God's judgment in the last days, but we haven't seen God bring disaster to destroy the non-believers. Then how could it be the great white throne judgment? What is God's judgment in the last days exactly? Please communicate this to us more clearly.

Answer: All those who truly understand the Bible know that the great white throne judgment prophesied in the Book of Revelation is a vision of God's judgment work in the last days. The incarnate Almighty God came to express the truth and do His judgment work in the last days, starting to cleanse and save corrupt mankind. This means the great white throne judgment has already begun. Judgment must start from the house of God. God will first make a group of overcomers before the disaster. Then, God will bring down the great disasters and start to reward good and punish evil, until this evil era has been destroyed. God's great white throne judgment in the last days will then be thoroughly complete. Then God will openly appear to begin a new era. We can all see it very clearly right now. The omen of the great disasters—four consecutive blood moons—has already appeared. The great disasters are near. When the great disaster comes, anyone who resists God, judges God, or opposes God, and the brood of the devil Satan will be destroyed in the disaster. Isn't that precisely the great

white throne judgment? We can see from the Bible's prophecies that the Lord's return is separated into the two stages of secret arrival and open arrival. At first, the Lord comes like a thief, which means God incarnate arrives secretly to express the truth and perform His judgment work in the last days. The main purpose is to perfect a group of overcomers. This fulfills the "**judgment begins with the house of God**" prophecy. God's judgment work in the last days already began when God incarnate secretly arrived to express the truth and judge all of mankind. The first part of the work is to begin judgment at the house of God. With that, God cleanses and saves those who hear His voice and are brought before Him, making them into overcomers. Then God's great work is accomplished, and the great disasters begin. God will use disaster to punish and destroy this old world. God's judgment work in the last days thus reaches its climax. When God appears openly on the clouds, His judgment work will be thoroughly complete. The kingdom of God will subsequently appear. This thus fulfills the prophecy of the new Jerusalem coming down from heaven. Just as Almighty God says: "**One aspect of God's work is to conquer all mankind and gain the chosen people through His words; another is to conquer all sons of rebellion by way of various disasters. This is one part of the large-scale work of God. Only in this way can the kingdom on earth that God wants be fully achieved, and this is the part of His work that is pure gold**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Interpretations of the Mysteries of God's Words to the Entire Universe, Chapter 17). Almighty God's words sum up His judgment work in the last days very accurately. We can understand it very easily. Almighty God's judgment in the last days is the great white throne judgment prophesied in the Book of Revelation. According to Almighty God's judgment work in the last days, we can also understand what the Revelation

prophecy regarding the opening of books to judge the dead and the opening the book of life is all about. Actually, the opening of books to judge the dead is God's judgment of all those who deny and resist Him. This judgment is their condemnation, their punishment, their destruction. And opening the book of life refers to the judgment that begins at the house of God, that is, Almighty God, Christ of the last days, expressing the truth to judge and cleanse all those brought before His throne. These chosen people of God who accept Almighty God's judgment and are brought before Him are all objects of God's judgment, cleansing, and salvation. The judgment that begins at the house of God is to perfect this group of people before the disaster. Only this group of people are the wise virgins, people whose names are recorded in the book of life, the 144,000 overcomers prophesied by the Book of Revelation, the people who will ultimately enter the kingdom of heaven to inherit eternal life. This fulfills what was prophesied in Revelation 14:1-5: "**And I looked, and, see, a Lamb stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred forty and four thousand, having his Father's name written in their foreheads. And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps: And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the four beasts, and the elders: and no man could learn that song but the hundred and forty and four thousand, which were redeemed from the earth. These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. These are they which follow the Lamb wherever he goes. These were redeemed from among men, being the first fruits to God and to the Lamb. And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God**."

Almighty God's judgment work in the last days completely fulfills the vision of the great white throne judgment prophesied in the Book of Revelation. The great white throne symbolizes God's holiness as well as His authority. Then how can we get to know God's authority? We all know it. God created the heavens and earth and all things with His word. He uses His word to guide, cleanse, and save mankind, to accomplish everything. God's word represents His authority. What God says shall come to pass, what He orders shall stand. God is as good as His word, and His word shall be accomplished, and that which is accomplished lasts forever. Almighty God's work in the last days is the work of word. God uses His word to control the entire universe, control all of mankind. He uses His word to guide, to supply mankind, and is now using His word to judge and cleanse mankind. Almighty God says, "**I wish to bring people from all over the earth to the land of Canaan, and so I continue to issue forth utterances in the land of Canaan to control the entire universe. At this time, there is no light in all the earth apart from Canaan, and all men are imperiled by hunger and cold**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Seven Thunders Peal—Prophesying That the Gospel of the Kingdom Shall Spread Throughout the Universe). "**And so, during the last days, when God becomes flesh, He principally uses the word to accomplish all and make all clear**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. All Is Achieved by the Word of God). "**All who are wicked will be chastised by the words spoken from the mouth of God, all who are righteous will be blessed by the words spoken from His mouth, and all will be established and made complete by the words spoken from His mouth. Nor will He manifest any signs or wonders; all will be accomplished by His words, and His words will produce facts. Everyone on earth will celebrate God's words, whether they be adults**

or children, male, female, old or young, all people will submit beneath the words of God" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Millennial Kingdom Has Arrived). The expression of Almighty God's word is like the lightning that shoots from the East straight to the West. It cleanses and perfects all those who return before God's throne, and exposes the hypocritical Pharisees who hate the truth. as well as all wicked people who deny and resist God. At the same time, it strikes down all the sons of disobedience. The judgment work of Almighty God on earth in the last days shows that God is already sitting and ruling upon His throne. Even though this old world of evil and darkness still exists for the time being, various great disasters that will destroy the world will soon befall. There is no force on earth that can destroy God's kingdom, and no force that can abolish God's work or block His work from proceeding. God wielding His authority to perform His judgment work on earth is the same as His throne in heaven: It's something no one can shake and no one can change. That's a fact. Just as Almighty God says, "**The kingdom is expanding in humanity's midst, it is forming in humanity's midst, and it is standing up in humanity's midst; there is no force that can destroy My kingdom**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Words to the Entire Universe, Chapter 19). This is the authority and power displayed by God's word. God's word wielding power on earth is Christ ruling on earth. This is God already ruling on His throne on earth. This is sufficient to show that God's kingdom has already descended upon earth. This is a fact nobody can deny. We can see that God's will is already fully done on earth, as it is in heaven. The Lord Jesus said, "**Your kingdom come, Your will be done in earth, as it is in heaven**" (Mat 6:10). Revelation also prophesied: "**And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this world are**

become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ; and he shall reign for ever and ever. And the four and twenty elders, which sat before God on their seats, fell on their faces, and worshipped God, Saying, We give you thanks, O LORD God Almighty, which are, and were, and are to come; because you have taken to you your great power, and have reigned" (Rev 11: 15-17). These words ave already become reality. These are all truths accomplished by the judgment work of Almighty God in the last days.

—The movie script of Song of Victory

Question 6: You say that the Lord has come to do the work of judgment and purification in the last days, but the Lord Jesus said: “And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment” (Jhn 16:8). The Lord Jesus’ words and work have already achieved having people recriminate themselves for their sins, for righteousness, and for judgment. By confessing our sins to the Lord and repenting, we have already undergone His judgment, so what really is the difference between what you say is the work of judgment in the last days and the work of the Lord Jesus?

Answer: The Lord Jesus said, “**Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come to you; but if I depart, I will send him to you. And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment**” (Jhn 16:7-8). Many religious people believe that these words refer to the work of the Holy Spirit in the Age of Grace. They believe that in the Age of Grace, the Lord Jesus did the work of redemption; the process of people accepting the Lord Jesus and confessing and repenting in front of the Lord was that the Holy Spirit came, told the people of the world to reproach themselves for their sins, for righteousness, for judgment, and had people confess and repent to the Lord. This was God’s judgment. As people see it, this perspective is very much in line with their notions, but we must be clear that what the Lord Jesus did was the work of redemption, and all He gave to mankind was a way for repentance. Just as the Lord Jesus said: “**Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand**” (Mat 4:17). He did not do the work of judging and purifying people; His words that carry the essence of judgment were able to have people acknowledge in front of the Lord the sins they committed and repent. However, the outcome that His work and words achieved was just to have people confess and repent; it did

not achieve judgment and complete purification of mankind. So to put it accurately, when the Lord Jesus said "**And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment**" this referred to the Lord returning in the last days and doing the work of judgment. Just as the Lord Jesus said: "**And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world. He that rejects me, and receives not my words, has one that judges him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day**" (Jhn 12:47-48). God's work of judgment in the last days is not just having people confess and repent, but it is to resolve the source of mankind's sins, which is people's satanic natures and dispositions, so that they can entirely cast off the influence of Satan and achieve holiness. It is the work of saving, purifying, and perfecting mankind. It is also the work of rewarding good and punishing evil, and of ending the age. So we cannot say that the Lord Jesus' work of redemption was the work of judgment, and we particularly cannot take the Holy Spirit's work in the Age of Grace to be God's work of judgment in the last days.

In the Age of Grace, the Lord Jesus only did the work of redemption, and He only preached the way of repentance. This was just to achieve the result of mankind confessing, repenting, and then being able to turn back to the Lord, so the truths that the Lord Jesus expressed were very limited—far fewer than those expressed in God's utterances in His work in the last days. How much of the truth the Lord Jesus expressed was entirely determined by the essence of the work He was doing, whereas Almighty God expressed such a great deal of words in His work of judgment in the last days because His work is to thoroughly purify, save, and perfect mankind. It is the work to end the age, so His words must be more prolific; this is determined by the necessities of His work. Almighty God has expressed all the truths to

purify, save, and perfect mankind. These words of judgment have not only exposed mankind's corrupt essence and the truth of our corruption, but they have also exposed the darkness of all religious circles and the entire world. They have not only provided all people with a path to a change in disposition and progress in life, but they have also opened up God's will and His requirements to mankind. Not only have they revealed all the mysteries of God's 6,000-year management plan but even more importantly, God's inherent disposition, what He has and is, as well as His identity and essence have all been expressed within Almighty God's words. Almighty God's goal in expressing so many truths is to allow people to cast off Satan's influence and achieve holiness, and it is also to have people know, obey, and love God. Even more, it is to reveal the outcome and final destination of every type of person. Only this is God's work of judgment in the last days. Just as Almighty God said: "**The words I speak today are to judge man's sins, to judge man's unrighteousness, to curse man's disobedience. Man's crookedness and deceitfulness, man's words and deeds—all that is at odds with God's will must be subjected to judgment, and man's disobedience denounced as sin. His words revolve around the principles of judgment; He uses judgment of man's unrighteousness, the curse of man's rebelliousness, and exposure of man's ugly faces to make manifest His own righteous disposition**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. How the Effects of the Second Step of the Work of Conquest Are Achieved). "**The last days have already arrived. All things in creation will be separated according to their kind, and divided into different categories based on their nature. This is the moment when God reveals humanity's outcome and their destination. If people do not undergo chastisement and judgment, then there will be no way of exposing their disobedience and**

unrighteousness. Only through chastisement and judgment can the outcome of all creation be revealed. Man only shows his true colors when he is chastised and judged. Evil shall be put with evil, good with good, and all humanity shall be separated according to their kind. Through chastisement and judgment, the outcome of all creation will be revealed, so that the evil may be punished and the good rewarded, and all people become subject to the dominion of God. All this work must be achieved through righteous chastisement and judgment. Because man's corruption has reached its peak and his disobedience become exceedingly severe, only God's righteous disposition, one that is principally compounded of chastisement and judgment and is revealed during the last days, can fully transform and complete man. Only this disposition can expose evil and thus severely punish all the unrighteous" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Vision of God's Work (3)). In the last days, God's work is primarily the judgment and chastisement of words. Almighty God has expressed millions of words, exceeding the sum of God's words in both the Age of Law and the Age of Grace. At the heart of all of these words are judgment and chastisement, and they fully reveal God's disposition of righteousness, majesty, wrath, judgment, and damnation. It is only by having this kind of disposition that He is able to purify and save mankind, reward good and punish evil, and end the age. It is only Almighty God's work in the last days that is the true work of judgment. It is entirely different from the work of redemption that God did in the Age of Grace. This is a fact that every single person who is awaiting the appearance of the Lord must see clearly.

—The movie script of Song of Victory

Question 7: Many brothers and sisters all think that our belief in the Lord Jesus means our sins have already been forgiven, and that we've enjoyed so much of the Lord's grace and all experienced the Lord's compassion and mercy. The Lord Jesus already does not see us as sinners, so we should be able to be brought directly into the kingdom of heaven. Then why did the Lord not bring us into the kingdom of heaven when He came, but still has to perform His work of judgment in the last days? Is God's judgment of the last days to cleanse and save mankind or to condemn and destroy? Many people are unable to see through this. Please fellowship about this to us more specifically.

Answer: The question you asked is very practical. Even though our sins have been forgiven for believing in the Lord, and we are counted as the saved, in the eyes of God, we remain filthy and corrupt and have not escaped sin to receive cleanness. To have sins forgiven just means not being condemned by law. This is precisely what "saved by grace" means. God may have forgiven our sins and bestowed upon us many blessings, letting us enjoy the peace and happiness of having our sins forgiven, and giving us the right to pray to God and converse and communicate with God, but what cannot be denied is that we still often sin and resist God, and have not reached holiness. We still need God's return in the last days to perform His work of thoroughly cleansing and saving mankind. In other words, the redemption work of the Lord Jesus is merely to pave the way for God's judgment work of the last days. God's work of saving mankind does not end there. We should know this. Just then you all mentioned, how come after our sins have been forgiven for believing in the Lord we still can't help ourselves and often commit sins, and cannot extricate ourselves from living in sin? It's because our corruption by Satan runs too deep, to the extent that we all have a satanic nature and are full of satanic disposition.

That's why we cannot help but often commit sins. If this satanic nature is not resolved, we can still sin and resist God even if our sins are forgiven. That way, we will never be able to achieve compatibility with God. This is why the Lord Jesus said He must return. It is so He will perform His judgment work of the last days to thoroughly cleanse and save mankind. Just as Almighty God says, "**Before man was redeemed, many of Satan's poisons had already been planted within him and, after thousands of years of being corrupted by Satan, he has within him an established nature that resists God. Therefore, when man has been redeemed, it is nothing more than a case of redemption in which man is bought at a high price, but the poisonous nature within him has not been eliminated. Man that is so defiled must undergo a change before becoming worthy to serve God. By means of this work of judgment and chastisement, man will fully come to know the filthy and corrupt essence within his own self, and he will be able to change completely and become clean. Only in this way can man become worthy to return before the throne of God. All the work done this day is so that man can be made clean and be changed; through judgment and chastisement by the word, as well as through refinement, man can purge away his corruption and be made pure. Rather than deeming this stage of work to be that of salvation, it would be more apt to say it is the work of purification. In truth, this stage is that of conquest as well as the second stage in the work of salvation. It is through judgment and chastisement by the word that man arrives at being gained by God, and it is through the use of the word to refine, judge, and disclose that all of the impurities, notions, motives, and individual aspirations within man's heart are completely revealed**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Mystery of the Incarnation (4)). "**The sins of man could**

be forgiven through the sin offering, but as for just how man can be made to sin no more, and how his sinful nature may be extirpated completely and transformed, he has no way of solving this problem. The sins of man were forgiven, and this is because of the work of God's crucifixion, but man continued to live within his corrupt satanic disposition of old. This being so, man must be completely saved from his corrupt satanic disposition, so that his sinful nature may be completely extirpated, never to develop again, thus enabling the disposition of man to be transformed. This would require man to grasp the path of growth in life, to grasp the way of life, and to grasp the way to change his disposition. Furthermore, it would require man to act in accordance with this path, so that his disposition may gradually be changed and he may live under the shining of the light, so that all that he does may be in accord with the will of God, so that he may cast away his corrupt satanic disposition, and so that he may break free from Satan's influence of darkness, thereby emerging fully from sin. Only then will man receive complete salvation. … Therefore, after that stage of work was finished, there still remained the work of judgment and chastisement. This stage is to make man pure by means of the word, and thereby give him a path to follow. … This stage is more meaningful than the previous one, as well as more fruitful, for now it is the word that directly supplies man's life and enables the disposition of man to be completely renewed; it is a much more thorough stage of work" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Mystery of the Incarnation (4)).

Almighty God's words are very clear: In the Age of Grace, the Lord Jesus only performed His redemption work. Mankind's sins were forgiven for believing in the Lord, but their sinful nature has not been resolved.

Man’s sinful nature is Satan’s nature. It has already taken root deep inside man, becoming man’s life. That is why man still can’t help but sin and resist God. Man having satanic nature is the root cause behind his resistance of God. Man’s sins can be forgiven, but can God forgive his satanic nature? The satanic nature directly opposes God and the truth. God would never forgive it. Therefore, God has to thoroughly save mankind from the bondage and control of satanic nature, and must judge and chastise mankind. The judgment and chastisement of God in the last days is the work targeted at the satanic nature and disposition inside us. Some people might ask, can our satanic nature only be resolved by judgment and chastisement? Can’t we, through paying the price of suffering, subduing our body, and restraining ourselves with volition, resolve our satanic nature? Definitely not. Let’s take another look at the many saints throughout history who all paid the price of suffering and subdued their bodies, who all wanted to escape the bondage and control of sin, and to transcend the flesh. But who among them managed to overcome Satan to become someone who truly obeys God? Almost none. Even if there were, they were people whom God especially made complete. But how many such people were there? It was precisely because there was no God’s judgment and chastisement, so man’s satanic disposition was unable to be cleansed. Man’s life disposition was therefore unable to change. This fact is sufficient to prove that using human means is incapable of resolving mankind’s satanic nature. Man must go through God’s judgment and chastisement, pruning and dealing, and trials and refining, before they can gain the truth and life, receive the way of eternal life. It is only then that man’s satanic nature can be thoroughly resolved. That is why, on the foundation of the Lord Jesus’ redemption work, Almighty God carries out His work of judgment and chastisement in the last days, to thoroughly save mankind from the bondage and control of

satanic nature, so that mankind can be cleansed to receive God's salvation and be gained by God. From this we can see that it is God's judgment and chastisement in the last days that thoroughly cleanses and saves mankind. This is the truth.

Why does God of the last days do the work of judging and chastising the corrupt human race? To understand this subject, we must know that in order to save the human race, God cannot just do one or two stages of work. Instead, in order to completely save mankind, God must carry out three stages of work. This includes the work in the Age of Law, the Age of Grace and the Age of Kingdom. These three stages of work are what it takes to save mankind completely from the domain of Satan. These three stages of work constitute the entire work of God saving the human race. During the Age of Law, Jehovah God proclaimed laws and commandments in order to guide man in his life on earth. Based on the laws and commandments that God proclaimed, mankind could know what kind of people God blesses and what kind of people God curses. At the same time, mankind could know what is righteous and what is sinful. However, during the later stages of the Age of Law, since the human race had become more and more deeply corrupted by Satan, man lived in sin. He was not able to abide by the laws and faced the danger of being convicted and cursed by these laws. That is why the Lord Jesus came to do the work of redemption during the Age of Grace so that man could confess his sins, repent and be pardoned from his sins, thus exempting man from the conviction and the curse of the law. This way, man would be qualified to come before God and pray, commune with God, and enjoy the abundant grace and truth of God. This is what it truly means "to be saved." However, the Lord Jesus only pardoned our sins, He did not pardon our sinful nature and our satanic disposition. Our satanic nature still exists. We still live in the vicious cycle of committing sins,

confessing them and committing the sins once more. We had no way of breaking free from the constraints and control of our sinful nature. We shouted painfully to God, "I am really suffering! How can I break free from the constraints and control of sin?" As believers in the Lord, this is our common experience and knowledge. However, we ourselves are unable to resolve our sinful nature. Nobody can do the work of saving the human race. Only God—the Creator—is able to save mankind and free us from Satan and sin. Only He can save us from the domain of Satan. Almighty God says, "**Since He created man, He leads him; since He saves man, He will thoroughly save him, and will completely gain him; since He leads man, He will bring him to the proper destination; and since He created and manages man, He must take responsibility for man's fate and prospects. It is this which is the work done by the Creator**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Restoring the Normal Life of Man and Taking Him to a Wonderful Destination). God is faithful. Since God saves man, He will save him completely. God will definitely not give up halfway. That is why in order to completely save mankind, Almighty God expresses all the truth of cleansing and saving mankind in the last days. He does the work of judgment beginning with God's house in order to thoroughly resolve the problem of mankind's satanic nature and satanic disposition. He does this so that mankind can break free from sin, attain salvation, and be gained by God. The judgment work that Almighty God of the last days does is precisely what corrupt mankind needs. It is also the key stage of work that needs to be performed by God to save mankind. This fulfills the prophecy that the Lord Jesus predicted: "**I have yet many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now. However, when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth**" (Jhn 16:12-13). "The Spirit of truth" refers to God being incarnated into flesh in the last

days, expressing the truth and doing the work of judgment. All we need to do is accept and obey God's judgment work of the last days so that we can attain salvation and be gained by God. This is something that all those who have truly experienced God's judgment work of the last day can confirm. Everyone should be able to understand why God does the work of judgment in the last days when it is communicated like this, right?

We all know now that God's judgment and chastisement is the greatest salvation to us corrupt mankind. If we do not experience God's judgment and chastisement, our satanic nature cannot be resolved, and we will not be able to truly turn to God and be gained by God, and we will be unqualified to enjoy God's promise and receive a beautiful destination. This is a fact nobody can deny. But many people don't understand—what is the meaning of God judging and chastising man? Is God's judgment and chastisement condemning mankind or saving them? This requires us to know God's work and understand God's intentions of saving mankind. Let's read a few passages of Almighty God's word.

Almighty God says, "**By what means is God's perfection of man accomplished? It is accomplished by means of His righteous disposition. God's disposition primarily consists of righteousness, wrath, majesty, judgment, and curse, and He perfects man primarily by means of His judgment. Some people do not understand, and ask why it is that God is only able to make man perfect through judgment and curse. They say, 'If God were to curse man, wouldn't man die? If God were to judge man, wouldn't man be condemned? Then how can he still be made perfect?' Such are the words of people who do not know the work of God. What God curses is the disobedience of man, and what He judges are the sins of man. Although He speaks harshly and relentlessly, He reveals all that is within man, revealing through**

these stern words that which is substantive within man, yet through such judgment, He gives man a profound knowledge of the substance of the flesh, and thus man submits before God" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only by Experiencing Painful Trials Can You Know the Loveliness of God).

"**All of you live in a land of sin and licentiousness, and you are all licentious and sinful. Today you are not just able to look upon God, but more importantly, you have received chastisement and judgment, you have received truly profound salvation, which is to say, you have received God's greatest love. In all that He does, God is truly loving toward you. He has no ill intention. It is because of your sins that He judges you, so that you will examine yourselves and receive this tremendous salvation. All this is done for the purpose of making man complete. From beginning to end, God has been doing His utmost to save man, and has no desire to completely destroy the men He created with His own hands. Today, He has come among you to work, and is such salvation not even greater? If He hated you, would He still do work of such magnitude in order to personally guide you? Why should He suffer so? God does not hate you or have any ill intentions toward you. You should know that God's love is the truest love. It is only because people are disobedient that He has to save them through judgment; if not for this, saving them would be impossible**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Inside Truth of the Work of Conquest (4)).

"**In His final work of concluding the age, God's disposition is one of chastisement and judgment, in which He reveals all that is unrighteous, in order to publicly judge all peoples, and to perfect those who love Him with a sincere heart. Only a disposition such as this can**

bring the age to an end. The last days have already arrived. All things in creation will be separated according to their kind, and divided into different categories based on their nature. This is the moment when God reveals humanity's outcome and their destination. If people do not undergo chastisement and judgment, then there will be no way of exposing their disobedience and unrighteousness. Only through chastisement and judgment can the outcome of all creation be revealed. Man only shows his true colors when he is chastised and judged. Evil shall be put with evil, good with good, and all humanity shall be separated according to their kind. Through chastisement and judgment, the outcome of all creation will be revealed, so that the evil may be punished and the good rewarded, and all people become subject to the dominion of God. All this work must be achieved through righteous chastisement and judgment. Because man's corruption has reached its peak and his disobedience become exceedingly severe, only God's righteous disposition, one that is principally compounded of chastisement and judgment and is revealed during the last days, can fully transform and complete man. Only this disposition can expose evil and thus severely punish all the unrighteous. … During the last days, only righteous judgment can separate man according to their kind and bring man into a new realm. In this way, the entire age is brought to an end through God's righteous disposition of judgment and chastisement" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Vision of God's Work (3)).

After reading Almighty God's words, we can all see a truth from God's word: We corrupt mankind cannot receive the truth and life if we do not go through God's judgment and chastisement, and will therefore be unable to get rid of our sinful nature to achieve salvation, and moreover cannot get to

know God's righteous disposition and all God has and is. Mankind has been corrupted by Satan for thousands of years and all have satanic nature. They are all arrogant, deceitful, and reckless. Even though some of them believe in God, but they often still can't help themselves but sin and resist God. This shows that man does not have true knowledge and fear of God. That's a fact. For a person full of satanic disposition to truly be obedient before God and be utterly convinced by God, what method do you think should be used? He must experience God's judgment and chastisement, by which he sees God's righteous, majestic, and wrathful disposition, and sees all the truths expressed by God to judge and cleanse mankind. Only then can he be conquered, fall down completely before God, and truly repent, and start to understand the truth, practice the truth, and gradually achieve dispositional change and compatibility with God. Then why couldn't believers in the Lord from the Age of Grace truly get to know themselves? Why didn't they fear God and often lived in sin, disobeyed God and opposed God, and didn't even think that was a big deal? It was because God had not performed His judgment work of the last days. Without experiencing God's judgment and chastisement, man cannot get to know his own satanic nature, his arrogant disposition will never be able to change, and it won't be possible for him to achieve true obedience toward and fear of God. Some might say, How could we bear the cross and follow the Lord if we don't obey Him? In the Age of Grace, we gave up everything to work and pay the price for the Lord. But the aim was all so we could receive the crown, be rewarded and enter the kingdom of heaven. Did we truly love and obey the Lord? Were we the ones whose lives and disposition really changed? Did we really achieve compatibility with the Lord? Then why, when we are expending for the Lord, can we still simultaneously engage in transactions with Him, take advantage of Him and deceive Him? God observes the

depths of man's heart. Man looks at the outside, God looks at the inside. No matter how good we are on the outside, it does not mean we are after God's heart. Therefore, God's work of judgment starting at the house of God in the last days, is the work targeted at man's satanic nature for thoroughly cleansing and saving man. Only after we experience God's judgment and chastisement of the last days can we see clearly the nature and substance, and the real situation of our being corrupted by Satan, and that what we live out is all the image of the devil Satan, without much humanity. We all feel deeply ashamed, fall down before God, repent to God, and are extremely remorseful, never again feeling that we are stronger or better than anyone. We start to despise ourselves, curse ourselves, and are no longer willing to live in our corrupt disposition. We unconsciously become humble, no longer able to be insolent. At the same time we also see that God's disposition is too righteous, too holy, which is unoffendable, and can't help but develop a heart of reverence for God. We don't dare to do whatever we please and say whatever we want any more, and begin to forsake the flesh, practice the truth, and change the way we look at things. Our life disposition starts to change, and we are willing to obey God's orchestrations and arrangements, no longer controlled by our future and fate and our desires for blessings, and live out the likeness of a real man. After we've experienced God's judgment and chastisement, we all deeply appreciate that Almighty God expressing the words to judge and chastise men, is not to punish or destroy them, but is completely for cleansing and perfecting them. This is God's great mercy and salvation toward us, and God's truest and most genuine love for us. Also, we have also seen that the work of judgment beginning at the house of God is targeted at all those who accept God's work of the last days. God is going to make a group of overcomers before the disaster. This group of people are those who will receive God's

promise and enter the kingdom of heaven. But as for those wicked people who resist God, they will be destroyed in accordance with the prophecy in the Book of Revelation. God will not perform His judgment and chastisement work on them, and will simply wait until the great disasters arrive to destroy them. So, we can all clearly see that God's judgment and chastisement of His chosen people is to cleanse, save, and perfect them. Only those antichrists, wicked people who hate the truth and resist God will be condemned and destroyed. This is the absolute truth.

—The movie script of Song of Victory

Question 8: How exactly does God perform His judgment work to save and cleanse mankind in the last days?

Answer: Currently, all those who seek and study the true way want to know how Almighty God does judgment work in the last days. Pertaining to this aspect of the truth, Almighty God has expressed ample words. Let us look at a few passages of His words:

"**God's work in the present incarnation is to express His disposition primarily through chastisement and judgment. Building on this foundation, He brings more truth to man and points out to him more ways of practice, thereby achieving His objective of conquering man and saving him from his own corrupt disposition. This is what lies behind the work of God in the Age of Kingdom**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Preface).

"**In the last days, Christ uses a variety of truths to teach man, to expose the substance of man, and to dissect the words and deeds of man. These words comprise various truths, such as man's duty, how man should obey God, how man should be loyal to God, how man ought to live out normal humanity, as well as the wisdom and the disposition of God, and so on. These words are all directed at the substance of man and his corrupt disposition. In particular, the words that expose how man spurns God are spoken in regard to how man is an embodiment of Satan, and an enemy force against God. In undertaking His work of judgment, God does not simply make clear the nature of man with a few words; He exposes, deals with, and prunes over the long term. These methods of exposure, dealing, and pruning cannot be substituted with ordinary words, but with the truth of which man is utterly bereft. Only methods such as these can be called**

judgment; only through judgment of this kind can man be subdued and thoroughly convinced into submission to God, and moreover gain true knowledge of God. What the work of judgment brings about is man's understanding of the true face of God and the truth about his own rebelliousness. The work of judgment allows man to gain much understanding of the will of God, of the purpose of God's work, and of the mysteries that are incomprehensible to him. It also allows man to recognize and know his corrupt essence and the roots of his corruption, as well as to discover the ugliness of man. These effects are all brought about by the work of judgment, for the essence of this work is actually the work of opening up the truth, the way, and the life of God to all those who have faith in Him. This work is the work of judgment done by God" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth).

"**The work done by God during this age is chiefly the provision of the words for the life of man; the exposure of man's nature essence and corrupt disposition; and the elimination of religious notions, feudal thinking, outdated thinking, and the knowledge and culture of man. These things must all be cleansed through being exposed by God's words. In the last days, God uses words, not signs and wonders, to make man perfect. He uses His words to expose man, to judge man, to chastise man, and to make man perfect, so that in the words of God, man comes to see the wisdom and loveliness of God, and comes to understand the disposition of God, and so that through the words of God, man beholds the deeds of God**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Knowing God's Work Today).

"**God has many means of perfecting man. He employs all manner of environments to deal with the corrupt disposition of man, and uses**

various things to lay man bare; in one regard, He deals with man, in another He lays man bare, and in another He reveals man, digging out and revealing the 'mysteries' in the depths of man's heart, and showing man his nature by revealing many of his states. God perfects man through many methods—through revelation, through dealing with man, through man's refinement, and chastisement—so that man may know that God is practical" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Those Who Focus on Practice Can Be Perfected).

When God works to judge and cleanse corrupt mankind in the last days, He uses many aspects of truths to judge and expose man's satanic nature that disobeys and resists God, and show man God's holy and righteous disposition tolerating no offense. Through the judgment of God's word, man is able to clearly see the truth of their deep corruption by Satan, and really get to know God's holy essence and His righteous disposition intolerant of offense, having reverence for God. They thus escape the bondage and control of sin, and achieve cleanness and God's salvation. When we read Almighty God's word, we can feel that God is judging and exposing us face-to-face, and can all feel that God's word, like a double-edged sword, judges and exposes our disobedient and God-resisting satanic nature. We see clearly the truth that we've been deeply corrupted by Satan, that our nature is arrogant, deceitful, selfish and despicable. Although we believe in God we cannot let God be exalted, and we don't have a heart that fears God. We often lie and deceive God, deceive other people. We believe in God but worship and follow man. Once we have status, we even show off ourselves and build ourselves up, so that people will listen to and obey us. We can even split from God and confront Him, setting up independent kingdoms. When we encounter natural or man-made disasters, we even complain about God and resist God. When God's new work doesn't match

our notions, we will even act like the Jewish Pharisees back then, making up conclusions about God and judging Him as we please. If we expend a little, do some work or suffer a little for God, we will act all self-important and flaunt our seniority, demanding grace and blessings from God. As soon as our desires are not satisfied, we will act negative and slow down or quit our work, etc. We can see that our corruption by Satan runs too deep! We have not lived out the image of human beings at all! We are essentially the embodiment of Satan! Facing the truth of our corruption by Satan, we are all deeply ashamed and extremely remorseful, and we have appreciated that God's holiness cannot be defiled and that His righteous disposition cannot be offended. We cannot help but fall down before God, regretting our evil ways, despising our satanic nature, and repenting to God. We are willing to accept God's judgment and chastisement, perform our duty as created creatures, and obey everything God has orchestrated and arranged. This is the result of the judgment of God's word on His chosen people!

We all know after experiencing God's judgment and chastisement that God not only uses His word to judge and expose us. He also, targeting our actual situations, sets up various environments, people and things to test and reveal us, concretely prune and deal with us, discipline us. Through actually experiencing God's judgment and chastisement, dealing and pruning, we see that our nature is too arrogant, too obstinate. If we don't receive such judgment and chastisement, our disposition would not be able to achieve change. For instance, sometimes we don't practice the truth while fulfilling our duty. Through our arrogant nature, we do whatever we please, exalt ourselves, and build up ourselves to impress people, making our spirits dark inside and unable to sense God's presence, and our hearts hurt and refined. At this time, God's word will reproach us inside. Sometimes God will set up people and things to deal with and prune us, so that we will return before

God to reflect and know ourselves, and unconsciously recognize our arrogant ambitions of wanting to control and possess people. When we see our own nature is that of the archangel, our hearts cannot help but tremble in fear. We feel that God's disposition is unoffendable, and fall down before God to pray and repent to Him. At this moment, God's words will comfort us, encourage us, and make us understand all the pain and effort of God's salvation of mankind, so we can not be passive and weak, have confidence to pursue the truth, and seek dispositional change. After experiencing God's actual dealing and pruning, discipline and chastening many times, our arrogant disposition achieves change, we become much more low-key in fulfilling our duty and not as insolent as before, and can take the initiative to open up and recognize our own corruption, consciously exalt God, bear witness to God, and feel that living like this puts our heart at ease and is enjoyable. God's salvation work really is too practical! It is through actually experiencing such judgment and chastisement from God that we now have real knowledge of God's righteous disposition, and know what kind of person God loves and what kind of person God despises, what kind of person he would save and what kind of person he would eliminate, what kind of person he would bless and what kind of person he would curse, and have also gotten to know that God indeed inspects everything and dominates all. God is right beside us, concretely guiding us, saving us, making us appreciate that the truth expressed by God is His judgment and chastisement of us corrupt mankind. It's inspection, it's cleansing. With fear of God in our hearts and changes to our corrupt disposition, we can seek the truth when we run into things, practice the truth, and obey God, gradually living out the likeness of a real man. The change we have been able to achieve as of today is completely the result of experiencing God's judgment work of the last days. It is God's immense love and salvation for us.

—The movie script of Song of Victory

Question 9: We accept God's work of the last days, but how do we experience God's judgment and chastisement so that we can receive the truth and life, get rid of our sinful nature, and achieve salvation to enter the kingdom of heaven?

Answer: How to experience God's judgment and chastisement to gain the truth and life, and get rid of our sinful nature to achieve salvation and enter the kingdom of heaven, this question is very important, because this is the major issues that relate to our ending and destination. To seek this aspect of the truth, we should first read a few passages of Almighty God's word:

"**True faith in God means the following: On the basis of the belief that God holds sovereignty over all things, one experiences His words and His work, purges one's corrupt disposition, satisfies the will of God, and comes to know God. Only a journey of this kind may be called 'faith in God'**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Preface).

"**The process of speaking today is precisely the process of conquering. And just how should people cooperate? By knowing how to eat and drink these words, and achieving an understanding of them. As to how people are conquered, this is not something they can do by themselves. All you can do is, through eating and drinking these words, to come to know your corruption and filth, your rebelliousness and your unrighteousness, and fall down before God. If, after grasping God's will, you are able to put it into practice, and if you have visions and are able to completely submit to these words, and not make any choices by yourself, then you will have been conquered—and it will**

have been as a result of these words" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Inside Truth of the Work of Conquest (1)).

"**Focus on eating and drinking of God's words, concentrate on the search for the truth and the search for God's intentions in His words, and try to grasp God's will in everything. This is the most fundamental and vital method of practice. … Wholehearted devotion to the words of God primarily involves seeking the truth, seeking God's intentions within His words, focusing on grasping the will of God, and understanding and obtaining more truth from God's words. … achieving an understanding of His disposition and His loveliness. Peter also attempted to understand the various corrupt states of man from God's words, as well as man's corrupt nature and actual shortcoming, thus meeting all aspects of God's requirements of man in order to satisfy Him. Peter had so many correct practices that abided by the words of God; this was most in line with God's will, and it was the best way a person could cooperate while experiencing God's work**" (The Word, Vol. 3. The Discourses of Christ of the Last Days. How to Walk the Path of Peter).

As believers we first need to understand what believing in God means. Believing in God means to experience God's work and His word, to understand the truth and live out the reality of truth. That's the process of believing in God. The work of God in the last days is judging through His word. Then if we want our corrupt disposition to be cleansed and to achieve salvation, we must first put in some effort on God's word and genuinely eat and drink the words of God, and accept God's judgment and revelations in His word. No matter how much God's word cuts to the heart, how harsh it is, or how much it makes us suffer, first be sure that God's word is all the truth, and the reality of life that we should enter into. Every utterance of

God's word is to cleanse and change us, to make us shed our corrupt disposition and achieve salvation, and even more so to let us understand the truth to achieve the knowledge of God. So we must accept the judgment and chastisement, pruning and dealing of God's word. If we want to receive the truth in God's word, we must be able to suffer for accepting and obeying God's word and the truth. We must seek the truth in God's word, feel out God's will, and reflect and know ourselves, reflect on God's word to know our own arrogance, deception, selfishness and despicableness, how we engage in transactions with God, take advantage of God, deceive God, toy with the truth, and other satanic dispositions, as well as the various impurities in our belief in God and intentions to receive blessings. This way, we can gradually get to know the truth of our corruption and the essence of our nature. After we understand more of the truth, our knowledge of God will gradually grow deeper, and we will naturally know what kind of person God likes and dislikes, what kind of person he would save or eliminate, what kind of person he would use, and what kind of person he would bless. Once we see through these things, we will start to understand God's disposition. These are all the results of experiencing the judgment and chastisement of God's word. All those who seek the truth pay attention to experiencing the judgment and chastisement of God's word, pay attention to seeking the truth in everything, and pay attention to practicing God's word and obeying God. Such people will be able to gradually understand the truth and enter reality through experiencing God's word, and achieve salvation and be made perfect. As for those who don't love the truth, although they can recognize God's appearance and work from the truth expressed by God, they think they can definitely achieve salvation as long as they abandon everything for God and fulfill their duty. In the end, they still cannot receive the truth and life after believing in God for many

years. They understand only a few words, letters, and doctrines, but think they know the truth and have achieved reality. They are lying to themselves and will surely be eliminated by God. How do we experience God's work to achieve salvation? Let's read another few passages of Almighty God's word.

Almighty God says, "**A person's life cannot grow simply by reading God's word, but only when the word of God is put into practice. If it is your belief that to understand God's word is all that is needed to have life and stature, then your understanding is warped. Truly understanding God's word occurs when you practice the truth, and you must understand that 'only by practicing the truth can it ever be understood'**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Once You Understand the Truth, You Should Put It Into Practice).

"**In his belief in God, Peter sought to satisfy God in everything, and sought to obey all that came from God. Without the slightest complaint, he was able to accept chastisement and judgment, as well as refinement, tribulation and going without in his life, none of which could alter his love for God. Was this not the ultimate love for God? Was this not the fulfillment of the duty of a creature of God? Whether in chastisement, judgment, or tribulation, you are always capable of achieving obedience unto death, and this is what should be achieved by a creature of God, this is the purity of the love for God. If man can achieve this much, then he is a qualified creature of God, and there is nothing which better satisfies the desire of the Creator**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Success or Failure Depends on the Path That Man Walks).

"**If what you seek is the truth, if what you put into practice is the truth, and if what you attain is a change in your disposition, then the path that you tread is the right one. If what you seek is the blessings of the flesh, and what you put into practice is the truth of your own notions, and if there is no change in your disposition, and you are not at all obedient to God in the flesh, and you still live in vagueness, then what you seek will surely take you to hell, for the path that you walk is the path of failure. Whether you will be made perfect or eliminated depends on your own pursuit, which is also to say that success or failure depends on the path that man walks**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Success or Failure Depends on the Path That Man Walks).

"**If one can satisfy God while fulfilling one's duty, is principled in one's words and actions, and can enter all aspects of the truth reality, then one is a person who is perfected by God. It can be said that the work and the words of God have been completely effective for such people, that God's words have become their life, they have obtained the truth, and they are able to live in accordance with God's words. After this, the nature of their flesh—that is, the very foundation of their original existence—will shake apart and collapse. After people possess God's words as their life, they will become new people. If the words of God become their life, if the vision of God's work, His requirements of humanity, His revelations to humans, and the standards for a true life that God requires them to meet become their life, if they live according to these words and truths, then they are perfected by the words of God. Such people are reborn, and have become new people through God's words**" (The Word, Vol. 3. The Discourses of Christ of the Last Days. How to Walk the Path of Peter).

Almighty God says, "**A person's life can only grow when the word of God is put into practice.**" This line is the truth. It's too practical. Believers who do not practice and experience God's word cannot receive the truth. A person without the truth is a person without life. Almighty God gave testimony of how Peter pursued the truth to be perfected. Peter was a person who pursued the truth. He not only sought how to love God, but also paid attention to changing his life disposition. The primary manifestation is that he could obey God's judgment and chastisement and accept the trials and refinement. Even if the Lord handed him over to Satan, he could still be obedient to the death. He was crucified upside down on the cross for the Lord, providing a beautiful and resounding testimony. Peter put special attention and care into believing in God, diligently obeying and loving God. He paid attention not only to preaching and working, but especially to practicing the truth and entering reality. That's why Peter was ultimately perfected by God and received God's approval. In accordance with Peter's testimony, we believers must pursue the truth if we want to achieve salvation, and pay attention to putting effort into God's word, seeking the truth, and feeling out God's intentions, practicing the truth and entering into reality. By pursuing in this way, we will become more and more clear about the truth, and have more and more paths to practice it. Before we know it, we will have entered into the reality of the truth. If we are merely satisfied with understanding doctrines, then we cannot practice the truth and enter into reality. Knowing doctrines doesn't mean that we understand the truth. Only understanding the truth enables us to know God, know ourselves, and truly repent. But this is not so with knowing doctrines. Those who know more of doctrines will get more arrogant and self-conceited. And they will never know God or themselves. When it comes to experiencing God's work of the last days, those who do not love the truth will naturally avoid the

judgment and chastisement of God's word, and will move even further away from God especially when they see God's word cuts to the heart or is harsh. How could such people receive the truth? People who genuinely love the truth are willing to withstand any amount of suffering for the sake of receiving the truth. They can obey when suffering from the judgment of God's word. They can also stand firm when faced with trials and refinements. Even if their families are torn apart, if they are imprisoned, or if they have to give up their lives, they can still stand and be a witness for God. Such people can certainly obtain the truth and receive God's approval after experiencing God's work!

—The movie script of Song of Victory

Question 10: Many brothers and sisters who believe in the Lord still aren't clear and they believe this: The Lord Jesus redeemed us from our sins and He already sees us as free from sin. As long as we suffer and pay a price to spread the gospel of the Lord, and we behave well and stand witness well, when the Lord comes we should be able to be raptured into the kingdom of heaven. We will follow the Lord until the end, we do not resist Him or deny His name, so why do we still need to undergo God's work of judgment in the last days?

Answer: Many believers in the Lord believe the same thing that you do: 'As long as I work hard and bear the cross for the Lord, exhibit some good behaviors and bear witness well, I will be qualified to wait for the Lord's return and be raptured into the kingdom of heaven.' Humans see this as perfectly reasonable, but is that what God's will is? Do His words bear that out? If not, then this thinking on the part of man certainly comes out of human notions and imagination. Thinking back to when the Pharisees would frequently explain the scriptures to people in the synagogues, they appeared to strictly adhere to the laws, the rules, and the commandments, and in others' eyes they were very pious and were upstanding in their behavior. But why did they madly resist and condemn the Lord Jesus and even nail Him to the cross? This proves that people may work hard for the Lord and be well-behaved on the outside but it does not mean that they obey and love God in their hearts. Outward piety does not represent a heart that magnifies and reveres God. People may frequently explain the Bible to others, but that doesn't mean that they are able to put the Lord's words into practice or to follow God's way. God can see everything of what's inside of a person—only He can see deep into their hearts. The Lord Jesus' appearance and work completely exposed the essences of the hypocritical Pharisees. That the Pharisees were able to work and preach, to suffer and

pay a price was actually entirely for their own status and their living. They explained the scriptures only to exalt themselves, to establish themselves, and have others adore them and look up to them. They absolutely were not exalting God or bearing witness to Him. God is holy and righteous, and His work lays everything bare. So, when the Lord Jesus came to work, He thoroughly revealed the Pharisees' antichrist nature of hating the truth and resisting God. In fact, those of us who believe in the Lord are all clear on the fact that after a person believes in the Lord, although they may enthusiastically abandon other things and expend themselves for the Lord, work very hard, and exhibit some good behaviors, even while they are working they frequently sin and resist God, and make an enemy of God. There are some who complain to Him when disaster strikes, when there is persecution and adversity, and they may even deny and betray God. Although the pastors and elders of the religious world are able to work and preach, they are particularly like the Pharisees, establishing themselves so that others adore them, deceiving and controlling God's chosen people, and establishing their own little kingdoms. Facing God's work in the last days, they madly condemn and resist it, and even though they clearly know that Almighty God's words are the truth, they are still stubbornly defiant toward God. This shows that as long as people still have a sinful nature, and as long as they have a satanic disposition that has not been resolved, they may resist and betray God at any time, and any place. No matter how well someone behaves, that doesn't mean that they can truly obey God and follow His way. No matter how much of the Bible someone understands, it's not the same as understanding the truth and knowing God. No matter how much someone suffers and what price they pay when expending themselves for God, it does not mean that they are someone who carries out God's will. It is evident that when someone has a sinful nature that has not been resolved

and a satanic disposition that has not been purified, no matter how hard they work for the Lord and for how many years, their nature and essence will not change. This is a fact that no one can deny. Just as Almighty God says: "**A sinner such as you, who has just been redeemed, and has not been changed, or been perfected by God, can you be after God's heart? For you, you who are still of your old self, it is true that you were saved by Jesus, and that you are not counted as a sinner because of the salvation of God, but this does not prove that you are not sinful, and are not impure. How can you be saintly if you have not been changed? Within, you are beset by impurity, selfish and mean, yet you still wish to descend with Jesus—you should be so lucky! You have missed a step in your belief in God: You have merely been redeemed, but you have not been changed. For you to be after God's heart, God must personally do the work of changing and cleansing you; if you are only redeemed, you will be incapable of attaining sanctity. In this way you will be unqualified to share in the good blessings of God, for you have missed out a step in God's work of managing man, which is the key step of changing and perfecting. You, a sinner who has just been redeemed, are therefore incapable of directly inheriting God's inheritance**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Concerning Appellations and Identity). "**Those who are impure are not permitted to enter into the kingdom, those who are impure are not permitted to besmirch the holy ground. Though you may have done much work, and worked for many years, in the end if you are still deplorably filthy, then it will be intolerable to the law of Heaven that you wish to enter My kingdom! From the foundation of the world until today, never have I offered easy access to My kingdom to those who curry favor with Me. This is a heavenly rule, and no one can break it!**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The

Appearance and Work of God. Success or Failure Depends on the Path That Man Walks). Therefore, we must experience God's judgment and cleansing in the last days to obtain the truth, free ourselves from our corrupt disposition and be obtained by God, to be saved and enter the heavenly kingdom.

We have all seen that after becoming believers, many people are able to work hard, pay a price for the Lord, and discipline their bodies. But no matter how great their faith or enthusiasm is, they are still unable to cast off the binds of their sinful nature. They are still living in sin, and this is a fact. Without resolving this sinful satanic nature, people will never be able to genuinely obey God, be in harmony with Him, be gained by Him, and then enter His kingdom. So, God's work of saving mankind cannot just be completed by doing the work of redemption—He still needs to do the work of judgment in the last days. The work of judgment in the last days is to thoroughly resolve mankind's sinful satanic nature, have people truly know God, and achieve genuine obedience to and worship of God. Only then will God's work of saving mankind be entirely completed. This is why the Lord Jesus said that He must come again, and that His return is to do the work of judgment in the last days, to thoroughly purify and save mankind. Let's read a few passages from Almighty God's words:

"**Though Jesus did much work among man, He only completed the redemption of all mankind and became man's sin offering; He did not rid man of all his corrupt disposition. Fully saving man from the influence of Satan not only required Jesus to become the sin offering and bear the sins of man, but it also required God to do even greater work to rid man completely of his satanically corrupted disposition. And so, now that man has been forgiven of his sins, God has returned to the flesh to lead man into the new age, and begun the work of**

chastisement and judgment. This work has brought man into a higher realm. All those who submit under His dominion shall enjoy higher truth and receive greater blessings. They shall truly live in the light, and they shall gain the truth, the way, and the life" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Preface).

"**By means of this work of judgment and chastisement, man will fully come to know the filthy and corrupt essence within his own self, and he will be able to change completely and become clean. Only in this way can man become worthy to return before the throne of God. All the work done this day is so that man can be made clean and be changed; through judgment and chastisement by the word, as well as through refinement, man can purge away his corruption and be made pure. Rather than deeming this stage of work to be that of salvation, it would be more apt to say it is the work of purification. In truth, this stage is that of conquest as well as the second stage in the work of salvation. It is through judgment and chastisement by the word that man arrives at being gained by God, and it is through the use of the word to refine, judge, and disclose that all of the impurities, notions, motives, and individual aspirations within man's heart are completely revealed**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Mystery of the Incarnation (4)).

"**What the work of judgment brings about is man's understanding of the true face of God and the truth about his own rebelliousness. The work of judgment allows man to gain much understanding of the will of God, of the purpose of God's work, and of the mysteries that are incomprehensible to him. It also allows man to recognize and know his corrupt essence and the roots of his corruption, as well as to discover the ugliness of man. These effects are all brought about by the work of**

judgment, for the essence of this work is actually the work of opening up the truth, the way, and the life of God to all those who have faith in Him. This work is the work of judgment done by God" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth).

All the Lord Jesus did in the Age of Grace was the work of redemption, and it was just to atone for man's sins. He did not atone for mankind's corrupt disposition and sinful nature, and this proves that when the Lord Jesus returns He will do the work of judgment in the last days to thoroughly resolve the issue of mankind's satanic nature, to allow people to be purified and saved, and to be worthy of entering into God's kingdom. This is God's salvation in the last days. So, after people's sins were atoned for, God is doing the work in the last days of "judgment begins with the house of God" on the foundation of Jesus' work of redemption. Almighty God has expressed the truth to judge and expose corrupt mankind's nature and essence of resisting God and the truth of their corruption, to reveal and dissect the source of humanity's sinfulness, and to reveal to mankind God's righteous and holy disposition which will not tolerate offenses. From the judgment of God's words, His chosen people have come face to face with God and have been exposed and judged; they have seen God's righteous disposition revealed to man, and have seen God's holy essence just like seeing a bright light from the sky. They have all prostrated themselves before God and have nowhere to hide; they are terribly ashamed. They have seen how deeply they have been corrupted by Satan and that they are full of a satanic nature; they are arrogant and conceited, selfish and despicable, crooked and deceitful, and full of lies. They detest the truth, and believe in God but are unable to magnify Him and are utterly lacking a heart of reverence for God. They frequently judge God, rebel against Him, and

resist Him. When trials come upon them they complain and even deny or betray God. They simply are the embodiment of Satan, just like living demons, and don't have the likeness of a true human being at all. They see all of these things and start to hate themselves, to truly repent to God, and to acknowledge from their hearts that God's words are the truth, the way, and the life. They develop a heart of longing for the truth. At the same time, through God's judgment and chastisement they all genuinely experience God's disposition of righteousness, majesty, and wrath which will not tolerate offenses. They truly see the appearance of God, they see God's holiness that cannot be sullied and His righteousness which will not tolerate offenses. They understand God's good intentions in saving mankind and His genuine love for mankind. They see the true face and the essence of their corruption by Satan. For these reasons, they develop a heart of reverence for God and become willing to accept the truth, and obey God's designs and arrangements. As people's understanding of God gradually deepens, they see their own satanic nature and essence more clearly, and then they begin to hate Satan, and even more hate Satan's nature. So, they are able to forsake Satan and forsake the flesh, and then the truth begins to rule within them and God's words naturally become their lives. This is how people begin to rely on God's words in their lives, fully cast off the influence of Satan, and achieve a change in disposition and harmony with God. It is evident that the Lord Jesus' work of redemption was to build a foundation, to pave the way for God's work of judgment in the last days. Only the work of judgment done by Almighty God in the last days is the work of fully purifying, saving, and perfecting mankind. Only if people accept and obey Almighty God's judgment in the last days and obtain the truth will they be able to cast off the binds and strictures of sin, achieve a change in their disposition in life, and become someone who follows God's

will. Only then can they achieve true holiness, and only then will they be worthy of entering into God's kingdom.

—The movie script of The City Will Be Overthrown

X. Questions and Answers on the Truth of Incarnation

Question 1: In all my years of faith, despite knowing that the Lord Jesus is God's incarnation, I didn't understand the truth of the incarnation. If the Lord's appearance in the second coming is similar to how the Lord Jesus was incarnated as the Son of man to do His work, then we'll be unable to recognize the Lord Jesus, we'll be unable to greet the Lord's coming. I believe that the incarnation is a great mystery. Few are able to truly understand the truth of the incarnation. Please commune with us on this issue, what exactly is the incarnation.

Answer: Pertaining to what is God incarnate, and what is the essence of God incarnate, it can be said as the mystery of the truth that we believers of the Lord fail to understand. For thousands of years, despite believers knew that the Lord Jesus was the incarnation of God, no one could understand what God incarnate and His essence are respectively. It was only until the advent of Almighty God in the last days that this mystery of the truth was unfolded to mankind. Let's read a few passages of Almighty God's word: "**The 'incarnation' is God's appearance in the flesh; God works among created mankind in the image of the flesh. So for God to be incarnated, He must first be flesh, flesh with normal humanity; this is the most basic prerequisite. In fact, the implication of God's incarnation is that God lives and works in the flesh, that God in His very essence becomes flesh, becomes a man**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Essence of the Flesh Inhabited by God).

"**The incarnate God is called Christ, and Christ is the flesh donned by the Spirit of God. This flesh is unlike any man that is of the flesh. This difference is because Christ is not of flesh and blood; He is the incarnation of the Spirit. He has both a normal humanity and a complete divinity. His divinity is not possessed by any man. His normal**

humanity sustains all His normal activities in the flesh, while His divinity carries out the work of God Himself" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Essence of Christ Is Obedience to the Will of the Heavenly Father).

"**The Christ with normal humanity is a flesh in which the Spirit is realized, and is possessed of normal humanity, normal sense, and human thought. 'Being realized' means God becoming man, the Spirit becoming flesh; to put it more plainly, it is when God Himself inhabits a flesh with normal humanity, and through it expresses His divine work —this is what it means to be realized, or incarnated**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Essence of the Flesh Inhabited by God).

"**Because He is a man with the essence of God, He is above all created humans, above any man who can perform God's work. And so, among all those with a human shell like His, among all those who possess humanity, only He is the incarnate God Himself—all others are created humans. Though they all have humanity, created humans have nothing but humanity, while God incarnate is different: In His flesh He not only has humanity but, more importantly, divinity. His humanity can be seen in the outer appearance of His flesh and in His everyday life, but His divinity is difficult to perceive. Because His divinity is expressed only when He has humanity, and is not as supernatural as people imagine it to be, it is extremely difficult for people to see. … Since God becomes flesh, His essence is a combination of humanity and divinity. This combination is called God Himself, God Himself on earth**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Essence of the Flesh Inhabited by God).

From Almighty God's words we see that the incarnation is God's Spirit clothed in flesh, that is, God's Spirit is materialized in the flesh with normal humanity and normal human thinking, and thereby becomes an ordinary and normal person working and speaking among men. This flesh has normal humanity, but also has complete divinity. Though in outward appearance His flesh seems ordinary and normal, He is able to take on God's work, can express God's voice, and guide and save humanity. This is because He has complete divinity. Complete divinity means that all that God's Spirit possesses—the inherent disposition of God, God's holy and righteous substance, all that God has and is, God's almightiness and wisdom, and God's authority and power—these have all been materialized in the flesh. This flesh is Christ, is the practical God who is here on earth to do work and save mankind. From His outward appearance, Christ is an ordinary and normal Son of man, but He is substantively different from us created human beings. Created man has only humanity, he doesn't have even the slightest trace of divine substance. Christ, however, not only has normal humanity; more importantly, He has complete divinity. So, He has God's substance, He can represent God entirely, express all truths as God Himself, express God's disposition and all that God has and is, and endow us with the truth, the way, and the life. No created man is capable of such feats. Christ works and speaks, expresses God's disposition, and all that God has and is in His flesh. No matter how He expresses God's word and does God's work, He always does so within normal humanity. He has a normal flesh, there is nothing supernatural about Him. This proves that God has come into the flesh, He has already become an ordinary human. This ordinary and normal flesh has fulfilled the fact of "The Word Appears in the Flesh." He is the practical God incarnate. Because Christ has complete divinity, He can represent God, express the truth, and save mankind.

Because Christ has complete divinity, He can express God's word directly, not just relay or pass on God's word. He can express the truth anytime and anyplace, supplying, watering, and shepherding man, guiding all of mankind. Only because Christ has complete divinity, is it enough to prove that He possesses God's identity and substance. That's why we say that He is God's incarnation, the practical God Himself.

The greatest mystery of the incarnation has little to do with whether God's flesh is lofty in stature or like that of common man. Rather it has to do with the fact that complete divinity is hidden within this normal flesh. None of us is capable of discovering or seeing this hidden divinity. Just as when the Lord Jesus came to do His work, if no one back then had heard His voice and experienced His word and work, then no one would have recognized that the Lord Jesus is Christ, the Son of God. So God's incarnation is the best way for Him to descend secretly among us humans. When the Lord Jesus came, none of us could tell from His outward appearance that He was Christ, the incarnate God, and none of us could see the divinity hidden within His humanity. Only after the Lord Jesus had expressed the truth and done the work of redemption of mankind, did some people discover that His word has authority and power, and only then did they begin to follow Him. Only when the Lord Jesus appeared to the people after He resurrected, did mankind realize that He is the incarnate Christ, the appearance of God. If He hadn't expressed the truth and done His work, no one would have followed Him. If He hadn't born witness to the fact that He is Christ, the appearance of God, no one would have recognized Him. In man's notions and imaginations, they believe that if He is really God incarnate, His flesh should have supernatural qualities: He should be superhuman, with a lofty, powerful stature, and a towering presence, He should not only speak with authority and power, but should also perform

signs and wonders wherever He goes—this is what God become flesh ought to be like. They think if He is ordinary in outward appearance, like any other common man, and has normal humanity, then He is certainly not God's incarnation. Let's recall. When the Lord Jesus was incarnated to speak and do work, no matter how He expressed the truth and God's voice, the Jewish chief priests, scribes, and Pharisees didn't recognize Him. When hearing the disciples bearing witness to the Lord Jesus they even said: Is this not Joseph's son? Is this not a Nazarene? Why would the chief priests, scribes, and Pharisees speak this way of Him? Because the Lord Jesus had normal humanity in outward appearance. He was a normal, average person, and He didn't have a lofty, towering presence, so they didn't accept Him. Actually, insofar as He is the incarnation, He has to have normal humanity by definition, He has to show us that the flesh God clothes Himself in is an ordinary and normal flesh, He appears like a normal human. If God clothed Himself in the flesh of a superhuman, not of a person with normal humanity, then the whole meaning of the incarnation would be lost. So, Christ must have normal humanity. Only in this way can it be proven that He is the Word become flesh.

Let's read some other passages of Almighty God's word: "**The significance of incarnation is that an ordinary, normal man performs the work of God Himself; that is, that God performs His divine work in humanity and thereby vanquishes Satan. Incarnation means that God's Spirit becomes a flesh, that is, God becomes flesh; the work that the flesh does is the work of the Spirit, which is realized in the flesh, expressed by the flesh. No one except God's flesh can fulfill the ministry of the incarnate God; that is, only God's incarnate flesh, this normal humanity—and no one else—can express the divine work. If, during His first coming, God had not possessed normal humanity before the**

age of twenty-nine—if as soon as He was born He could work miracles, if as soon as He learned to speak He could speak the language of heaven, if the moment He first set foot upon the earth He could apprehend all worldly matters, discern every person's thoughts and intentions—such a person could not have been called a normal man, and such flesh could not have been called human flesh. If this were the case with Christ, then the meaning and the essence of God's incarnation would be lost. That He possesses normal humanity proves that He is God incarnated in the flesh; the fact that He undergoes a normal human growth process further demonstrates that He is a normal flesh; moreover, His work is sufficient proof that He is God's Word, God's Spirit, become flesh. God becomes flesh because of the needs of His work; in other words, this stage of work must be done in the flesh, it must be performed in normal humanity. This is the prerequisite for 'the Word become flesh,' for 'the Word's appearance in the flesh,' and it is the true story behind God's two incarnations" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Essence of the Flesh Inhabited by God).

"**If, from the moment of His birth, the incarnate God began His ministry in earnest, performing supernatural signs and wonders, then He would have no corporeal essence. Therefore, His humanity exists for the sake of His corporeal essence; there can be no flesh without humanity, and a person without humanity is not a human being. In this way, the humanity of God's flesh is an intrinsic property of God's incarnate flesh. To say that 'when God becomes flesh He is entirely divine, and not at all human,' is blasphemy, for this statement simply does not exist, and violates the principle of incarnation. … The humanity of God incarnate exists to maintain the normal divine work**

in the flesh; His normal human thinking sustains His normal humanity and all His normal corporeal activities. One could say that His normal human thinking exists in order to sustain all the work of God in the flesh. If this flesh did not possess a normal human mind, then God could not work in the flesh, and what He needs to do in the flesh could never be accomplished. … So the incarnate God must possess a normal human mind, must possess normal humanity, because He must perform His work in the humanity with a normal mind. This is the essence of the work of the incarnate God, the very essence of the incarnate God" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Essence of the Flesh Inhabited by God).

From Almighty God's words we clearly see that God incarnate must have normal humanity, otherwise, He would not be God's incarnation. In outward appearance, the incarnate God looks like an ordinary and normal man, and there is nothing supernatural about His humanity. So, if we measure Christ using our conceptions and imaginings, we will never acknowledge or accept Christ. At most we'll just acknowledge that He is a prophet sent by God, or one whom God uses. If we want to really know Christ, we must study His words and work to see if that which He expresses is God's own voice, if the words He expresses are manifestations of God's disposition and all that God has and is, and see if His work and the truth that He expresses can save mankind. Only then can we know, accept, and obey Christ. If we do not seek the truth, do not investigate God's work, even if we hear Christ's words and see the facts of Christ's work, we will still not know Christ. Even if we are with Christ from morning till night, we'll still treat Him like an ordinary man and will thus resist and condemn Christ. Actually, to acknowledge and accept Christ, all we need to do is recognize God's voice and acknowledge that He does God's work. But to

know Christ's divine substance and thereby achieve true obedience to Christ and love the practical God, we must discover the truth within Christ's words and work, see God's disposition and all that God has and is, see God's holy substance, almightiness, and wisdom, see that God is lovely and appreciate His earnest intentions. Only in this way can we truly obey Christ and worship the practical God in our heart.

We believers all know that the way which the Lord Jesus preached, the word He expressed, the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven which He revealed, and the demands which He made of us humans were all the truth, all God's own voice, and were all manifestations of God's life disposition and all that He has and is. The miracles He performed—healing the sick, casting out demons, calming the wind and sea, feeding five thousand with five loaves of bread and two fish, and raising the dead—were all manifestations of God's own authority and power, which no created man is possessed of or capable of. Those that sought the truth at the time, like Peter, John, Matthew, and Nathanael, recognized from the Lord Jesus' word and work that He is the promised Messiah, and so followed Him and received His salvation. Whereas the Jewish Pharisees, despite hearing the Lord Jesus' sermons and seeing Him perform miracles, still saw Him as just an ordinary person, with no power or stature, and so they dared brazenly resist and condemn Him without the slightest fear. In the end they committed the greatest of sins in nailing the Lord Jesus to the cross. The lesson of the Pharisees calls for deep reflection! This clearly exposes their truth-hating and God-hating antichrist nature, and reveals the foolishness and ignorance of corrupt humankind. At present, the incarnate Almighty God, just like the Lord Jesus, does the work of God Himself within normal humanity. Almighty God expresses all the truths which corrupt humankind requires to be saved, and carries out the work of judgment starting from the

house of God in the last days. Not only does He judge and expose the satanic nature of corrupt mankind and the truth of their corruption, He has also revealed all of the mysteries of God's six-thousand-year management plan of saving mankind, elucidated the path by which mankind can be freed from sin, achieve sanctity, and be saved by God. He has revealed God's inherent righteous disposition, all that God has and is, and God's unique power and authority…. Almighty God's word and work are a complete manifestation of the identity and substance of God Himself. These days, all those that follow Almighty God have heard God's voice in the word and work of Almighty God, have seen the manifestation of God's word in the flesh and come before Almighty God's throne, receiving God's purification and perfection. Those of the religious world who still deny, resist, and condemn Almighty God have made the same mistake as the Jewish Pharisees, treating Christ of the last days, Almighty God, like any other ordinary person, without bothering to put the slightest effort into seeking and studying all the truths which Almighty God has expressed, thus they nailing God to the cross once again and enraging God's disposition. As one can see, if we hold on to our conceptions and imaginations, and don't seek and study the truths which Christ expresses, we will be incapable of recognizing the voice of God expressed by Christ, will be unable to accept and obey Christ's work, and will never receive God's salvation in the last days. If we don't understand the truth of the incarnation, we won't be able to accept and obey God's work, we will condemn Christ and resist God, and we will also be likely to receive God's punishment and curses. So, in our faith, to be saved by God, it is extremely important that we seek the truth and understand the mystery of the incarnation!

—The movie script of The Mystery Of Godliness

Question 2: Why is it that God has to become flesh to do His work of judgment in the last days? In the Age of Law, God used Moses to do His work, so why can't God use man to do His work of judgment in the last days?

Answer: Why it is that God must become flesh to do the work of judgment in the last days is a question with which many who thirst for truth and search for God's appearance are chiefly concerned. It is also a question that relates to whether we can be raptured into the kingdom of heaven. So, it is very important to understand this aspect of the truth. Why is it that God has to incarnate Himself to do His work of judgment in the last days instead of using man to do His work? This is determined by the nature of the work of judgment. Because the work of judgment is God's expression of the truth and expression of His righteous disposition to conquer, purify, and save mankind. Let's read a passage from Almighty God's word.

"**The work of judgment is God's own work, so it must naturally be carried out by God Himself; it cannot be done by man in His stead. Because judgment is the use of the truth to conquer humankind, there is no question that God would still appear in the incarnate image to perform this work among man. That is to say, in the last days, Christ shall use the truth to teach people across the world and make all truths known to them. This is God's work of judgment**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth).

"**In the last days, Christ uses a variety of truths to teach man, to expose the substance of man, and to dissect the words and deeds of man. These words comprise various truths, such as man's duty, how man should obey God, how man should be loyal to God, how man**

ought to live out normal humanity, as well as the wisdom and the disposition of God, and so on. These words are all directed at the substance of man and his corrupt disposition. In particular, the words that expose how man spurns God are spoken in regard to how man is an embodiment of Satan, and an enemy force against God. In undertaking His work of judgment, God does not simply make clear the nature of man with a few words; He exposes, deals with, and prunes over the long term. These methods of exposure, dealing, and pruning cannot be substituted with ordinary words, but with the truth of which man is utterly bereft. Only methods such as these can be called judgment; only through judgment of this kind can man be subdued and thoroughly convinced into submission to God, and moreover gain true knowledge of God. What the work of judgment brings about is man's understanding of the true face of God and the truth about his own rebelliousness. The work of judgment allows man to gain much understanding of the will of God, of the purpose of God's work, and of the mysteries that are incomprehensible to him. It also allows man to recognize and know his corrupt essence and the roots of his corruption, as well as to discover the ugliness of man. These effects are all brought about by the work of judgment, for the essence of this work is actually the work of opening up the truth, the way, and the life of God to all those who have faith in Him. This work is the work of judgment done by God" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth).

From Almighty God's words we see that God's work of judgment in the last days consists of expressing many aspects of the truth, expressing God's disposition, all that God has and is, revealing all the mysteries, judging man's God-resisting and God-betraying satanic nature, exposing

and dissecting corrupt man's speech and behavior, and revealing God's holy and righteous substance and unoffendable disposition to all of mankind. When God's chosen undergo the judgment by God's words, it is as if they are face to face with God, being exposed and judged by Him. When God judges man, He must allow us to see the manifestation of His righteous disposition, as if seeing God's holy substance, as if seeing the great light cast down from the heavens, and to see God's word is like a sharp double-edged sword thrusting into our heart and spirit, causing us to endure unspeakable torment. Only in this way can we come to recognize our own corrupt substance and the truth of our corruption, feel deep humiliation, hide our face in shame, and prostrate ourselves before God in true repentance, and then we will be able to accept the truth and live according to God's word, thoroughly rid ourselves of Satan's influence, and be saved and perfected by God. Such work as the judgment, purification, and salvation of man can only be done by God incarnate personally.

Having experienced the judgment by Almighty God's word, we have all felt how God's holiness and righteous disposition are unoffendable by men. Every letter of God's word is invested with majesty and wrath, each word strikes to the core of our hearts, thoroughly exposing our God-resisting and God-betraying satanic nature, as well as the elements of corrupt disposition buried so deep within our hearts that even we ourselves cannot see them, allowing us to recognize how our nature and substance is full of arrogance, self-righteousness, selfishness, and treachery, how we live according to these things, like living devils roaming the earth, possessing not even the slightest bit of humanity. God finds this abhorrent and detestable. We feel humiliated and wracked with regret. We see our own baseness and evil and know we don't deserve to live before God, so we prostrate on the ground, willing to receive God's salvation. In experiencing

the judgment by Almighty God's word, we truly witness the appearance of God. We see that God's holiness is undefilable and His righteousness is unoffendable. We recognize the earnest intentions and true love with which God endeavors to save mankind and see the truth and substance of our corruption at the hands of Satan. Thus, in our hearts, we begin to feel reverence for God and happily accept the truth and obey God's orchestrations and arrangements. In this way, our corrupt disposition is gradually cleansed. The changes we have attained today are a result of God's incarnation to do the work of judgment. So, only when God's incarnation expresses the truth, expresses God's righteous disposition and all that He has and is to carry out the work of judgment, only then do we see the appearance of the true light, the appearance of God, and begin to have true knowledge of God. Only in this way can we be purified and saved. Apart from Christ, no man can do the work of judgment in the last days. Let's read some passages of Almighty God's word.

Almighty God says, "**No one is more suitable, and qualified, than God in the flesh for the work of judging the corruption of man's flesh. …Satan can only be fully defeated if God in the flesh judges the corruption of mankind. Being the same as man possessed of normal humanity, God in the flesh can directly judge the unrighteousness of man; this is the mark of His innate holiness, and of His extraordinariness. Only God is qualified to, and is in the position to, judge man, for He is possessed of the truth, and righteousness, and so He is able to judge man. Those who are without truth and righteousness are not fit to judge others**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Corrupt Mankind Is More in Need of the Salvation of the Incarnate God).

"**It is precisely because of this judgment that you have been able to see that God is the righteous God, and that God is the holy God; it is precisely because of His holiness and His righteousness that He judges you and unleashes His wrath upon you. Because He can reveal His righteous disposition when He sees the rebelliousness of man, and because He can reveal His holiness when He sees the filth of man, this is enough to show that He is God Himself, who is holy and pristine, and yet lives in the land of filth. If a person wallows in the mire with others, and there is nothing holy about him, and he has no righteous disposition, then he is not qualified to judge man's iniquity, nor is he fit to carry out the judgment of man. If a person were to judge another, would it not be as if they were slapping themselves in the face? How could people who are equally filthy as one another be qualified to judge those who are alike to them? Only the holy God Himself is able to judge the whole of filthy mankind. How could man judge man's sins? How could man see the sins of man, and how could man be qualified to condemn these sins? If God were not qualified to judge the sins of man, then how could He be the righteous God Himself? When people's corrupt dispositions are revealed, God speaks in order to judge people, and only then do people see that He is holy**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. How the Effects of the Second Step of the Work of Conquest Are Achieved).

From Almighty God's word we clearly see that God's work of judgment in the last days must be done through expressing truth, God's righteous disposition, and God's almightiness and wisdom to conquer, purify, and perfect man. God appears Himself to do this work of judgment in the last days. This work marks the beginning of one age and the end of another. This work must be done by God's incarnation, no man can do this

work in His stead. Why is it that many believe that God should use men to do all His work, instead of being incarnated to do the work Himself? This is unbelievable! Does mankind really welcome God's coming? Why is it that there are always so many people wishing that God will use men to do His work? This is because men do work in accordance with their conceptions, they do things just how people think they ought to be done. So, most people easily worship man, hold man up on a pedestal and follow man. However, God's way of working is never in keeping with man's conceptions and imagination, He doesn't do things as man thinks they ought to be done. So we have difficulty being compatible with God. God's substance is the truth, the way, and the life. God's disposition is holy, righteous and unoffendable. Corrupt man, however, has been thoroughly corrupted by Satan, and is full of satanic disposition; they have a hard time being compatible with God. So, we find it difficult to accept the work of God's incarnation and are unwilling to study and observe, instead worshiping man and putting blind faith in his work, accepting and following it, as if it were God's work. What is the problem here? You could say, mankind doesn't have the slightest clue what it means to believe in God and experience His work, so, God's work in the last days must be done through the expression of the truth by the incarnation to resolve all of corrupt mankind's problems. As for some people's question as to why God doesn't use man to do His work of judgment in the last days, does this still require an answer? Man's substance is man, man does not possess divine substance, so man is incapable of expressing the truth, expressing God's disposition, all that God has and is, and cannot do the work of salvation of mankind. Not to mention, we humans have all been corrupted by Satan and have a sinful nature, so what qualification do we have to judge other men? Since filthy and corrupt man is incapable of purifying and saving himself, how does he expect to purify

and save others? Corrupt man would only meet with disgrace because others were unwilling to accept their judgment. Only God is righteous and holy, and only God is the truth, the way, and the life. So, God's work of judgment in the last days must be performed by His incarnation. No man is capable of such work, this is fact. Could we still not understand this?

Now why did God use man to do His work in the Age of Law? This is because the work of the Age of Law and that of the judgment of the last days are of a different nature. In the Age of Law, men were the newborn human race, they had been only minimally corrupted by Satan. Jehovah God's work consisted mainly in promulgating laws and commandments to provide a guideline for early man as to how to live on earth. This stage of work was not aimed at changing man's disposition, it did not require expressing more truth. God merely needed to use man to convey the laws He had established to the Israelites, so that the Israelites would know how to abide by the laws, worship Jehovah God, and live a normal life on earth. Having done so, that stage of the work was thus completed. So, God could use Moses to complete the work of the Age of Law, He didn't need to be incarnated to carry out the work personally. By contrast, God's work of judgment in the last days is aimed at saving mankind, who have been profoundly corrupted by Satan. Releasing a few passages of God's word and promulgating a few laws just won't suffice in this case. A large amount of truth must be expressed. God's inherent disposition, all that God has and is must be expressed completely, the truth, the way, and the life must be opened up for mankind, just as if God were to reveal Himself face-to-face with mankind, allowing them to understand the truth and know God, and in so doing, He thoroughly purifies, saves and perfects mankind. God must do this Himself personally through incarnation, no man can do this work in His stead. God can use prophets to release a few passages of His word, but God

does not allow the prophets to express God's inherent disposition, all that God has and is, or express the entirety of the truth, because corrupt mankind is not worthy of doing so. If God used man to express the entirety of His disposition and truth, he would be likely to humiliate God, because man has a corrupt disposition, he is liable to betray his own conceptions and illusions, there must be impurities in his work, which could easily humiliate God and influence the overall effectiveness of God's work. Also, we are apt to take all that man has and is for all that God has and is, taking man's impurities in his work for truth. This leads to a misunderstanding and humiliation of God. Also, if God were to use man to express the entirety of His disposition and truth, because of man's impurities, we would be unwilling to accept and may even resist. Satan would then find fault and make accusations, fanning the flame of our discontent with God, fomenting revolts, and instigating us to establish our own independent kingdom. This is the end result of man doing God's work. Especially, in the case of God's salvation of profoundly corrupted man in the last days, men do not easily accept and obey the work of God's incarnation. So if God used humans to do this work, men would be much less likely to accept and obey. Are these not the plain facts? Look at the elders and pastors of the religious world, is their resistance and condemnation of the work of God's incarnation any different from the way the Jewish chief priests and Pharisees resisted the Lord Jesus before? God's salvation of corrupt mankind is no easy task. We must understand how God thinks!

On the one hand, God incarnate's work of judgment in the last days is to judge, purify and save mankind, on the other hand, and more importantly, God does His work through expression of the truth and expression of God's disposition and all that He has and is to allow all of mankind to truly know

and understand God, and see the appearance of God in the flesh. Let's read some passages of Almighty God's word.

"**For all of those who live in the flesh, changing their disposition requires goals to pursue, and knowing God requires witnessing the real deeds and the real face of God. Both can only be achieved by God's incarnate flesh, and both can only be accomplished by the normal and real flesh. This is why the incarnation is necessary, and why it is needed by all corrupt mankind. Since people are required to know God, the images of the vague and supernatural Gods must be dispelled from their hearts, and since they are required to cast off their corrupt disposition, they must first know their corrupt disposition. If only man does the work to dispel the images of the vague Gods from people's hearts, then he will fail to achieve the proper effect. The images of the vague Gods in people's hearts cannot be exposed, cast off, or completely expelled by words alone. In doing so, ultimately it would still not be possible to dispel these deep-rooted things from people. Only by replacing these vague and supernatural things with the practical God and the true image of God, and making people gradually know them, can the due effect be achieved. … Only God Himself can do His own work, and no one else can do this work on His behalf. No matter how rich the language of man is, he is incapable of articulating the reality and normality of God. Man can only know God more practically, and can only see Him more clearly, if God personally works among man and completely shows forth His image and His being. This effect cannot be achieved by any human being of flesh**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Corrupt Mankind Is More in Need of the Salvation of the Incarnate God).

"**Man's imaginings are, after all, empty, and cannot replace the true face of God; the inherent disposition of God, and the work of God Himself, cannot be impersonated by man. The invisible God in heaven and His work can only be brought to earth by God incarnate who personally does His work among man. This is the most ideal way for God to appear to man, in which man sees God and comes to know the true face of God, and it cannot be achieved by a non-incarnate God**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Corrupt Mankind Is More in Need of the Salvation of the Incarnate God).

"**God's arrival in the flesh is primarily meant to enable people to see the real deeds of God, to give fleshly form to the formless Spirit, and to allow people to see and touch Him. In this way, those who are made complete by Him will live Him out, will be gained by Him, and will be after His heart. If God only spoke in heaven and had not actually come onto the earth, then people would yet be incapable of knowing God; they would only be able to preach God's deeds using empty theory and would not have God's words as reality. God has come onto the earth primarily to act as an exemplar and a model for those whom He is to gain; only thus can people actually know God, touch God, and see Him, and only then can they truly be gained by God**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. You Should Know That the Practical God Is God Himself).

"**The incarnate God brings to an end the age when only the back of Jehovah appeared to mankind, and He also concludes the age of mankind's belief in the vague God. In particular, the work of the last incarnate God brings all mankind into an age that is more realistic, more practical, and more beautiful. He not only concludes the age of law and doctrine but, more importantly, He reveals to mankind a God**

who is real and normal, who is righteous and holy, who unlocks the work of the management plan and who demonstrates the mysteries and destination of mankind, who created mankind and brings to an end the management work, and who has remained hidden for thousands of years. He brings the age of vagueness to a complete end, He concludes the age in which the whole of mankind wished to seek God's face but was unable to, He ends the age in which the whole of mankind served Satan, and He leads the whole of mankind all the way into a completely new era. All this is the outcome of the work of God in the flesh in place of God's Spirit" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Corrupt Mankind Is More in Need of the Salvation of the Incarnate God).

God's work of judgment in the last days through incarnation is truly meaningful. God has been incarnated on earth in the last days, living amongst men and proclaiming His word to humankind, expressing His own disposition and all that He has and is to the masses. Who God loves and who God detests, toward whom God's fury is directed, whom He punishes, His emotional state, His demands of men, His intention for men, man's ideal outlook on life, values, etc., He informs us of all these things, allowing us to have clear goals in life so that we needn't cast about aimlessly in vague religious pursuit. The appearance of God's incarnation has thoroughly concluded the age when "only the back of Jehovah appeared to mankind," and has concluded the age of man's belief in the vague God. All those who have gone through Almighty God's word and work in the last days have a common experience: Even though we have undergone God's judgment and chastisement, have endured all manner of trials and refinements, and have been profoundly tormented by the brutal, savage pursuit and persecution of the great red dragon, we have seen God's righteous disposition come upon us, we have seen God's majesty and wrath

and His almightiness and wisdom, we have seen the manifestation of all that God has and is, just as if we were seeing God Himself. Though we haven't seen God's spiritual body, God's inherent disposition, His almightiness and wisdom, and all that He has and is, have been revealed to us in full, as if God had come before us, face-to-face, allowing us to truly know God and have a heart that fears God so that we may obey whatever plans God has for us until death. We all feel that in God's word and work we see and know God in a practical and real way, and have thoroughly cast off all conceptions and illusions and become ones truly knowing God. Before, we thought of God's disposition as loving and compassionate, believing God would continually pardon and forgive the sins of man. But after having gone through the judgment of Almighty God's word, we have come to truly understand that God's disposition is not only compassionate and loving, it is also righteous, majestic, and wrathful. Anyone who offends His disposition will be punished. Thus, we can revere God, accept the truth and live by God's word. Through experiencing Almighty God's work of judgment in the last days, we have all really and practically come to understand that God's disposition is holy, righteous, and unoffendable, have experienced God's compassion and love, truly come to appreciate God's almightiness and wisdom, recognized how God humbly hides Himself, and come to know His earnest intentions and many lovable qualities: His emotional state, His faithfulness, His beauty and goodness, His authority, sovereignty, His scrutiny of everything, etc. All that God has and is has appeared before us, as if seeing God Himself, allowing us to know God face-to-face. We no longer believe in and follow God based upon our conceptions and illusions, but feel true reverence and adoration for God, and truly obey and rely upon God. We have really recognized that if God hadn't been personally incarnated in the flesh to express the truth and do the

work of judgment, we never would know God, and would be incapable of ridding ourselves of sin and attaining sanctity. So no matter how you look at it, God's work of judgment in the last days must be done by God incarnate Himself, no one can stand in His stead. Given man's conceptions and illusions, if God were to use man to do the work of judgment in the last days, He wouldn't be able to achieve the desired effect.

—The movie script of The Mystery Of Godliness

Question 3: You say that Christ is the truth, the way, and the life. This is the Holy Spirit's testimony and is unquestionable. But the Bible also has recorded the words of some great spiritual adepts and apostles of the Lord Jesus. Do their expressions count as God's word? If what they say also really counts as God's word, then are they not also the truth, the way, and the life? As far as I can tell, there's no difference between their words and those of the Lord Jesus, all count as God's word. Why don't they count as the truth, the way, and the life?

Answer: If believers can truly recognize that Christ is the truth, the way, and the life, this is truly precious, and shows that such believers have a true knowledge of Christ's substance. Only such a person can be said to really know God. Christ is the practical God incarnate. Only those that recognize Christ and can obey Him really know God because the truth, the way, and the life all arise from God, all come from the expressions of the incarnate Christ. Other than Christ, no one can be said to be the truth, the way, and the life, very few people understand this. God uses man's ability to recognize God's incarnation as the standard by which He tests man. Only those that meet this standard in their belief may attain God's commendation. All those that accept and obey God's incarnation are the overcomers who are raptured before God to be first perfected. Those that cannot accept and obey Christ will be sent to endure the suffering of the calamities because they do not recognize God's incarnation and are considered foolish virgins. Just as when the Lord Jesus came, He brought all those lovers of truth and those that accepted His word and truly followed Him atop the mountain, guiding and teaching them personally, while paying not the slightest bit of attention to those of the religious world and those that only believed in God for their own personal benefit because they believed only in the vague God of the high heavens and didn't accept God's

incarnation. They were blind in their inability to recognize God. So only those that accept and obey the incarnate Christ will receive God's commendation and be perfected by Him. Why is it that only Christ is the truth, the way, and the life? Let's read a passage of Almighty God's word: "**The way of life is not something that anyone can possess, nor is it something anyone can attain easily. This is because life can only come from God, which is to say, only God Himself possesses the essence of life, and only God Himself has the way of life. And so only God is the source of life, and the ever-flowing wellspring of living water of life. Ever since He created the world, God has done much work involving the vitality of life, has done much work that brings life to man, and has paid a great price so that man might gain life. This is because God Himself is eternal life, and God Himself is the way by which man is resurrected. … only God possesses the way of life. Since His life is immutable, it is thus eternal; since only God is the way of life, God Himself is thus the way of eternal life**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life). From Almighty God's word we see that the truth, the way, and the life all come from God. Only God Himself possesses the way of life. The Bible says, "**In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God**" (Jhn 1:1). The Word is God. The Word is God's word. The Word is the truth, the way, and the life. The Word becoming flesh refers to God's Spirit materialized in the flesh, that is, the truth, the way, and the life have all come in the flesh. Just as Almighty God says, "**The Word has become flesh and the Spirit of truth has been realized in the flesh—that all the truth, the way, and the life has come in the flesh, God's Spirit has really arrived on earth and the Spirit has come in the flesh. …**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and

Work of God. Practice (4)). God's two incarnations are both testimony to the fact that He is the truth, the way, and the life. This gave man a profound revelation, it showed them that only Christ is the truth, the way, and the life Christ's words and work, all that He has and is are the truth, the way, and the life. This is Christ's substance. When Christ expresses God's word, He does so as God Himself doing God's work, concluding the previous age and initiating a new one, doing the work of an entire age for all of mankind. The word of God that Christ expresses is the entirety of His word in one stage of the work. It is truly the expression of God's disposition, all that God has and is, the mystery of God's management plan, and God's demands and intention for mankind. All of His word is the truth. Not only can it constitute man's life, it can also supply man with life. Just as when the Lord Jesus came, He expressed all the truth that man required in the Age of Grace, allowing man to confess his sins, repent and return before God, qualifying him to pray to God and come before God to enjoy His grace, and see His compassion and love. This was the effect achieved by the work of redemption. The Lord Jesus' work allowed man's sins to be forgiven, redeeming men from sin. The Lord Jesus carried out a stage of work of redeeming mankind, initiating the Age of Grace and concluding the Age of Law. The incarnate Almighty God of the last days has come, expressed all the truths that purify and save mankind, and carried out the work of judgment beginning from the house of God, allowing man to see God's righteous disposition and almightiness and wisdom, purifying and changing man's life disposition, so that man may fear God and shun evil, and thoroughly wrest themselves from the influence of Satan, to return before God and be gained by God. Almighty God's work initiates the Age of Kingdom and concludes the Age of Grace. This shows us that all that Christ says, does, expresses and manifests is all the truth. Only Christ can point

man toward the right way, and provide man with life supply and salvation, no man possesses or can express such things. Christ is the wellspring of man's life, He is the appearance of God. He is the truth, the way, and the life, man's only redemption and salvation. Apart from Christ, no man possesses the truth, the way, and the life, this fact is plain to see!

Christ is God's incarnation, so He has divine substance, whereas the prophets and apostles, because they are not God's incarnation, only possess human substance, so we can't put the prophets and apostles on the same level as Christ. The incarnate God is the embodiment of truth, and the wellspring of God's word, so He can express truth directly to supply man with life, whereas the prophets and apostles can only pass on God's word, or, with the enlightenment of the Holy Spirit, speak words that accord with the truth, but their substance is human, they are not God incarnate. So they certainly do not have truth, and cannot express truth. They are just those that God uses to water, supply and guide His chosen, they are fulfilling their human duties, they certainly aren't qualified to directly speak the Holy Spirit's voice. Let's read some other passages of Almighty God's word:

"**The word of God cannot be made out to be the word of man, and still less can one make the word of man to be the word of God. A man used by God is not the incarnate God, and the incarnate God is not a man used by God. In this, there is an essential difference. … The words of God incarnate open up a new age, guide all of mankind, reveal mysteries, and show man the direction he is to take in the new age. The enlightenment obtained by man is but simple instructions for practice or knowledge. It cannot guide all of mankind into a new age or reveal the mysteries of God Himself. When all is said and done, God is God, and man is man. God has the essence of God, and man has the essence of man. If man views the words spoken by God as simple enlightenment**

by the Holy Spirit, and takes the words of the apostles and prophets as words personally spoken by God, that would be man's mistake" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Preface).

"**This is to say that man's fellowship differs from the word of God. What people fellowship conveys their individual insights and experience, expressing their insights and experience on the basis of God's work. Their responsibility is to find out, after God works or speaks, what of it they ought to practice or enter into, and then to deliver it to followers. …All God expresses is what He Himself is, and this is unattainable by man—that is, beyond the reach of man's thinking. He expresses His work of leading all mankind, and this is unrelated to the details of human experience, but is concerned instead with His own management. What man expresses is his experience, while what God expresses is His being, which is His inherent disposition, beyond the reach of man. Man's experience is his insight and knowledge acquired on the basis of God's expression of His being. Such insight and knowledge are called man's being, and the basis of their expression is man's inherent disposition and caliber—this is why they are also called man's being**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Work and Man's Work).

"**Take Paul and Peter, for example. They did not have their own personal experiences before Jesus led the path. It was only after Jesus led the path that they experienced the words spoken by Jesus, and the path led by Him; from this they gained many experiences, and they wrote the epistles**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Concerning Appellations and Identity).

Almighty God's word clearly elucidates the difference between the speech and substance of men God uses and those of Christ Himself. Christ is the direct expression of the Holy Spirit, so all that Christ expresses is God's word and is truth. As for the apostles and spiritual adepts, no matter whether it's their letters, speech or writings, they only reflect their personal experience and understanding of God's word. Despite the fact that most of what they say is in keeping with the truth, it can't be called God's word. There is still a wide chasm between such writings and the truths that Christ expresses. People believe that what they say is in keeping with the truth because they have received the enlightenment and illumination of the Holy Spirit and have experience and understanding of God's word. But without Christ's expression of the truth, the apostles and spiritual adepts would have no experience or understanding of God's word, which is to say that Christ's word and work serve as the foundation upon which their work is built. Only once Christ had expressed the truth, could the apostles have experience and understanding of it. So, in the context of God's work, only Christ can express God's word. The words of those that God uses are only reflective of their personal understanding and experience, they are testimonies to and propagation of the word which Christ has expressed. None of the knowledge of which they discuss can exceed the scope of Christ's word, and nothing of what they say can achieve the level of profundity of Christ's own word. So no matter how much their word coincides with the truth, it can never achieve the substance of the truth of God's word. That's the fact.

The truth which Christ expresses is inexhaustible. It is the eternal font of living water of life for man. Despite the fact that the prophets receive God's instruction and convey His word, but the word of God which they convey is quite different from the word God expresses in His work. The prophets can not do God's work, they can only convey God's word in

special circumstances. They express warnings to God’s chosen people in the context of special circumstances or events, they also communicate exhortation, consolation, and prophecies to guide the people of Israel. The prophets are merely the people that God used in the Age of Law as He raised up in different eras. They were able to convey God’s word through Jehovah God’s instruction. They were merely helping God to complete some minor works, all of what they did constituted fulfillment of their human duties. Without God's instruction, they would lose the function to convey God’s word. This proves that the prophets do not have the truth, the way of life, This is undeniable. When God does the work of initiating an age, all of the work is done by God's incarnation directly, and He expresses all of God’s will for mankind and His work to be done. Which is to say, only Christ can directly express God’s word, only Christ can fulfill the work of “The Word Appears in the Flesh.” The fragmented dispatches of the prophets do not represent God’s age-initiating work. This is unquestionable. No matter how many epistles or tomes the apostles and spiritual adepts wrote, in the end, what they expressed only amounts to their personal experience and understanding, their individual testimony, it cannot be compared to Christ’s expression of God’s word. So no matter whether it’s the people that God uses, the apostles, or spiritual adepts, none of them count as the truth, the way, and the life, they themselves wouldn’t even dare say they are the truth, the way, and the life, and they certainly wouldn’t dare say that the words they spoke were God’s words or the truth. We can all see for ourselves, be it the apostles or the spiritual adepts, no matter how many years they work, there is a limit to what they can do. They can’t save or perfect mankind. Only Christ can save and perfect mankind, this is fact. So only Christ is the truth, the way, and the life. None of the apostles or spiritual adepts are the truth, the way, and the life.

—The movie script of The Mystery Of Godliness

Footnotes:

a. The original text does not contain the phrase “walking upon.”

Question 4: I read Almighty God's words, "Corrupt Mankind Is More in Need of the Salvation of the Incarnate God." I think this is a fantastic passage of God's word, very practical, and very important. With regard to why corrupt mankind must receive the salvation of God's incarnation, this is an aspect of the truth that most people urgently need to understand. Please commune with us a little more on this.

Answer: "Corrupt Mankind Is More in Need of the Salvation of the Incarnate God," this passage of God's word completely explains the meaning of the salvation of corrupt mankind by God's incarnation. Let's read from Almighty God's word.

Almighty God says, "**It is precisely because Satan has corrupted the flesh of man, and man is the one who God intends to save, that God must assume the flesh to do battle with Satan and to personally shepherd man. Only this is beneficial to His work**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Restoring the Normal Life of Man and Taking Him to a Wonderful Destination).

"**The flesh of man has been corrupted by Satan, and it has been most deeply blinded, and profoundly harmed. The most fundamental reason why God works personally in the flesh is because the object of His salvation is man, who is of the flesh, and because Satan also uses the flesh of man to disturb the work of God. The battle with Satan is actually the work of conquering man, and at the same time, man is also the object of God's salvation. In this way, the work of God incarnate is essential. Satan corrupted the flesh of man, and man became the embodiment of Satan, and became the object to be defeated by God. In this way, the work of doing battle with Satan and saving mankind occurs on earth, and God must become human in order to do battle**

with Satan. This is work of the utmost practicality" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Corrupt Mankind Is More in Need of the Salvation of the Incarnate God).

"**The flesh of man has been most profoundly corrupted, and it has become something which opposes God, so much so that it even openly opposes and denies the existence of God. This corrupt flesh is simply too intractable, and nothing is more difficult to deal with or change than the corrupt disposition of the flesh. Satan comes into the flesh of man to stir up disturbances, and it uses the flesh of man to disturb the work of God and impair the plan of God, and thus man has become Satan, and become the enemy of God. For man to be saved, he must first be conquered. It is because of this that God rises to the challenge and comes into the flesh to do the work He intends to do, and to do battle with Satan. His aim is the salvation of man, who has been corrupted, and the defeat and annihilation of Satan, which rebels against Him. He defeats Satan through His work of conquering man, while at the same time He saves corrupt mankind. Thus, it is a work that achieves two aims at once**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Corrupt Mankind Is More in Need of the Salvation of the Incarnate God).

"**When God is working in the flesh, He is actually doing battle with Satan in the flesh. When He works in the flesh, He is doing His work in the spiritual realm, and He makes the whole of His work in the spiritual realm real on earth. The one who is conquered is man, man who is disobedient to Him, and the one who is defeated is the embodiment of Satan (of course, this is also man), who is in enmity to Him, and the one who is ultimately saved is also man. In this way, it is even more necessary for God to become a human who has the outer**

shell of a creation, so that He is able to do real battle with Satan, to conquer man, who is disobedient to Him and possessed of the same outer shell as Him, and to save man, who is of the same outer shell as Him and has been harmed by Satan. His enemy is man, the object of His conquest is man, and the object of His salvation is man, who was created by Him. So He must become human, and in this way, His work becomes much easier. He is able to defeat Satan and conquer mankind, and, moreover, is able to save mankind" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Corrupt Mankind Is More in Need of the Salvation of the Incarnate God).

From Almighty God's word we recognize that the reason corrupt mankind must be saved by God's incarnation is that man's flesh has been thoroughly deceived and corrupted by Satan. All of mankind lives under Satan's domain, they can't distinguish between good and evil, beauty and ugliness. They can't tell the difference between the positive and negative. They live according to Satan's philosophy, law and nature, they are arrogant, self-righteous, reckless, and lawless. They are all embodiments of Satan and have become degenerates conspiring with Satan to resist God, yet they don't realize that. God is the Creator, only God thoroughly knows humanity's true nature, to what degree they've been corrupted. And only God can expose and dissect man's satanic nature and corrupt disposition, can tell man how to live and act as men, and can thoroughly conquer, purify, and save mankind. Other than God, no created man can see through to the essence of man's corruption and certainly cannot give man the truth of how to act as men. So, if God wishes to wrest the deeply corrupt mankind from the clutches of Satan and save them, then only if God's incarnation personally expresses the truth and God's disposition and tells man of all the truths which He must possess, allowing man to understand

the truth, know God, and see through Satan's evil plots and various fallacies, only then may man forsake and reject Satan and return before God. Also, the work of God's incarnation exposes all kinds of men. because men are all arrogant and refuse to give in. When God is incarnated to express the truth, men invariably respond with their conceptions, resistance and even war. As such, the truth of corrupt mankind's resistance to and betrayal of God is fully exposed and God conducts His judgment of man based upon the corruption they reveal and their true nature. Only in this way, can God's conquest, purification, and perfection of mankind be carried out smoothly. Through the judgment by God's words, man is gradually conquered and purified. When man is thoroughly conquered, he begins to obey the incarnate God, he begins to accept and obey God's judgment and chastisement and experience God's work, he resolves to seek the truth and never again live by Satan's philosophy and rules. When man lives entirely according to God's word, then God has thoroughly defeated Satan and corrupt man serves as the spoils of His victory against Satan. In essence, God wrests the corrupt mankind from the grips of Satan. Only the work of God incarnate can have such an effect. This is the absolute necessity of God's being incarnated to save mankind, and only the incarnate God can thoroughly conquer and save mankind. The people that God uses are incapable of doing the work of redeeming and saving mankind.

Only if God is incarnated and comes personally to work among men, expressing truth to address man's corruption, nature and substance, can man be purified and saved. God's incarnation is what we corrupt humans most need. If we only believe in the God of the high heavens and only understand and talk about the empty theories of the religious world, we will never know God and will never be saved by God. Corrupt man truly needs God to become flesh to judge and purify him personally if he wants to be saved. In

the course of the incarnate God's interaction with man, He allows man to understand and know God face-to-face. Because the real seekers of the truth accept the judgment and purification of Christ of the last days, they naturally are able to obey God and feel love in their heart for God and be thoroughly rescued from the domain of Satan. Is this not the best way for God to save and perfect mankind? Because God is incarnated in the flesh, we have had the opportunity to come face to face with God and experience His real work, and have had the opportunity to receive the supply of God's accurate word and be shepherded and watered by Him directly so that we begin to rely upon God, obey God, and truly love Him. If God didn't become flesh to do the work of mankind's salvation, this practical effect could not be achieved. Almighty God says, "**The best thing about His work in the flesh is that He can leave accurate words and exhortations, and His specific will for mankind to those who follow Him, so that afterward His followers can more accurately and more concretely pass on all of His work in the flesh, and His will for the whole of mankind, to those who accept this way. Only the work of God in the flesh among man truly accomplishes the fact of God's being together and living together with man. Only this work fulfills man's desire to behold the face of God, witness the work of God, and hear the personal word of God**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Corrupt Mankind Is More in Need of the Salvation of the Incarnate God). "**The work that is of greatest value to corrupt man is that which provides accurate words, clear goals to pursue, and which can be seen and touched. Only realistic work and timely guidance are suited to man's tastes, and only real work can save man from his corrupt and depraved disposition. This can only be achieved by the incarnate God; only the incarnate God can save man from his formerly corrupt and depraved**

disposition" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Corrupt Mankind Is More in Need of the Salvation of the Incarnate God). "**Therefore, corrupt mankind is more in need of the salvation of the incarnate God, and is more in need of the direct work of the incarnate God. Mankind needs the incarnate God to shepherd him, support him, water him, feed him, judge and chastise him, and he needs more grace and greater redemption from the incarnate God. Only God in the flesh can be the confidant of man, the shepherd of man, the very present help of man, and all of this is the necessity of the incarnation both today and in times past**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Corrupt Mankind Is More in Need of the Salvation of the Incarnate God).

When God becomes flesh to save corrupt mankind, He can use the language of men to clearly tell mankind of God's demands, His will, His disposition and all that He has and is. In this way, without having to cast about and search, man can understand God's will clearly, know God's demands and the way in which they ought to practice. They can also, as such, have a practical understanding and knowledge of God. Just as in the Age of Grace, Peter asked the Lord Jesus, "Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times?" (Mat 18:21). Jesus told Peter directly: "**I say not to you, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven**" (Mat 18:22). From this we can see that the incarnate Lord Jesus fed and supported men whenever and wherever He went, giving man the most practical and clear supply. In the last days, Almighty God has been incarnated amongst men, expressing the truth to address man's actual situation, expressing God's disposition and all that God has and is to support and supply mankind, pointing out all of the inaccuracies and fallacies within man's belief in God, informing man of God's will and His

demands, giving men the most practical and accurate life supply and sustenance. For instance, when we live in rebellion and resistance of God without knowing it, God's word directly exposes and judges us, allowing us to see, in God's word, how our very satanic nature is against God. When we follow God for our own personal gain and are self-righteous in so doing, God exposes our inadequacies and tells us what beliefs we must hold as followers of God. When we misunderstand God in our experience of His judgment, God's word reminds us of the earnest intentions with which God saves and judges mankind, resolving our misunderstandings of God, etc. All of God's chosen have deeply experienced how the incarnate God is constantly helping and supplying us so that we needn't cast about and search. All we need to do is read more of Almighty God's word to gain God's most practical feeding and watering. Through the word God expresses, we gain some true understanding of God's will, His disposition and all that He has and is and through this understanding, we come to know how to pursue in such a way as to live out a true life and learn how to see through Satan's dastardly plots, clearly seeing how we ourselves have been corrupted to the core by Satan, and in so doing, slowly casting off our sin and Satan's dark influence. As a result, our life disposition changes and we set foot on the right way, living out the reality of truth. God's incarnation has made all of this possible.

God has been incarnated to do work and express His word, allowing man to attain the most practical life supply and sustenance. Despite the fact that man has many conceptions regarding God incarnate's work of judgment, God has brought man the way of life and the everlasting salvation, and man has come to depend upon Him! Let's read Almighty God's word,

"**There is no way to imagine or measure the work He does in the flesh, for His flesh is unlike that of any fleshly human being; although the outer shell is identical, the essence is not the same. His flesh engenders many notions among man about God, yet His flesh can also allow man to acquire much knowledge, and can even conquer any person possessed of a similar outer shell. For He is not merely human, but is God with the outer shell of a human, and none can completely fathom or understand Him**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Corrupt Mankind Is More in Need of the Salvation of the Incarnate God).

"**It is because of the work of God incarnate that God becomes a flesh with a tangible form, and who can be seen and touched by man. He is not a formless Spirit, but a flesh that man can see and come into contact with. However, most of the Gods people believe in are fleshless deities that are formless, which are also of a free form. In this way, the incarnate God has become the enemy of most of those who believe in God, and those who cannot accept the fact of God's incarnation have, similarly, become the adversaries of God. … Though most people have become the enemies of God because of this flesh, when He concludes His work, those who are against Him will not only cease to be His enemies, but on the contrary will become His witnesses. They will become the witnesses that have been conquered by Him, witnesses that are compatible with Him and inseparable from Him. He shall cause man to know the importance of His work in the flesh to man, and man shall know the importance of this flesh to the meaning of man's existence, shall know His real value to the growth of man's life, and, moreover, shall know that this flesh will become a living fountain of life from which man cannot bear to part**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance

and Work of God. Corrupt Mankind Is More in Need of the Salvation of the Incarnate God).

Despite the fact that God has taken the form of an ordinary Son of man in His incarnation in the last days to save and perfect mankind, despite His not performing signs and wonders, and not possessing superhuman qualities or a large stature and His being the target of man's conceptions, their denial, resistance, and rejection, the truth that Christ expresses and the work of judgment which He carries out have given man a supply of God's word, and allowed them to attain the truth and see the appearance of God. Though we have not seen God's real person, we have seen His inherent disposition, and His holy substance, which is just the same as if we had seen His real person. We have seen God living amongst us really and actually. We really feel that we have been raptured before the throne, experiencing God's work face to face with God, and enjoying the supply of living water of life which flows from the throne, and begin to truly love and obey God. Having experienced God's work up until now, we've all realized that Christ of the last days is corrupt mankind's greatest salvation. He is the only path toward knowledge of God and receiving God's commendation! Let's read Almighty God's word.

Almighty God says, "**This time around, God comes to do work not in a spiritual body, but in a very ordinary one. Moreover, not only is it the body of God's second incarnation, it is also the body through which God returns to the flesh. It is a very ordinary flesh. You cannot see anything that makes Him stand out from others, but you can gain from Him previously unheard-of truths. This insignificant flesh is what embodies all the words of truth from God, undertakes God's work in the last days, and expresses the whole of God's disposition for man to understand. Do you not desire greatly to see the God in heaven? Do you**

not desire greatly to understand the God in heaven? Do you not desire greatly to see the destination of mankind? He will tell you all these secrets—secrets that no man has been able to tell you, and He will also tell you of the truths that you do not understand. He is your gate into the kingdom, and your guide into the new age. … The work of God in the last days is to allow man to see the God in heaven living among men on earth, and to enable man to know, obey, revere, and love God. This is why He has returned to the flesh for a second time. Though what man sees this day is a God that is the same as man, a God with a nose and two eyes, and an unremarkable God, in the end, God will show you that if this man did not exist, heaven and earth would undergo a tremendous change; if this man did not exist, the heavens would grow dim, the earth would be plunged into chaos, and all mankind would live amid famine and plagues. He will show you that if God incarnate did not come to save you in the last days, then God would have long ago destroyed all mankind in hell; if this flesh did not exist, then you would forever be arch-sinners, and you would be corpses evermore. You should know that if this flesh did not exist, all mankind would face an ineluctable calamity and find it impossible to escape the even more severe punishment that God metes out to mankind in the last days. Had this ordinary flesh not been born, you would all be in a state where you beg for life without being able to live and pray for death without being able to die; if this flesh did not exist, then you would not be able to gain the truth and come before the throne of God today, but rather, you would be punished by God because of your grievous sins. Did you know that were it not for the return of God to the flesh, none would have a chance at salvation; and were it not for the coming of this flesh, God would have long ago put an end to the age of old? This being so, are

you still able to reject the second incarnation of God? Since you can derive so many benefits from this ordinary man, why would you not gladly accept Him?" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Did You Know? God Has Done a Great Thing Among Men).

"**The fact that you have arrived at today is thanks to this flesh. It is because God lives in the flesh that you have the chance to survive. All this good fortune has been gained on account of this ordinary man. Not only this, but in the end, every nation shall worship this ordinary man, as well as give thanks to and obey this insignificant man, because it is the truth, the life, and the way He brought that has saved all mankind, eased the conflict between man and God, shortened the distance between them, and opened up a connection between the thoughts of God and man. It is also He who has obtained even greater glory for God. Is an ordinary man such as this unworthy of your trust and adoration? Is such an ordinary flesh unfit to be called Christ? Can such an ordinary man not become the expression of God among men? Does such a man, who has spared mankind from disaster, not deserve your love and your desire to hold on to Him? If you reject the truths expressed from His mouth and detest His existence among you, then what will become of you in the end?**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Did You Know? God Has Done a Great Thing Among Men).

"**Without the work of Jesus, mankind could not have come down from the cross, but without the incarnation of today, those who come down from the cross could never gain God's approval or enter into the new age. Without the coming of this ordinary man, you would never have the opportunity to see the true countenance of God, nor would you be qualified to, for you are all objects that should have long ago**

been destroyed. Because of the coming of the second incarnation of God, God has forgiven you and shown you mercy. Regardless, the words I must leave you with in the end are still these: This ordinary man, who is God incarnate, is of vital importance to you. This is the great thing that God has already done among men" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Did You Know? God Has Done a Great Thing Among Men).

—The movie script of The Mystery Of Godliness

Question 5: Almighty God has now become flesh and has come down to the earth. In the Lord's prayer, it says: "**Your kingdom come, Your will be done in earth, as it is in heaven**" (Mat 6:10). Aren't these words fulfilled in the work of Almighty God? Is the prophecy of "**the tabernacle of God is with men**" from the Book of Revelation related to Almighty God coming among mankind? What is the deeper meaning behind God becoming flesh in the last days?

Answer: These questions you're bringing up are the main concerns for most people. Since God has already come, all of His promises will be fulfilled. The coming of Almighty God began the Age of Kingdom and entirely ended the old age. Almighty God came in secret to do His work of judgment and chastisement, and has already made a group of overcomers before the catastrophe. His great work has been accomplished, and soon He will send down the great catastrophe and openly appear to all nations and all peoples. This proves that Almighty God has gained His kingdom and has come down to earth. The Lord Jesus taught people in the Lord's Prayer: "**After this manner therefore pray you: Our Father which are in heaven, Hallowed be your name. Your kingdom come, Your will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For your is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen**" (Mat 6:9-13). These words have already begun to be fulfilled, allowing people to see that God's tabernacle is on earth. The group of overcomers that God has made are those who will rule as kings alongside God in the Millennial Kingdom, and they will be the pillars in the kingdom. This fulfills this prophecy from the Book of Revelation: "**Him that overcomes will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write on him the name**

of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which comes down out of heaven from my God: and I will write on him my new name" (Rev 3:12). God has obtained a group of those who are of the same heart and mind as Him, and this shows that His kingdom has already come to earth, and it indicates that He has already fully triumphed over all of Satan's evil forces, Christ's kingdom has already appeared on earth, and God's will has been fully carried out within Christ's kingdom, just as in heaven. In the kingdom of Christ, the people of God are currently undergoing all kinds of trials, and all those who can stand and bear witness are the people of the kingdom of heaven, and all of the evil ones, the evil spirits, the cowards, and the licentious ones have been revealed and eliminated. This shows that the kingdom of Christ has already appeared, and God's great work has been accomplished! None of Satan's forces can disrupt or destroy the reality of what God has achieved. Let's take a look at a couple of passages from Almighty God's words.

Almighty God says, "**The kingdom is expanding in humanity's midst, it is forming in humanity's midst, and it is standing up in humanity's midst; there is no force that can destroy My kingdom. … I am now walking abroad amongst My people and I live in their midst. Today, those who bear genuine love for Me—such people are blessed. Blessed are those who submit to Me, they will surely stay in My kingdom. Blessed are those who know Me, they will surely wield power in My kingdom. Blessed are those who seek after Me, they will surely escape from Satan's bonds and enjoy My blessings. Blessed are those who are able to forsake themselves, they will surely enter into My possession and inherit My kingdom's bounty. Those who run around for Me I will remember, those who make expenditures for Me I will joyfully embrace, and to those who make offerings to Me I will grant**

enjoyments. Those who find enjoyment in My words I will bless; they will surely be the pillars that hold up the ridgepole in My kingdom, they will surely have matchless abundance in My house, and no one can compare with them. Have you ever accepted the blessings that you were given? Have you ever sought the promises that were made for you? You will surely, under the guidance of My light, break through the stranglehold of the forces of darkness. You will surely not, in the midst of darkness, lose the light guiding you. You will surely be the master of all creation. You will surely be an overcomer before Satan. You will surely, at the downfall of the kingdom of the great red dragon, stand up amid the myriad throngs to bear witness to My victory. You will surely stand firm and unwavering in the land of Sinim. Through the sufferings you endure, you will inherit My blessings, and will surely radiate My glory throughout the entire universe" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Words to the Entire Universe, Chapter 19).

"**When the nations and the peoples of the world all return before My throne, I will then take all the bounty of heaven and confer it upon the human world, so that, thanks to Me, that world will brim with matchless bounty. But so long as the old world continues to exist, I will hurl forth My rage upon its nations, openly promulgate My administrative decrees throughout the universe, and visit chastisement upon whosoever violates them:**

"**As I turn My face to the universe to speak, all mankind hears My voice, and thereupon sees all the works I have wrought throughout the universe. Those who set themselves against My will, that is to say, who oppose Me with the deeds of man, will fall under My chastisement. I will take the multitudinous stars in the heavens and make them anew**

and, thanks to Me, the sun and the moon will be renewed—the skies will no longer be as they were and the myriad things on the earth will be renewed. All will become complete through My words. The many nations within the universe will be partitioned afresh and replaced by My kingdom, so that the nations upon the earth will disappear forever and all will become a kingdom that worships Me; all the nations of the earth will be destroyed and cease to exist. Of the human beings within the universe, all those belonging to the devil will be exterminated, and all who worship Satan will be laid low by My burning fire—that is, except for those now within the stream, all will be turned to ashes. When I chastise the many peoples, those in the religious world will, to varying extents, return to My kingdom, conquered by My works, because they will have seen the advent of the Holy One riding on a white cloud. All people will be separated according to their own kind, and will receive chastisements commensurate with their actions. All those who have stood against Me will perish; as for those whose deeds on earth have not involved Me, they will, because of how they have acquitted themselves, continue to exist on the earth under the governance of My sons and My people. I will reveal Myself to the myriad peoples and the myriad nations, and with My own voice, I will sound forth upon the earth, proclaiming the completion of My great work for all mankind to see with their own eyes" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Words to the Entire Universe, Chapter 26).

The fact of God gaining the kingdom and coming down to earth has been laid out in front of us. Almighty God's words accomplish everything, and they have revealed His authority and power. That we are able to understand the voice of God and see His appearance is His particular grace.

God becoming flesh and working among people is not only to save mankind, but it has even more profound significance. A prophecy in the Book of Revelation states: "**And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away**" (Rev 21:3-4). The tabernacle of God is with men, that is, God incarnate is among mankind, and He lives alongside and dwells with men. He utters words to purify and save mankind, and people have all seen God face-to-face through the words expressed by God in the flesh. They have seen His inherent disposition, what He has and is, and His holy essence. They have enjoyed His mercy and love and have tasted His righteous, majestic disposition that does not tolerate mankind's offenses. Through knowing God, people have been thoroughly purified and have become those who obey and worship God. This is the more profound significance of God becoming flesh and doing the work of judgment in the last days. God has obtained a group of people who understand Him, obey Him, and are of the same heart and mind as Him. The people in this group are able to understand His words, be His companions, and be those most intimate with Him. They will always be at God's side, and this is the realization of God's initial wishes for creating mankind. God will personally appear among His people, and lead the survivors of mankind to live on earth, He will live alongside them, dwell with them, and rejoice with them. Mankind will also enjoy a beautiful and happy life of being with God. This is what God incarnate will achieve in the last days, and it is the greatest promise and blessing that God gives to man.

—The movie script of The Mystery Of Godliness

XI. Questions and Answers on How to Differentiate Between the True Christ and False Christs

Question 1: I believe that if we are faithful to the name of the Lord Jesus and the way of the Lord and do not accept the deception of false Christs and false prophets, if we are alert as we wait, then the Lord will surely give us revelations when He comes. We don't need to listen to the voice of the Lord to be raptured. The Lord Jesus said, "**Then if any man shall say to you, See, here is Christ, or there; believe it not. For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; so that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect**" (Mat 24:23–24). Do you not acknowledge the deception of the false Christs and false prophets? And so, we believe that all those who testify to the coming of the Lord are surely false. There is no need for us to search or examine. For when the Lord comes He will reveal to us, and will surely not forsake us. I believe that this is the right implementation. What do you think?

Answer: The Lord Jesus did indeed foretell that there would be false Christs and false prophets in the last days. This is a fact. But the Lord Jesus also clearly prophesied many times that He would come back. Don't we believe this? When examining the prophecies of the Lord Jesus' return, many people give priority to being wary of false Christs and false prophets, and spare no thought to how to welcome the arrival of the Bridegroom, and how to hear the voice of the Bridegroom. What's the issue here? Isn't it a case of not eating for fear of choking, of being penny-wise and pound-foolish? In fact, no matter how we guard against false Christs and false prophets, if we do not welcome the return of the Lord, and we cannot be taken before God's throne, we are foolish virgins who are eliminated and forsaken by God, and our belief in the Lord is an utter failure! Key to whether or not we can welcome the return of the Lord is whether or not we are able to hear the voice of God. As long as we recognize that Christ is the

truth, the way, and the life, we will have no difficulty in identifying the voice of God. If we can't discern what is the truth, and only focus on the signs and wonders, then we will surely be deceived by false Christs and false prophets. If we do not seek and examine the true way, then we will never be able to hear the voice of God. Are we not waiting for death, and bringing about our own destruction? We believe in the words of the Lord: God's sheep hear the voice of God. Those who truly have brains, and caliber, and can hear the voice of God will not be deceived by false Christs and false prophets. For false Christs and false prophets are without the truth, and unable to do the work of God. This is not something we need to be concerned about. Only those who are confused and brainless can be deceived by false Christs and false prophets. The clever virgins will not be deceived by false Christs and false prophets, because they have God's care and protection. When God made man, the clever virgins were given the spirit of man and able to hear the voice of God. So God's sheep hear His voice, which is ordained by God. Only foolish virgins devote themselves to guarding against false Christs and false prophets, and neglect to seek and examine the Lord's return. If we wish to welcome the return of the Lord, and not be deceived by false Christs and false prophets, then we must understand how false Christs deceive people. Actually, the Lord Jesus has already told us about the deceitful practices of false Christs and false prophets. The Lord Jesus said: "**For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; so that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect**" (Mat 24:24). The words of the Lord Jesus show us that false Christs and false prophets mainly rely on performing signs and wonders to deceive God's chosen people. This is the primary manifestation of false Christs' and false prophets' deception of people. In this, we must understand why false Christs and false prophets use

the signs and wonders to deceive people. Above all, it is because false Christs and false prophets are utterly devoid of the truth. In nature and substance, they are extremely wicked evil spirits. So they have to rely on signs and wonders to deceive people. If false Christs and false prophets were possessed of the truth, they wouldn't use signs and wonders to deceive people. Looked at in this way, false Christs and false prophets perform signs and wonders because that's all they can do. If we can't see this, then it will be extremely easy for them to deceive us. Only Christ is the truth, the way, and the life. The One who can express the truth, and show mankind the way, and give them the life is the One who is Christ. Those who are incapable of expressing the truth are surely false Christs, they're fakes. This is the basic principle of identifying false Christs and false prophets. All those who seek and examine the true way should abide by this principle to seek and ascertain the voice of God, and in this they do no wrong. Almighty God has already laid bare the deceitful practices of false Christs and false prophets. Let us read a few passages of the words of Almighty God. Almighty God says, "**If, during the present day, there is to emerge a person who is able to display signs and wonders, cast out demons, heal the sick, and perform many miracles, and if this person claims that they are Jesus who has come, then this would be a counterfeit produced by evil spirits which imitate Jesus. Remember this! God does not repeat the same work. Jesus' stage of work has already been completed, and God will never again undertake that stage of work. … In the notions of man, God must always display signs and wonders, must always heal the sick and cast out demons, and must always be just like Jesus. Yet this time, God is not like that at all. If, during the last days, God still displayed signs and wonders, and still cast out demons and healed the sick—if He did exactly the same as Jesus—then God would be**

repeating the same work, and the work of Jesus would have no significance or value. Thus, God carries out one stage of work in every age. Once each stage of His work has been completed, it is soon imitated by evil spirits, and after Satan begins to follow on the heels of God, God changes to a different method. Once God has completed a stage of His work, it is imitated by evil spirits. You must be clear about this" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Knowing God's Work Today). "**Not ever does the work of God conform to the notions of man, for His work is always new and never old, and never does He repeat old work, but rather forges ahead with work never done before**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. How Can Man Who Has Delimited God in His Notions Receive the Revelations of God?).

The words of Almighty God clearly tell us that God is always new and never old, and never does the same work. This is just like when Jesus came to work: He ushered in the Age of Grace, and brought to an end the Age of Law. He did one stage of the work of redemption, and rescued mankind from sin. In order that His work would be effective, He performed some signs and wonders. In the last days, Almighty God has come, He has ushered in the Age of Kingdom, and brought to an end the Age of Grace. But He does not repeat the work done by the Lord Jesus. Instead, based upon the foundation of the Lord Jesus' work of redemption, He carries out the work of judgment beginning from the house of God. He expresses all truths for the purification and salvation of mankind to resolve the source of our sin and our satanic disposition, and to thoroughly save us from the influence of Satan, so that we will be gained by God. And the false Christs? They are all evil spirits who fake Christ. They are incapable of doing work of ushering in a new age and bringing the old age to an end. They can only

imitate the Lord Jesus by performing simple signs and wonders to deceive those muddle-headed people without discernment. But they are incapable of copying what Jesus did as raising the dead and feeding five thousand people with five loaves of bread and two fish, or rebuking the wind and sea, which is totally beyond them. In substance, false Christs are wicked, they are evil spirits and totally devoid of the truth. And so, they have to rely on signs and wonders to deceive people. Or else they deceive and admonish people by imitating the tone of God's words and simple words once spoken by God. let us look at the words of Almighty God. Almighty God says, "**God become flesh is called Christ, and so the Christ that can give people the truth is called God. There is nothing excessive about this, for He possesses the essence of God, and possesses God's disposition, and wisdom in His work, that are unattainable by man. Those who call themselves Christ, yet cannot do the work of God, are frauds. Christ is not merely the manifestation of God on earth, but also the particular flesh assumed by God as He carries out and completes His work among man. This flesh cannot be supplanted by just any man, but is a flesh that can adequately bear God's work on earth, and express the disposition of God, and well represent God, and provide man with life. Sooner or later, those who impersonate Christ will all fall, for although they claim to be Christ, they possess none of the essence of Christ. And so I say that the authenticity of Christ cannot be defined by man, but is answered and decided by God Himself**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life). From the words of Almighty God we can see clearly that Christ is God become flesh, He is God's Spirit realized in the flesh. That is, all that God possesses, including what God has and is, God's disposition, and the wisdom of God are all realized in His flesh. Christ has

the substance of divinity, and is the embodiment of the truth. He is always able to express the truth to provide to man, and shepherd man in all places. Only Christ can do the work of redeeming mankind and saving mankind. No one else can imitate this, nor can they deny it. While most false Christs are possessed by evil spirits. They are supremely arrogant and ridiculous. In substance, they are evil spirits and demons. Thus, no matter what signs and wonders they perform, or how they misinterpret the Bible, or talk of profound knowledge and theory, they do nothing but deceive us, harm us, and bring us to ruin. Nothing they do is edifying to us. All they do is bring ever more darkness to our hearts, they leave us with no path to tread, to be ultimately swallowed by Satan. It can be seen that all false Christs and false prophets are the incarnation of Satan, they are evil demons that have come to interrupt and disturb God’s work. Regardless of how many people they deceive, harm, or bring to ruin, they will soon fall and perish of themselves, for they are without the slightest truth. If we truly understand the truth about how to differentiate between the true Christ and false Christs, then there is no way we could refuse to hear the voice of God or welcome the appearance of God for fear of being deceived by false Christs.

It is only because the words of Almighty God reveal the substance of false Christs and false prophets that we have some discernment. In substance, false Christs and false prophets are evil spirits, without the slightest truth. They can only perform some simple signs and wonders to deceive people. If we understand this truth, then we will no longer be deceived by false Christs and false prophets. You also mentioned that God will surely inspire man at His arrival. In fact, many people believe this: As long as they are faithful to the name and the way of the Lord, then when the Lord comes, they'll be given revelations and directly taken into the kingdom of heaven, without needing to hear the voice of God. This clearly goes

against the words of the Lord Jesus. The Lord Jesus said, "**My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me**" (Jhn 10:27). "**He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit said to the churches**" (Rev 2:7). The Lord Jesus clearly said that when the Lord comes, He will surely utter words and express the voice of God. All who hear the voice of God, search and accept it, will thus welcome the return of the Lord and be taken before God's throne. Will it do if we hear people testifying to the coming of the Lord, yet do not search or examine it? How could it be feasible to merely await the revelation of the Lord? Could the Lord act in this way? Did the Lord say for us to await His revelation? No, He did not! Thus, such views are simply misleading and deceitful. Only ridiculous fools could say such things. If we await the revelation of the Lord according to this saying, then we can do nothing but wait for death, and bring about our own downfall. Let us look at the words of Almighty God. "**There are even more who believe that whatever the new work of God might be, it has to be substantiated by prophecies, and that in each stage of such work, all those who follow Him with a 'true' heart must also be shown revelations; if not, such work could not be the work of God. It is already no easy task for man to come to know God. Taken in addition to man's absurd heart and his rebellious nature of self-importance and self-conceit, it becomes all the more difficult for him to accept God's new work. Man neither gives careful consideration to the new work of God, nor accepts it with humility; instead, he adopts an attitude of contempt as he awaits revelations and guidance from God. Is this not the behavior of those who rebel against and resist God? How can such people gain God's approval?**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. How Can Man Who Has Delimited God in His Notions Receive the Revelations of God?). When it comes to the arrival of the Lord,

if we blindly cling to our own conceptions and imaginings, if we do not seek the truth, or pay attention to hearing the voice of God, and merely await the revelation of God, then we will never welcome the return of the Lord. We should know that in the Age of Grace, among all those who followed the Lord Jesus, there was not one person who followed because they had first been given revelation. They all heard people's testimony to the Lord Jesus, or heard the utterances and preachings of the Lord Jesus and recognized His voice, and thus they followed the Lord. And although Peter received revelation from God, and recognized that the Lord Jesus was Christ, the Son of God, that happened after He followed the Lord Jesus for a while. From the words and work of the Lord Jesus he had gained some knowledge of the Lord Jesus, and only then was he enlightened by the Holy Spirit. This is fact. In the last days, the incarnate Almighty God does the work of judgment beginning with the house of God. He has expressed millions of words and received countless followers, and not one of them received God's revelation before following. All those who follow Almighty God were enlightened by the Holy Spirit whilst seeking and examining the words and work of Almighty God. They felt that the words of the Almighty God were all the truths, they recognized God's voice, and only then did they accept God's work of the last days and were taken before God's throne. This fulfills the prophecy of the Book of Revelation: "**Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me**" (Rev 3:20). Yet in the religious community, there are people who refuse to give up their conceptions and imaginings. They merely await the revelation of the Lord, and refuse to hear the voice of God. In particular, the pastors and elders not only do not seek and examine when faced with Almighty God's work of the last days, but also fabricate rumors, and frantically oppose and condemn

Almighty God. They even deceive believers, and try to stop them from examining the true way. These people have been revealed as tares and antichrists by God's work of the last days. And they are the very people who are laid bare and eliminated by God's work. In fact, in the two times that God has become flesh to work on earth, He does not reveal it to anyone in advance. For God is the Creator, and He has His own plan for His work. He does not work according to people's conceptions and imaginations, nor does He ask for people's advice. Much less does He tell anyone in advance. By working in this way, God is fair to everyone. This perfectly demonstrates His fair and righteous disposition, and, moreover, shows the wisdom of God in His work. God's sheep will hear the voice of God. God uses practical words and work to reveal those who love the truth, who're weary of the truth, who are clever, stupid, good, and wicked. This is the very way the Lord Jesus did the work of classification. Just as the Lord Jesus said, "**Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven**" (Mat 5:3). "**Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled**" (Mat 5:6). "**Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God**" (Mat 5:8). As believers in God, we should be humble, we should hunger and thirst for righteousness, and be pure of heart, just as Jesus asked. Like a clever virgin, we should focus on hearing the voice of God. We should seek and examine the truths expressed by Almighty God. And only in this way can we go to the wedding feast of the Lamb. If we only blindly guard against false Christs and do not seek and examine Almighty God's work of the last days, if we still await the Lord's revelation, then we have become blind, foolish virgins, and shall be eliminated by ourselves.

—The movie script of waiting

Question 2: Now some incidents of false Christs deceiving people have happened in the religious communities of various countries. There are a lot of people in South Korea who don't have discernment, causing them to be deceived into following false Christs. This fulfills the Lord Jesus' prophecy: "**Then if any man shall say to you, See, here is Christ, or there; believe it not. For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; so that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect**" (Mat 24:23–24). I personally believe that any preaching that says the Lord has returned is definitely false. We shouldn't believe it in case we are being tricked!

Answer: Ever since Almighty God started expressing truths to perform His judgment work of the last days, mankind has already entered the Age of Kingdom and the Age of Kingdom has started. If our belief in God remains stuck in the Age of Grace, then we have been left behind and cast aside by God's work. When the Lord Jesus returns in secret to perform His work of judgment that begins from the house of God, there will inevitably be many false Christs and deceitful people who will appear at the same time trailing the work of God and disrupting the work of God. Therefore, when false Christs appear, God has actually already come and arrived in secret. It's just that we don't know it. At this time, we should proactively seek and investigate God's work of the last days, but now there are still a lot of people who, when it comes to the Lord's second coming, still treat guarding against false Christs as the most important thing, rather than pay attention on how to be wise virgins and listen for God's voice and on how to welcome the second coming of the Lord. Instead, they cling to their own notions and imaginations, thinking that all testimonies of the Lord Jesus' return are false. Aren't they precisely the foolish virgins the Lord Jesus spoke of? Isn't this a condemnation of the return of the Lord Jesus?

Do these people even believe in the return of the Lord Jesus? Isn't this covertly denying the second coming of the Lord Jesus?

How we distinguish between the true Christ and false Christs really reveals whether we have the truth or not, and is the best way of showing whether we are wise or foolish virgins. Some people use this passage of the scriptures as the basis for judging and condemning the incarnate Christ and denying the arrival of Christ. These people have shown themselves to be fools. To distinguish between the true Christ and false Christs, we must first have knowledge of Christ's essence. Everyone knows that the Lord Jesus is Christ incarnate and Christ is God incarnate, that is, God in heaven becomes flesh as the Son of man to work among man. Christ is the embodiment of God's Spirit and possesses a divine essence. God's almightiness and wisdom, God's disposition, and God's possessions and being that God's Spirit possesses have all been materialized in Christ. Christ is the truth, the way, and the life. We can thus be certain that Christ is not a vague God, He is not fictional or ethereal. Christ is real and practical; He can be relied upon and trusted by us. Christ is the practical God who can be followed and known. It's just like the Lord Jesus living vividly among us humans, working and leading man, shepherding man. Now we know Christ's essence, distinguishing the true Christ and false Christs becomes very easy. Let's take a look at a passage of Almighty God's word. "**It is not difficult to inquire into such a thing, but it requires each of us to know this one truth: He who is God incarnate shall possess the essence of God, and He who is God incarnate shall possess the expression of God. Since God becomes flesh, He shall bring forth the work He intends to do, and since God becomes flesh, He shall express what He is, and shall be able to bring the truth to man, bestow life upon him, and point the way for him. Flesh that does not have the essence of God is decidedly**

not the incarnate God; of this there is no doubt. If man intends to inquire into whether it is God's incarnate flesh, then he must corroborate this from the disposition He expresses and the words He speaks. Which is to say, to corroborate whether or not it is God's incarnate flesh, and whether or not it is the true way, one must discriminate on the basis of His essence. And so, in determining whether it is the flesh of God incarnate, the key lies in His essence (His work, His utterances, His disposition, and many other aspects), rather than external appearance. If man scrutinizes only His external appearance, and as a result overlooks His essence, this shows that man is benighted and ignorant" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Preface).

When the Lord Jesus came in the Age of Grace, He said: "**I am the way, the truth, and the life**" (Jhn 14:6). The Lord Jesus expressed many truths, expressed a disposition that is mainly mercy and love, and completed God's work of redeeming all mankind. The Lord Jesus' work, utterances and the disposition He expressed completely verify that Christ is the truth, the way, and the life. In the last days, Almighty God came and said: "**I am the truth, the way, and the life.**" Almighty God has expressed several million words and opened the scroll, expressing a disposition that is primarily righteous and performing His judgment work of the last days. Almighty God's work of judging and chastising, and saving corrupt mankind once again verifies that Christ is the truth, the way, and the life. The Lord Jesus had long prophesied that He would return to perform judgment work in the last days, and that He would do so in the flesh as the Son of man, coming to the world of us humans in the image of the Son of man and speaking to the churches. Almighty God's work has fulfilled the prophecy of the second coming of the Lord Jesus. This has allowed us to

see the true Christ in the flesh can come to express truths and God's disposition, and can perform God's judgment work of the last days and can conquer, save, and cleanse man, as well as carry out God's will and bear witness to God. Christ is the truth, the way, and the life. All the truths He expresses will surely and thoroughly conquer all corrupt mankind, and can bring all those who truly believe in God before God's throne. Christ will certainly accomplish God's work of the last days. That is for sure.

False Christs are evil spirits who fake Christs. They are deceitful. Most false Christs are possessed by evil spirits. Even if they are not possessed by evil spirits, they are extremely arrogant and unreasonable demons. That is why they fake Christs. Faking Christ is committing the sin of blasphemy against the Holy Spirit and will surely be cursed. Because the essence of false Christs is evil spirits, false Christs have no truth whatsoever and are essentially demons. Therefore, everything said by false Christs are lies and fallacies, incapable of convincing people. Nothing said or done by false Christs can withstand scrutiny, and moreover they wouldn't dare post it online for all mankind to seek and investigate. This is because false Christs and evil spirits are dark and evil, and cannot stand the light of day. They can only rely on performing some simple signs and wonders to deceive those foolish and ignorant people in dark corners everywhere. Hence, we can be certain that any who claim to be Christ but only rely on simple signs and wonders to deceive people are false Christs. All truths expressed by Almighty God, Christ of the last days, have been posted online, openly facing all mankind. All those who truly believe in God and love the truth are all seeking and investigating the true way, one by one returning before Almighty God's throne to accept the judgment, cleansing, and perfecting of God's words. This is an accepted fact. What is said and done by false Christs is completely different from that of Christ in the flesh. It is very

easy to discern for people who understand the truth. Therefore, distinguishing the true Christ and false Christs based on the principle of Christ being the truth, the way, and the life is the most accurate way. The Lord Jesus once said that God's sheep listen to God's voice. Wise virgins can hear God's voice, and wise virgins will be able to discover the truth in the Bridegroom's voice, discover God's disposition in God's word, discover what God has and is, and be able to see God's intentions, and thereby they will be able to accept God's work and return before God's throne. Why can't foolish virgins hear the Bridegroom's voice? Foolish virgins are foolish because they can't discern what the truth is. They can't distinguish God's voice and only know how to abide by rules. They will therefore be exposed and eliminated by God's work of the last days.

Additionally, there is another aspect to distinguishing between the true Christ and false Christs, that is, "God never repeats His work." This is because God is always new and never old. Let's take a look at Almighty God's words. "**If, during the last days, a 'God' the same as Jesus appeared, one who healed the sick, cast out demons, and was crucified for man, that 'God,' though identical to the description of God in the Bible and easy for man to accept, would not, in its essence, be the flesh worn by the Spirit of God, but by an evil spirit. For it is the principle of God's work never to repeat what He has already completed**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Essence of the Flesh Inhabited by God). "**If, during the last days, God still displayed signs and wonders, and still cast out demons and healed the sick—if He did exactly the same as Jesus—then God would be repeating the same work, and the work of Jesus would have no significance or value. Thus, God carries out one stage of work in every age. Once each stage of His work has been completed, it is soon imitated by evil spirits, and after**

Satan begins to follow on the heels of God, God changes to a different method. Once God has completed a stage of His work, it is imitated by evil spirits. You must be clear about this" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Knowing God's Work Today). Almighty God's words are very clear: God does not repeat the same work. Just like when the Lord Jesus came to work, He did not repeat the work in the Age of Law, but performed the next stage of His work of redeeming mankind on the foundations of the work done in the Age of Law, ending the Age of Law and beginning the Age of Grace. The arrival of Almighty God of the last days ends the Age of Grace and begins the Age of Kingdom. On the foundations of the Lord Jesus' redemption work, He performed the next stage of His work of judging and cleansing man, bestowing upon man all truths required for their salvation, resolving man's corrupt disposition and sinful nature, thoroughly saving man from Satan's influence, making man holy and gained completely by God. Then God's management work of saving mankind will be fully complete. This shows that God's work is always moving forward, rising, and deepening with every stage. Not one stage of His work is repeated, whereas false Christs can only imitate simple signs and wonders displayed by the Lord Jesus to deceive people, Major signs and wonders such as the Lord Jesus resurrecting the dead and feeding 5,000 people with five loaves of bread and two fish could never be done by false Christs and evil spirits. Furthermore, the truths expressed by God could moreover never be imitated by false Christs, because the essence of false Christs is evil spirits and demons. False Christs do not have the truth and can only lie, deceive, and confuse people.

—The movie script of Who Is He That Has Returned

Question 3: You have testified that Almighty God is the returned Lord Jesus and that He has expressed many words. But in South Korea there are some people who fake the returned Lord Jesus. They have also said some words and also wrote some books. Some have also gained followers. I would like to listen to what you think about how to distinguish the words of these false Christs.

Answer: Knowing how to distinguish between the true Christ and false Christs is crucial to being able to receive the return of the Lord. Only those who can distinguish between the true Christ and false Christs can accept God's work of the last days and be raptured before His throne. Those who cannot distinguish between the true Christ and false Christs are foolish virgins and will ultimately be abandoned and eliminated by God. The key to discerning false Christs is to see through their essence. False Christs are possessed by evil spirits, so their essence is evil spirits. False Christs don't have any reality of truth whatsoever. All their words are lies, nonsense, fallacious words, words that invert black and white. They know that people all worship Bible knowledge and want to understand the mysteries of the Bible, so they take advantage of this psychology to misinterpret the Bible and take it out of context to use all kinds of strange talk and absurd arguments to deceive people. Their fallacies sound very strange and very novel, as though their explanations of the Bible are so profound and mysterious. Can this prove that their words are the truth? Then just what is the truth? The truth is what God has and is. It is the reality of all positive things and represents God's disposition. The truth can make people know God and the truth can be their life. It can save, cleanse, change and perfect people. False Christs explain the Bible with strange talk and absurd arguments—how can that be the truth? Can it perfect and change people? Can it make people know and obey God? Can it make people discern Satan

and despise Satan? Can it make people break free from Satan's dark influences? If their words cannot achieve the actual effect of making people's lives grow, then they are regarded as fallacies, heresies, and lies. God's work is practical. The incarnate Almighty God of the last days expresses all truths to save mankind. These truths can make people know God and can make people break free from Satan's influence to achieve salvation, become people who obey and worship God, and can make people live out the likeness of a real person and a meaningful life. This is God's work. If what people believe in and follow is truly the Christ, God in the flesh, then after believing in God for 8 or 10 years or so they will naturally understand a lot of truths. Their faith, love, and obedience toward God should all gradually increase, and their life disposition should also achieve some changes. Only these effects can prove that what man believes in is Christ and the true God. There are many people who have believed in false Christs for 8 or 10 years and not received any truth at all, they have no real knowledge of the true God, and moreover they have no faith, no love and no obedience toward God. Haven't such people been tricked and deceived?

False Christs and all kinds of evil spirits are not possessed of the truth and cannot do God's work at all. The words of Almighty God express God's disposition and what God has and is. They cannot be spoken or imitated by any false Christs or evil spirits. False Christs can only rely on taking things out of context and misinterpreting the Bible to deceive people, or impersonate the Lord Jesus' name to say some words that bless people and make promises to people, but these have no benefit whatsoever to people's life entry and cannot carve out new paths and moreover cannot open up a new age. All work of false Christs and evil spirits cannot last. After a while it will fall apart in an uproar and self-destruct. That's a fact. Only that which comes from God can flourish and remain standing. The

true work of Christ can achieve the results of saving and perfecting man, and can carry out God's will as well as begin and end ages. This is absolute, because God is omnipotent. The truths expressed by God will exist forever. Heaven and earth shall pass away, but God's words won't!

—The movie script of Who Is He That Has Returned

Question 4: Regarding what you just fellowshiped about false Christs using misinterpreting the Bible and displaying signs and wonders to deceive people, I now have some discernment about this aspect. But I still have a question I want to ask. Some false Christs claim that God's Spirit descended on them. They impersonate the returned Lord Jesus and deceive some people. How can we distinguish this?

Answer: This is very easy to distinguish. Christ is God in the flesh, God's Spirit actualized as flesh. It is not that God's Spirit descended upon Him afterward. Christ was born that way; He was Christ from the moment He was born. He was born the Christ and will forever be the Christ. If one's not born that way, then he never will be. Just like the Lord Jesus was Christ from birth, not only after the Holy Spirit descended upon Him. When the Lord Jesus was baptized, the Holy Spirit descended upon Him like a dove. A voice from above said: "**This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased**" (Matthew 3:17). This is the testimony of the Holy Spirit, to let people know that the Lord Jesus is incarnate God Himself. From that moment, the Lord Jesus officially began fulfilling His ministry for the Age of Grace. Almighty God incarnate in the last days expresses truths to testify that He is the Christ, He is God's incarnate flesh. Christ's essence is the truth, the way, and the life. Therefore, when Christ comes to work He will surely express truths, whereas those false Christs who proclaim that God's Spirit descended upon them cannot express any truths whatsoever. This is sufficient to prove that they are evil spirits impersonating Christ to deceive people. Therefore, those false Christs who falsely claim that God's Spirit descended upon them are actually all possessed by evil spirits. This is the fact of the matter. Just as Almighty God says: "**There are some who are possessed by evil spirits and cry out vociferously, 'I am God!' Yet, in the end, they are revealed, for they are wrong in what they represent.**

They represent Satan, and the Holy Spirit pays them no heed. However highly you exalt yourself or however strongly you cry out, you are still a created being and one that belongs to Satan. … You are unable to bring forth new paths or to represent the Spirit. You cannot express the work of the Spirit or the words that He speaks. You are unable to do the work of God Himself, and that of the Spirit you are unable to do. The wisdom, wonder, and unfathomability of God, and the entirety of the disposition by which God chastises man—all of these are beyond your capacity to express. It would therefore be useless to try to claim to be God; you would have only the name and none of the substance. God Himself has come, but no one recognizes Him, yet He continues on in His work and does so in representation of the Spirit. … He is the incarnate flesh of the Spirit of God; He represents the Spirit and is approved by the Spirit. If you are unable to make way for a new age, or to bring the old to an end, or to usher in a new age, or to do new work, then you cannot be called God!" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Mystery of the Incarnation (1)).

Someone isn't Christ just because they say so. If one cannot express all truths to judge and save mankind, if one cannot perform God's judgment work of the last days, or begin a new era and end an old era, then no matter how much he self-proclaims to be Christ he is still an impostor. Christ incarnate of the last days—Almighty God, expresses all truths to judge and cleanse man, performs the work of judgment beginning from the house of God, ending the Age of Grace and beginning the Age of Kingdom. Almighty God's words are all expressions of God's disposition and what God has and is. It is the reality of life that all mankind should be equipped with. It can resolve all the problems of corrupt man's resistance of God and betrayal of God. For our understanding God's work and His disposition and

essence, it is of extreme importance and a very precious thing. Almighty God has revealed all the mysteries of God's 6,000-year management plan and the inside story and essence of God's three-stage work, and has also exposed how Satan corrupts mankind and how God step-by-step saves mankind, as well as the necessity and important meaning of God's judgment work of the last days, how mankind can resolve their sinful nature and break free from Satan's influence to achieve salvation, how they can become someone who carries out the will of the heavenly Father, what kind of people God saves and what kind of people He eliminates, what kind of person can be brought up into the kingdom of heaven, how to separate good and evil, how God determines each type of person's ending, and so forth. All truths and mysteries that involve man's salvation and perfection have been opened up by Almighty God to mankind. This fulfills the Lord Jesus' prophecy: "**I have yet many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now. However, when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will show you things to come**" (Jhn 16:12-13). Almighty God's work is the work of the Age of Kingdom, and also the work that ends this dark, evil old world. The work done by Almighty God and the truths He expressed completely prove that Almighty God is Christ of the last days, the second coming of the Lord Jesus.

—The movie script of Who Is He That Has Returned

XII. Questions and Answers on How to Differentiate Between the Work of God and the Work of Man

Question 1: We believe that the Lord Jesus returns mainly to rapture His believers. He can't possibly do the work of judgment in the last days to make overcomers. God raised up Brother Lin and used him. He has led us to be renewed, transformed, conformed, and glorified to become overcomers. When the Lord returns, our Local Church will be the first to be raptured. You testified that only God is capable of making overcomers. I want to ask: If we pursue according to the way led by Brother Lin, can't we be made overcomers?

Answer: You said that Brother Lin's path would make you into overcomers, that you only need to practice according to Brother Lin's path to become overcomers, and that the Lord Jesus returns mainly to rapture believers into the kingdom of heaven and can't possibly do the work of judgment in the last days to make overcomers. Do you have any biblical basis for this? Are there any prophecies where the Lord Jesus testified to this? Anyone who knows the Bible knows that God will make the overcomers before the disaster. In the last days, God becomes flesh to arrive in secret, expresses the truth and does the work of judgment beginning with God's house to make a group of overcomers. It's just like the prophecy in Revelation: "**And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write; These things said … Because you have kept the word of my patience, I also will keep you from the hour of temptation, which shall come on all the world, to try them that dwell on the earth. Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which you have, that no man take your crown. Him that overcomes will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write on him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which comes down out of heaven from my God: and I will write on him my new name. He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit said to the**

churches" (Rev 3: 7, 10-13). "**For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God**" (1Pe 4: 17). The Bible prophesied what the Holy Spirit said to the churches, the rapture of the Philadelphia Church, that His judgment must begin with the house of God, etc. This is what the Lord Jesus will do when He returns. In the last days, God becomes flesh and arrives secretly in order to do the work of judgment beginning from God's house, to make a group of overcomers. Almighty God's utterance, The Word Appears in the Flesh, this is what the Holy Spirit said to the churches, the hidden manna. Almighty God is God's new name. The Philadelphia Church attained God's new name, and they were raptured before God's throne. All who pray and call upon the name of Almighty God and eat and drink of Almighty God's words are raptured before God's throne to be judged and purified by Almighty God's words. In the end, they will attain the truth, overcome the influences of Satan, and God will gain and perfect them. These people are the true overcomers. It's clear that God Himself will do the work of making overcomers in the last days. No one can replace Him.

The overcomers will be made in the last days, through God incarnate's work of judgment beginning with the house of God. Not only is this prophesied in the Bible, but Almighty God also describes this very clearly. Let's have a look at what Almighty God says.

Almighty God says, "**God brings all who enter His kingdom—all who are loyal to Him to the very end—into the age of God Himself. Yet prior to the arrival of the age of God Himself, God's work is not to observe the deeds of man, or to inquire into the life of man, but to judge man's disobedience, for God shall purify all those who come before His throne. All who have followed the footsteps of God to this day are those who come before the throne of God, and this being so,**

every single person who accepts God's work in its final phase is the object of God's purification. In other words, everyone who accepts God's work in its final phase is the object of God's judgment" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth).

"**I have previously said that a group of overcomers are gained from the East, overcomers who come from amid the great tribulation. What is meant by these words? They mean that these people who have been gained only truly obeyed after undergoing judgment and chastisement, and dealing and pruning, and all kinds of refinement. The belief of these people is not vague and abstract, but real. They have not seen any signs and wonders, or any miracles; they do not speak of abstruse letters and doctrines, or profound insights; instead they have reality, and the words of God, and a true knowledge of the reality of God. Is such a group not more capable of making plain the power of God?**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. All Is Achieved by the Word of God).

Only undergoing God's work of judgment in the last days can make one a true overcomer. Almighty God took on a human form in the last days and arrived in secret in China where He does the work of judgment beginning with God's house. Almighty God has expressed all of the truths that will purify and save mankind. He judges and reveals mankind's satanic nature that resists God, along with the truth of their corruption. He reveals to mankind God's righteous disposition that tolerates no offense, as well as His omnipotence and wisdom. After experiencing the judgment and chastisement, pruning and dealing, and trials and refinement of God's word, we come to realize the ugliness, substance and truth of our being deeply corrupted by Satan. We are arrogant and self-righteous, ambitious, and

make blind judgments. We are selfish and base, crooked and deceitful. We detest the truth. We are full of conceptions and imaginations about God, and we may resist and betray God at any time. We are the descendants of Satan, the brood that opposes God. We are completely unworthy of attaining God's salvation and living before God. At the same time, we all truly sensed that God's word is the truth, we believe it wholeheartedly, it brings us down to our knees. We have all the more been able to realize that God's holiness cannot be defiled, and God's disposition cannot be offended. This process indulcates within us a true reverence for God, so that we are able to obey Him and live by His words. During the process of God's judgment and chastisement, we bear various resounding testimonies of overcoming the dark influence of Satan. In particular, there are those who have stood testimony amidst the cruel persecution by the CCP government. These testimonies of the overcomers are the fruits of Almighty God's work of judgment in the last days. God has made a group of overcomers in Mainland China. This is the fact, and the proof is indisputable. You said just now that Brother Lin led you down his path to make you into overcomers. This Brother Lin had worked in the Local Church for decades, but was there ever any testimony borne by an overcomer made in your church? Could Brother Lin do the work of judgment beginning at the house of God? Did he say the same things that the Holy Spirit said to the churches? Did he speak the words that judge and purify mankind? In reality, Brother Lin is a corrupt human, just like us all. He is not the incarnate God, and He does not possess the divine substance of Christ. As a result, he couldn't speak God's words or judge and purify mankind. So how could he possibly show other people the way to become overcomers? Everything he preached about being renewed, transformed, conformed, and glorified … where are the fruits of your labor after your years of work? No matter how much Brother Lin's

sermons accord with man's conceptions and imaginings, they are essentially human concepts and human understanding that bear no connection at all to Almighty God's truth in the last days. Moreover, Brother Lin never personally experienced God's judgment in the last days. Even Brother Lin himself failed to become an overcomer. So how could he possibly show other people how to become overcomers? You said that Brother Lin's path would make you into overcomers. This goes completely against the reality of God's work, and has absolutely no basis in God's words. This idea only exists to deceive men and oppose God.

What exactly is an overcomer? What realities of the truth should the overcomer possess? No one understands this clearly. From the perspective of our human notions, if we can work hard for the Lord and hold on to His name, we'll become overcomers in the end. But this is completely erroneous. Let's see what God says about being an overcomer. As Revelation 14:4-5 goes, "**These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. These are they which follow the Lamb wherever he goes. These were redeemed from among men, being the first fruits to God and to the Lamb. And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God**" (Rev 14: 4-5). And let's see what Almighty God says, "**Those whom God refers to as 'overcomers' are those who are still able to stand witness and maintain their confidence and devotion to God when under the influence of Satan and while being laid siege to by Satan, that is, when they find themselves amidst the forces of darkness. If you are still able to keep a pure heart before God and maintain your genuine love for God no matter what, then you are standing witness in front of God, and this is what God refers to as being an 'overcomer'**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. You Should Maintain Your Devotion to

God). "**Those who are made complete before the disaster are submissive to God. They live reliant on Christ, they bear witness to Him, and they exalt Him. They are the victorious male children and good soldiers of Christ**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Utterances of Christ in the Beginning, Chapter 13). From God's word, we can see that the overcomers are those who follow the Lamb's footsteps closely, who by undergoing God's judgment, chastisement, trials, and refinement in the last days come to understand the truth and know God, to revere God and shun evil. No matter what Christ says or in what ways He works, they will obey Him completely, and their loyalty to God will be absolute, unparalleled. Faced with the terrible circumstances of the CCP government's ruthless persecution, they continue to eat and drink of God's words, performing their duty as a creature of God. Throughout their trials and tribulations, they do not complain, and will obey God unto death, bearing a beautiful, resounding testimony to God. Only these people are the overcomers made through God's work of the last days. They are the mere 144,000 victorious male children prophesied in Revelation. You said man can become overcomers by following the path led by Brother Lin. May I ask: You who have followed Brother Lin for so many years, listening to his biblical knowledge and theologies day in and day out, do you have any knowledge of God's work and His disposition? Do you understand how Satan corrupts mankind? Have you seen through Satan's evil nature and substance? Do you truly detest the great red dragon? Do you understand the CCP government's extreme opposition and condemnation of God? Do you have true knowledge of your satanic nature and substance? Have you overcome the flesh and Satan's influence? Do you truly obey God and revere God and shun evil? How much do you understand about God's inherent disposition? If God incarnate expresses the truth, will you be able to hear God's voice

and thus obey God's work? If you don’t have any of these realities of the truth, then how can you be called overcomers? Those who don’t know God have all been exposed by God’s incarnation. The truths that God has spoken have revealed all those who don’t love the truth. People who don’t accept God’s work of the last days do not know God. They are arrogant and self-righteous and belong to Satan’s brood. How could they possibly be called overcomers? It’s impossible for them to be overcomers!

—The movie script of Rapture in Peril

Question 2: What's the difference between God's work and man's work? And what's the essential difference between God incarnate and the people who God uses?

Answer: This question is highly significant. For us to know God, understanding His substance and His work is absolutely essential. If we can't differentiate between God's work and man's work, and don't understand the essential difference between God incarnate and the men used by God, then we are highly prone to mistake the men that we admire for men used by God, and to mistake man's work for God's work. When we follow men, we mistakenly think we are following God, unaware that we are straying from the true way and resisting God. This offends God's disposition! Over 2,000 years have gone by and still no one can clearly differentiate between the work and substance of God incarnate and that of the men used by God. In the last days, Almighty God has arrived to uncover the mysteries that enshroud this subject. Let's see what God says about the difference between the work of God incarnate and the work of the men used by God.

Almighty God says, "**The work of God Himself involves the work of all of mankind, and it also represents the work of the entire era, which means that God's own work represents every dynamic and trend of the work of the Holy Spirit, whereas the work of the apostles comes after God's own work and follows from it, and it does not lead the era, nor does it represent trends of the Holy Spirit's work in a whole era. They only do the work man ought to do, which has nothing at all to do with the management work. The work God does Himself is a project within the management work. Man's work is only the duty that people who are used fulfill, and it is unrelated to the management work**" (The

Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Work and Man's Work).

"**The work of God incarnate begins a new era, and those who continue His work are those who are used by Him. The work done by man is all within the ministry of God in the flesh, and it is incapable of going beyond this scope. If God incarnate had not come to do His work, man would not be able to bring the old age to an end and would not be able to usher in a new era**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Corrupt Mankind Is More in Need of the Salvation of the Incarnate God).

"**The incarnate God is essentially different from the people used by God. The incarnate God is able to do the work of divinity, whereas the people used by God are not. At the beginning of each age, God's Spirit speaks personally and launches the new era to bring man into a new beginning. When He has finished speaking, this signifies that God's work within His divinity is done. Thereafter, people all follow the lead of those used by God to enter into their life experience**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Essential Difference Between the Incarnate God and the People Used by God).

"**All God expresses is what He Himself is, and this is unattainable by man—that is, beyond the reach of man's thinking. He expresses His work of leading all mankind, and this is unrelated to the details of human experience, but is concerned instead with His own management. What man expresses is his experience, while what God expresses is His being, which is His inherent disposition, beyond the reach of man. Man's experience is his insight and knowledge acquired on the basis of God's expression of His being. Such insight and knowledge are called**

man's being, and the basis of their expression is man's inherent disposition and caliber—this is why they are also called man's being. … The words spoken by God's incarnate flesh are the direct expression of the Spirit and they express the work that has been done by the Spirit, which the flesh has not experienced or seen, yet He still expresses His being, for the essence of the flesh is the Spirit, and He expresses the work of the Spirit" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Work and Man's Work).

"**The work of people who are used is also the work of the Holy Spirit. Yet the work of God is the complete expression of the Holy Spirit, which is absolutely true, whereas the work of people being used is mixed with many human things, and is not the direct expression of the Holy Spirit, let alone His complete expression**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Work and Man's Work).

"**The work of man signifies his experience and his humanity. What man provides and the work he does represent him. Man's insight, man's reasoning, man's logic, and his rich imagination are all included in his work. Man's experience is particularly able to signify his work, and a person's experiences become the components of his work. Man's work can express his experience**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Work and Man's Work).

"**The work God does is not representative of the experience of His flesh; the work man does is representative of his experience. Everyone talks about their personal experience. God can express the truth directly, while man can only express the experience that corresponds to his having experienced the truth. God's work has no rules and is not subject to time or geographical constraints. He can express what He is**

at anytime, anywhere. He works as He pleases. Man's work has conditions and context; without them, he would be unable to work and unable to express his knowledge of God or his experience of the truth. To tell whether something is God's own work or man's work, you must simply compare the differences between the two" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Work and Man's Work).

We can see from Almighty God's words that both the work of God incarnate and that of the men used by God seem to be man's work and words on the surface, but actually there are essential differences. God incarnate appears to be an ordinary, normal person on the surface, but really He is the flesh that the Spirit of God wears. His substance is divinity. And so, He is capable of directly expressing the truth, God's righteous disposition, and what God has and is. He is capable of uncovering the mysteries of God's management plan and ushering in a new age and ending the old. The entirety of mankind is moving forward with God's work. As God's work concludes one age and ushers in another, the entirety of mankind moves forward into a new age. This proves that the work of God incarnate leads the entire era to progress forward. However, man's work can't usher in a new age or put an end to the old age. In addition, another essential difference is that the work and word of God incarnate is the direct expression of His divinity. It hasn't been tainted by human thought, imagination, logic, or reasoning. It is imbued with the original intent of the Spirit of God, without being diluted by human ideas in the slightest. Every one of God incarnate's words is the truth, brimming with authority and power, and so they can become man's life, they can change man's disposition, purify, save, and perfect man. At last, they will guide mankind to their beautiful final destination. The people God uses, however, are human in substance. They are not God incarnate, so they can't usher in a

new age or put an end to the old one, nor can they show man the direction ahead in a new age. Their work does not involve God's management. They merely do the work of human cooperation according to the basis of God's work, fellowship about their experiences and knowledge of God's word. These experiences and knowledge are representative of what man has and is, and they are imbued with man's imagination, logic, reasoning, experience, lessons, and so on. Although most of these fellowships accord with the truth and can provide people with spiritual nourishment, support, and assistance, they are not the truth, and aren't enough to be a man's life. Only when man's work cooperates with God's work will the result of purifying, saving and perfecting man be achieved. This is the difference between the work of God incarnate and that of the men used by God.

We will understand more clearly after we examine the facts about God's work and man's work. When the Lord Jesus came to do His work, He brought the way that "Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand." He did the work of mankind's redemption in that stage, concluding the Age of Law and ushering in the Age of Grace. And so, humanity's new era began with the Age of Grace. The Lord Jesus expressed His disposition of love and mercy, and His sin offering allowed man's sins to be forgiven. Man would no longer be cursed or condemned for violating the law, and instead was qualified to come before God, praying and crying out to Him, to enjoy the truth and grace He bestowed upon them. After the Lord Jesus finished His work and ascended to heaven, His apostles did their work of nourishing and serving man on the foundation of the Lord Jesus' work and words. They fellowshiped about their experiences and knowledge of God's word to lead God's chosen people to practice the Lord's word, obey His commandments, to spread and testify to the salvation of the Lord Jesus, to establish churches, and serve believers, and so on. They cooperated with

God’s work, with the Lord Jesus’ words as their foundation. They were fulfilling man’s duty. The epistles they wrote and the words they spoke were actually their own personal experiences and knowledge of the Lord Jesus’ work and word. It was all in line with the truth, but cannot be equated to the work and words of the Lord Jesus. Christ of the last days—Almighty God has come; He has ushered in the Age of Kingdom, and ended the Age of Grace. The Age of Kingdom begins with the work of Almighty God. Almighty God has done the work of judgment beginning with God’s house, disclosed all the mysteries of God’s six-thousand-year management plan, expressed all the truths that will purify and save mankind, and revealed God’s holy and righteous substance to us humans, along with His majestic and wrathful disposition that is intolerant of man’s offense. He does this to thoroughly deliver mankind from their corrupt disposition, to help them break free from Satan’s influence, and to bring mankind at last to their final beautiful destination. Almighty God’s work completes God’s management plan, and will bring forth the end of the entire old age. All His words will be fulfilled and come to fruition. In the end, the entirety of mankind will come to acknowledge Almighty God as the one true God, and they will all witness how Almighty God fulfills His words and brings forth the end of the age. After Almighty God has made a group of overcomers, all kinds of disasters will rain down, and all mankind will fall into disasters and be refined. Only then will God descend openly with clouds to manifest Himself to all nations and all peoples. This proves that Almighty God’s work in the last days brings forth the end of an age and ushers forth a new one. The work of the man used by God is to fellowship his knowledge and experiences of God’s word based on Almighty God’s work and word, and to water and shepherd God’s chosen people, guiding them in their pursuit of the truth to enter into the reality of God]s words,

and lead them to give public testimonies to the entire world, to all of mankind, about the gospel of the arrival of the kingdom. The man that God uses merely cooperates with God's work, fulfilling man's duty. This is the main difference between the work of God incarnate and the work of the men used by God, a difference that is determined completely by the distinct substances of God and man.

Just now we fellowshiped the difference between the work of God incarnate and the work of the men used by God. I think we're all clear on that. So let's take a step further and fellowship about the substantive difference between God incarnate and the men that God uses. Let's take a look at what Almighty God says about this aspect of the truth.

"**The incarnate God is called Christ, and Christ is the flesh donned by the Spirit of God. This flesh is unlike any man that is of the flesh. This difference is because Christ is not of flesh and blood; He is the incarnation of the Spirit. He has both a normal humanity and a complete divinity. His divinity is not possessed by any man. His normal humanity sustains all His normal activities in the flesh, while His divinity carries out the work of God Himself**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Essence of Christ Is Obedience to the Will of the Heavenly Father).

"**Because He is a man with the essence of God, He is above all created humans, above any man who can perform God's work. And so, among all those with a human shell like His, among all those who possess humanity, only He is the incarnate God Himself—all others are created humans. Though they all have humanity, created humans have nothing but humanity, while God incarnate is different: In His flesh He not only has humanity but, more importantly, divinity**" (The Word, Vol.

1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Essence of the Flesh Inhabited by God).

"**The divinity of Christ is above all men; therefore, He is the highest authority of all created beings. This authority is His divinity, that is, the disposition and being of God Himself, which determines His identity**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Essence of Christ Is Obedience to the Will of the Heavenly Father).

"**Because God is holy and pure, and real and actual, His flesh comes from the Spirit. This is definite and incontrovertible. Not only being able to bear testimony for God Himself, but also being able to completely devote Himself to doing God's will: these represent one side of God's essence. That the flesh comes from the Spirit with an image means that the flesh with which the Spirit clothes Himself is substantively different to the flesh of humans, and this difference primarily lies in their spirit**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Interpretations of the Mysteries of God's Words to the Entire Universe, Chapter 9).

"**He who is God incarnate shall possess the essence of God, and He who is God incarnate shall possess the expression of God. Since God becomes flesh, He shall bring forth the work He intends to do, and since God becomes flesh, He shall express what He is, and shall be able to bring the truth to man, bestow life upon him, and point the way for him. Flesh that does not have the essence of God is decidedly not the incarnate God; of this there is no doubt. …**

"**… God is God, and man is man. God has the essence of God, and man has the essence of man**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Preface).

Almighty God has made it very clear that God incarnate is God’s Spirit realized in the flesh. Although He has normal humanity, He is of divine substance. The men that God uses, however, are of human substance. They can only be human, and have no divine substance at all. “Christ has a divine substance” means that what God’s Spirit possesses—His inherent disposition, His substance of righteousness and holiness, what God has and is, God’s almightiness and wisdom, and God’s authority and power—is all realized in the flesh. This flesh is the flesh with divine substance, the real God who has come to earth to work and save mankind. Because Christ has divine substance, His emotional state, attitudes, viewpoints, and opinions toward various people, events, and things, all of Christ's thoughts are the truth, they are all expressions of God’s holy substance and life disposition. Christ can represent God completely, can directly express God's voice, His disposition, and what God has and is through God’s identity. He can bestow upon man the truth, the way, and the life, and this is far beyond the capacity of any created human. It is because Christ possesses complete divinity, and so He can express God's word directly, at any time and place, rather than the prophets who only convey a few of God’s words on occasion. All that Christ expresses is the truth, and that is God's work in the new age. He doesn’t talk about His knowledge and experience of God’s words. Because Christ has complete divinity, He can express the truth at any time and any place to supply, water, and shepherd people, to guide all mankind. And because Christ has complete divinity, He can take on God’s work. He can lead and redeem mankind, conquer and save mankind, conclude the entire old age. But the men God uses are of human substance. They possess no divinity, but are merely human. And so they can only carry out the work of man and fulfill man’s duty. Although they possess the enlightenment, illumination, work, and perfection of the Holy Spirit, at best they can only

cooperate with God’s work and express their knowledge and experience. Their words might accord with the truth and benefit others most of the time, but they are not the truth, and they do not stand on equal ground with God’s words. that the incarnate God conducts the work of initiating an age and ending an age. He can directly express the truth and guide the entirety of mankind. But the men God uses or the men who have the work of the Holy Spirit are at best merely cooperating with God’s work while fulfilling man’s duty. At best, they are merely expressing their own knowledge and experiences of God’s word, and what they say accords with the truth. No matter how long they’ve worked for God and no matter how much they’ve spoken, they are merely sharing their knowledge and experience of God's word, they are merely exalting God and bearing witness for God. This is the essential difference between God incarnate and the men God uses or the men who have the work of the Holy Spirit.

God incarnate is of divine substance, and so His work and word are undefiled by man’s thoughts, notions, imaginations, and logic, rather, God incarnate directly expresses all that divinity has and is, and the original meaning of God’s Spirit. Just like in the Age of Grace, the Lord Jesus revealed the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, brought the way of repentance, and expressed His disposition of lovingkindness and mercy, and so on. They are all direct expressions of the Spirit of God, are all natural revelations of the disposition of God and all that He has and is. They are all beyond the reach of man’s thinking. In the last days, Almighty God expresses all the truth that will purify, save, and perfect mankind. He reveals God’s righteous disposition that does not tolerate any offense, and uncovers all the mysteries of His management plan, such as the mysteries of God's incarnation, the differences between God’s work and man’s work, the purpose of God’s management plan, the inside truth of the three stages of

God’s work, the root of man’s corruption, how man should break free from sin to attain God’s salvation, mankind’s future destiny, and so on. Everything that Almighty God does is all the direct expression of the divinity, is the original meaning of the Spirit of God, which is beyond the reach of man’s thinking. The work and word of God incarnate and His expressed disposition are enough to prove that God incarnate is divine in substance, and that He is no other than God Himself, the One and only. The men God uses, however, cannot possibly replace God in carrying out His divine work, nor can they directly express the original will of God’s Spirit. They can only do the work of human cooperation on the foundation of God’s work, share their knowledge and experience, lead God’s chosen people to enter the reality of the truth of God’s words, bear witness for God and serve Him. This is the fulfillment of man's duty. They do the work that the human mind is capable of, the work that man can experience, the work that is essentially what man has and is. Because God incarnate and the men He uses are different in substance, their work is completely different in nature. God incarnate differs from the men that He uses, just as much as God differs from man. One has the substance of God, while the other is human in substance. The One with divine substance can do God’s work, while those of human substance can only do man’s work. Everyone who believes in God must understand this.

Now we understand the difference between God’s work and man’s work, as well as the essential difference between God incarnate and the men that God uses. However, we still need to differentiate between the work of the men God uses and the work of religious leaders and religious personalities. This is very important as well. If we can't differentiate between God’s work and man’s work, or differentiate between the men God uses and those hypocritical Pharisees, we'll be prone to worshiping and

following men and will easily deviate from the true way! It will be just like when the Lord Jesus came to do His work, and God's chosen people in Judaism all followed the hypocritical Pharisees, forsaking Him. In the last days, Almighty God does the work of judgment. In the religious world, pastors and leaders, the modern-day Pharisees, deceive, restrain, and confine so many people, leading them to forsake Christ of the last days. This is a grave lesson that we must learn. To follow God, we must be able to discern the essence of religious leaders. That is, they are nothing but hypocritical Pharisees. They work through their gifts and talents, interpreting the Bible in accordance with their own notions, imaginations, and logical reasoning. What they really preach are the theories of theology and biblical studies. They only care about interpreting and preaching the words of men in the Bible, instead of exalting and bearing witness to God's words. They use the words of men to substitute the Lord Jesus' words, turning the Lord into a mere figurehead. This work runs completely counter to God's will. The crux of the Pharisee's opposition to God lies here. Religious people all fall for the Pharisees' leadership, and they follow blindly. They believe in God for years and years, but never receive any nourishment of the truth or the life. At best, they can only hope to gain some knowledge of the Bible and theological theories. They grow more and more arrogant, self-righteous, and contemptuous in disposition, and lack the slightest amount of reverence for God. Gradually, God loses His position in man's hearts, and unbeknownst to them, they walk the Pharisees' path in opposition to God. In particular, there are many religious leaders and personalities who take the Bible out of context and misinterpret it, spreading heresies and fallacies that agree with man's notions and imaginations and satisfy their ambitions and desire in order to deceive, imprison, and manipulate them. There are many people who treat these

heresies and fallacies as if they were God’s word, the truth. They are led onto the wrong path. These religious leaders and so-called famous men are precisely the antichrists that God has exposed through His work of judgment in the last days. These facts are enough to prove that the work of these so-called religious leaders and spiritual figures doesn’t come from the work of the Holy Spirit. Rather, it is merely Pharisees and antichrists deceiving and harming us. They all stand in opposition to God and betray Him. It is they who nail God to the cross once more, and God has cursed them!

Many people lack discernment. They treat those deceptive religious leaders and spiritual figures as if they were the men that God uses, and take their false, deceitful words to be the enlightenment and illumination of the Holy Spirit, even going so far as to mistake it for God’s word, the truth. They believe in God only in name, and in reality they are worshiping and following men. There is no place for God in their hearts. They stray far from God and betray Him, without ever realizing it. They are so pathetic! What a pity. This is the main reason why God’s work will eliminate and forsake the religious world. If we're never able to discern God's work from man’s work, or differentiate between the work of men God uses and that of the hypocritical Pharisees, we'll never escape from the deceit and manipulation of these religious conmen and antichrists. If we continue to believe like this for our entire lives, no matter how hard we labor, it will all be in vain, and we’ll never be able to attain God’s praise. Let’s read a passage from Almighty God’s word, “**It would be best for those people who claim to follow God to open their eyes and take a good look to see exactly who they believe in: Is it really God that you believe in, or Satan? If you know that what you believe in is not God, but your own idols, then it would be best if you did not claim to be a believer. If you**

really do not know who you believe in, then, again, it would be best if you did not claim to be a believer. To say so would be blasphemy! No one is forcing you to believe in God. Do not say you believe in Me; I have had enough of such talk, and do not wish to hear it again, because what you believe in are the idols in your hearts and the local bullies among you. Those who shake their heads when they hear the truth, who grin when they hear talk of death, are all the spawn of Satan, and they are the ones who will be eliminated" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. A Warning to Those Who Do Not Practice the Truth).

—The movie script of rapture in peril

Question 3: Most of our brothers and sisters think that God used Brother Lin. Brother Lin wrote so many spiritual books and gave us so many messages. His words were the nourishment and the way of life, and possessed the enlightenment and illumination of the Holy Spirit, like the apostles' epistles in the Bible. These words are of great benefit to us. They all accord with the truth. But you said that while the words of the men God uses may accord with the truth, they are not actually the truth. Then, what exactly is the truth?

Answer: This is a good question! This is the core truth that all we believers in the Lord must understand. If we want to know why the words that accord with the truth spoken by men that God uses are not the truth, we must first be very clear about what the "truth" actually is. Throughout all of history, no person has ever truly known what the truth is. When the Lord Jesus came to this world in the Age of Grace, He said, "**I am the way, the truth, and the life**" (Jhn 14:6). Still no one understood the actual meaning of the "truth." Only when Christ of the last days—Almighty God—arrives are the mysteries of the "truth" completely revealed to mankind. Let's look at what Almighty God says about this.

"**The truth comes from the world of man, yet the truth among man is passed on by Christ. It originates from Christ, that is, from God Himself, and this is not something man is capable of**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Success or Failure Depends on the Path That Man Walks).

"**The truth is the most real of life's aphorisms, and the highest of such aphorisms among all mankind. Because it is the requirement that God makes of man, and is the work personally done by God, thus it is called 'life's aphorism.' It is not an aphorism summed up from**

something, nor is it a famous quote from a great figure. Instead, it is the utterance to mankind from the Master of the heavens and earth and all things; it is not some words summed up by man, but the inherent life of God. And so it is called 'the highest of all life's aphorisms'" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Those Who Know God and His Work Can Satisfy God).

"**In the language of man, the truth is the true essence of mankind. Man will never be able to fully experience the truth. Man should live by the truth. One truth can sustain the whole of mankind's existence for several thousand years.**

The truth is the life of God Himself; it represents His disposition, His essence, and everything in Him" (The Word, Vol. 3. The Discourses of Christ of the Last Days. Do You Know What the Truth Really Is?).

From Almighty God's words, we can see: Truth comes from God, and comes from Christ's expression. That is to say, all the words spoken by God are the truth. This is because the truth is the substance of God's life, God's disposition, what God has and is, and the reality of all positive things. The truth is everlasting and will never change. God's words have authority and power. They can purify, save, and perfect man, and can be man's eternal life. So, all the words expressed by God are the truth. God's work, revelations, and what He ordains are all the truth. That which God decrees or prescribes for man to maintain and abide by, and all that He requires of man and commands man to live out is the truth, the reality of all positive things. And so, there is truth to be found in every single word that God speaks. In every stage of His work, God has expressed many truths. The precious life that God bestows upon us humans is within these truths.

All that God expresses during the work of His two incarnations is the truth. It is just like the Lord Jesus' words in the Age of Grace: His words allowed mankind to witness God's disposition, His love, and holy substance. These are all the precious truths that help mankind to know God. The Lord Jesus' love, mercy, tolerance, and forgiveness toward mankind, as well as His requirement of man to love God with all their heart, soul and mind, to love their neighbors as they love themselves, to be the light of the world and the salt of the earth, these are all positive things. They are the truth. They are also the reality of life that man must possess. Christ of the last days, Almighty God, has come and He expresses all the truth of judging, purifying, and perfecting mankind. These truths are the reality of life that man must come to possess in the Age of Kingdom. Christ of the last days reveals to man God's disposition of righteousness, majesty, wrath, and intolerance of offense. He reveals the mysteries of God's management plan to save mankind, the mysteries of God's three stages of work, the substance and inside truth of each stage of His work, as well as the mystery of His incarnation, how God does the work of judgment in the last days, and what the kingdom of Christ is. He discloses how God reveals the ends of each and every kind of person, and how God rewards good and punishes evil. He reveals the meaning of God's righteousness, the meaning of God's holiness and the symbolic meaning of God's disposition, His delight, anger, sorrow, and joy. He reveals what is righteous and what is wicked, what is positive and what is negative, and the essence and facts of man's corruption by Satan. Almighty God shows man how to fear God and shun evil, what the true life is and how to live meaningfully, and so on. Almighty God has revealed all these truths and mysteries to man so they can come to know and understand, so that they will fear God and shun evil, obey and worship God. Almighty God's truth is the way of eternal life that mankind should

possess. Those who embrace all of God's truths and live by them will gain eternal life. Whereas those who refuse to accept any of the truth will surely perish. So, all the truths Almighty God expresses in the last days are God's work of ending an age and ushering forth a new age in the last days. Men used by God are the ones God saves and perfects. Their duty in God's work is to cooperate with God's work and to lead God's chosen people. And so, any words they speak that are in line with the truth are the fruits of the Holy Spirit's work. Though these words are beneficial to people, we cannot call them the truth, we cannot take them as God's word because man's words merely come from their knowledge and experience of the truth, and can only represent human perspective, ideas, and understanding, and will inevitably be diluted by human impurities. Besides, man's knowledge and experience about the truth is limited. No matter how much he enters into the reality of the truth, he still can't be said to embody the substance of the truth, nor can he be said to live out the truth in full. So even if he expressed some limited reality of the truth he has lived out, his words merely accord with the truth. They must not be placed on the same level as the truth itself. Only the words of God incarnate are the truth. That is to say, only God possesses the substance of the truth, and only God is truth. No matter how many years we have believed in God, we are always infants before God. We can never live out the image of God. And so, the words of the men God uses or men who have the work of the Holy Spirit can only be taken as words that accord with the truth. We cannot take them as the truth itself. This is an undeniable fact. When we call man's words the truth, we're opposing and blaspheming God! Let's look at what Almighty God says about this.

Almighty God says, "**Words enlightened by the Holy Spirit do not represent the words of God, they do not represent the truth, they do not**

belong to the truth; they are merely a little knowledge of the truth, a little of the enlightenment of the Holy Spirit. … Everyone experiences the truth, but each does so under different circumstances, and everyone gains something different. Yet even if their knowledge were combined, they would still be incapable of fully articulating a single truth. That is how profound the truth is! Why is it said that the things you have gained and your knowledge cannot stand for the truth? You fellowship your knowledge with others, and it only takes two or three days of contemplation before they have fully experienced it. But people can spend a whole lifetime and still not fully experience the truth; even if what each person experienced were combined, the truth would still not be fully experienced. It can therefore be seen that the truth is extraordinarily profound. The truth cannot be fully articulated with words. …

You may have some experience or light regarding a certain aspect or side of a truth, but you cannot supply others with it forever, so this light you have gained is not truth; it is merely a certain point that people can reach. It is simply the proper experience and the proper understanding a person should possess: some actual experience and knowledge of the truth. This light, enlightenment, and experiential understanding can never substitute for the truth; even if all people had completely experienced this truth, and pooled together all of their experiential understanding, it still would not be able to take the place of that one truth. … I mean that the life of man will always be the life of man, and no matter how much your understanding might accord with the truth, God's intentions, and His requirements, it will never be able to be a substitute for the truth" (The Word, Vol. 3. The Discourses of Christ of the Last Days. Do You Know What the Truth Really Is?). We

know now that only God’s words are the truth. Only God’s words can be man’s life. We still need to understand that it’s because of the Holy Spirit’s work and guidance that the men God uses have possessed some realities of the truth, and thus they can share the way we should practice to enter into the life, bring people before God, and lead us to know and obey God. This is the fruit of the Holy Spirit's work. The religious leaders and greats who lack the work of the Holy Spirit, however, have put forth a lot of specious and deceitful theories that contradict the truth. To people who do not understand the truth, these words sound reasonable and seem to be in accordance with the truth, so they acknowledge and accept them. But sooner or later, people will discover that their words are empty, with no basis in reality, they are all figments of man's imagination, human notions, and they will get us absolutely nowhere. Some of those theories are so preposterous that they stand in opposition to the truth, just like the Brother Lin you mentioned. His preachings, such as “God became man that man may become God” and “God’s Spirit and man’s spirit mingle to become one,” seemed reasonable to many people in the beginning. But not long after, they discovered that his preachings were preposterous and absurd, they found that these words got them nowhere and were completely invalid! If we accept God’s work, drink the water of God’s word, and understand some of the truth, we’ll understand all the more how man’s word falls far short of God’s word, the truth. Especially those religious leaders and personalities, their words may appear to be true, but are all fallacies that can only ever deceive, corrupt, and harm people. If we don’t accept God’s word and undergo God’s work, we’ll never break free from the deception, bondage, and restraint of the false shepherds and antichrists of the religious world, nor will we ever be able to liberate ourselves from the dark influences of Satan. When we worship and follow man, we oppose and

betray God. All those who follow religious false shepherds and antichrists are doomed to weep and gnash their teeth during the great disasters.

—The movie script of Rapture in Peril

Question 4: You have testified that Almighty God is God in the flesh and is performing God's judgment work of the last days. God incarnate is most difficult to recognize for mankind. In South Korea, there are a lot of people who treat man's work as God's work. There are even many people who treat the deceiving words of false Christs as God's work to be accepted and followed, causing them to be deceived and follow Satan. Please communicate to us how to distinguish between God's work and man's work and what differences there are between the work of God incarnate and the work of men used by God. We are in urgent need of understanding this aspect of the truth.

Answer: The work of God and the work of man are certainly different. If we investigate carefully we will all be able to see it. For instance, if we look at the utterance and work of the Lord Jesus and then take a look at the utterance and work of the apostles, we can say that the difference is too obvious. Every word uttered by the Lord Jesus is the truth and carries authority, and can reveal many mysteries. These are all things man can never do. That is why there are so many people who follow the Lord Jesus, whereas the work of the apostles can only spread the gospel, bear witness to God, and supply the church. The results are all very limited. The difference between God's work and man's work is so obvious. Then, why can't people see through it? What is the reason? It's because corrupt mankind doesn't know God and possesses no truth whatsoever. Therefore, it results in man not knowing the difference between God's work and man's work, and makes it easy to treat the work of God incarnate as man's work and makes it easy to treat the work of man we admire and the work of evil spirits, the work of false Christs and prophets as God's work to be accepted and followed. This is deviating from the true way and resisting God, and is considered adoring man, following Satan and worshiping Satan. It's a

serious offense against God's disposition and will be cursed by God. People like this will lose the opportunity to be saved. That is why your question is very important to people's investigation of the true way and knowing God's work of the last days. From the outside, the work of God incarnate and the work of men used by God both look like man is working and speaking. But there is a world of difference between their essence and the nature of their work. Today, Almighty God has come and revealed all truths and mysteries and revealed the differences between God's work and man's work. Only now do we have knowledge and discernment over God's work and man's work. Let's take a look at Almighty God's words.

"**The work of God Himself involves the work of all of mankind, and it also represents the work of the entire era, which means that God's own work represents every dynamic and trend of the work of the Holy Spirit, whereas the work of the apostles comes after God's own work and follows from it, and it does not lead the era, nor does it represent trends of the Holy Spirit's work in a whole era. They only do the work man ought to do, which has nothing at all to do with the management work. The work God does Himself is a project within the management work. Man's work is only the duty that people who are used fulfill, and it is unrelated to the management work**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Work and Man's Work).

"**The work of God incarnate begins a new era, and those who continue His work are those who are used by Him. The work done by man is all within the ministry of God in the flesh, and it is incapable of going beyond this scope. If God incarnate had not come to do His work, man would not be able to bring the old age to an end and would not be able to usher in a new era. The work done by man is merely within the range of his duty that is humanly possible to do, and it does not**

represent the work of God. Only the incarnate God can come and complete the work that He should do and, besides Him, no one can do this work on His behalf. Of course, what I speak of is in regard to the work of incarnation" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Corrupt Mankind Is More in Need of the Salvation of the Incarnate God).

"**He who is God incarnate shall possess the essence of God, and He who is God incarnate shall possess the expression of God. Since God becomes flesh, He shall bring forth the work He intends to do, and since God becomes flesh, He shall express what He is, and shall be able to bring the truth to man, bestow life upon him, and point the way for him. Flesh that does not have the essence of God is decidedly not the incarnate God; of this there is no doubt. … The words of God incarnate open up a new age, guide all of mankind, reveal mysteries, and show man the direction he is to take in the new age. The enlightenment obtained by man is but simple instructions for practice or knowledge. It cannot guide all of mankind into a new age or reveal the mysteries of God Himself. When all is said and done, God is God, and man is man. God has the essence of God, and man has the essence of man**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Preface).

"**The incarnate God is essentially different from the people used by God. The incarnate God is able to do the work of divinity, whereas the people used by God are not. At the beginning of each age, God's Spirit speaks personally and launches the new era to bring man into a new beginning. When He has finished speaking, this signifies that God's work within His divinity is done. Thereafter, people all follow the lead of those used by God to enter into their life experience**" (The Word, Vol.

1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Essential Difference Between the Incarnate God and the People Used by God).

"**All God expresses is what He Himself is, and this is unattainable by man—that is, beyond the reach of man's thinking. He expresses His work of leading all mankind, and this is unrelated to the details of human experience, but is concerned instead with His own management. What man expresses is his experience, while what God expresses is His being, which is His inherent disposition, beyond the reach of man. Man's experience is his insight and knowledge acquired on the basis of God's expression of His being. Such insight and knowledge are called man's being, and the basis of their expression is man's inherent disposition and caliber—this is why they are also called man's being. … The words spoken by God's incarnate flesh are the direct expression of the Spirit and they express the work that has been done by the Spirit, which the flesh has not experienced or seen, yet He still expresses His being, for the essence of the flesh is the Spirit, and He expresses the work of the Spirit**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Work and Man's Work).

"**The work God does is not representative of the experience of His flesh; the work man does is representative of his experience. Everyone talks about their personal experience. God can express the truth directly, while man can only express the experience that corresponds to his having experienced the truth. God's work has no rules and is not subject to time or geographical constraints. He can express what He is at anytime, anywhere. He works as He pleases. Man's work has conditions and context; without them, he would be unable to work and unable to express his knowledge of God or his experience of the truth. To tell whether something is God's own work or man's work, you must**

simply compare the differences between the two" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Work and Man's Work).

"**If man were to do this work, then it would be too limited: It could take man to a certain point, but it would not be able to bring man to the eternal destination. Man is not able to decide man's destiny, nor, moreover, is he able to ensure man's prospects and future destination. The work done by God, however, is different. Since He created man, He leads him; since He saves man, He will thoroughly save him, and will completely gain him; since He leads man, He will bring him to the proper destination; and since He created and manages man, He must take responsibility for man's fate and prospects. It is this which is the work done by the Creator**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Restoring the Normal Life of Man and Taking Him to a Wonderful Destination).

Almighty God's words have made the difference between God's work and man's work very clear. As the essences of God incarnate and men used by God are different, the work they do is also very different. God incarnate looks like an ordinary and normal person from the outside, but He is the Spirit of God realized in the flesh. He therefore has a divine substance and is possessed of God's authority, power, omnipotence, and wisdom. So God incarnate can directly express truths in His work and express God's righteous disposition and all that He has and is, and can begin a new age and end the old age, and can reveal all the mysteries of God's management plan, expressing God's intentions and God's requirements of mankind. All words expressed by God incarnate are the truth and can be man's life and change man's life disposition. The work of God incarnate can conquer and cleanse man and save man from Satan's influence, and bring mankind to a beautiful destination. The effect of such work is something no person could

do. The work of God incarnate is the work of God Himself, and cannot be replaced by anyone. On the other hand, the essence of a man used by God is man. They only have humanity and do not possess Christ's divine essence, so they cannot express truths or God's disposition and all that He has and is. They can only communicate their personal knowledge of God's words on the foundation of God's utterances and work, or speak of their own experiences and testimonies. Their knowledge and testimonies all represent their personal understanding of God's words. No matter how high their knowledge or how accurate their words, what they say cannot be said to be the truth, and moreover cannot be said to be God's words, so it cannot be man's life and can only give man assistance, supply, support, and edification, cannot achieve the results of cleansing man, saving man, and perfecting man. Therefore, man used by God cannot perform the work of God Himself and can only coordinate with God to fulfill man's duty.

When it comes to the difference between God's work and man's work, we can give an actual example to make it much clearer for everyone. In the Age of Grace, the Lord Jesus preached the way of repentance, "**Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand**," revealing the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven. And He was personally crucified as a sin offering for man, making man confess and repent, and forgiving man's sins, absolving man from the conviction and curse of law so we can be qualified to come before God to pray and commune with God, and enjoy God's rich grace and truths, and let us see God's loving and merciful disposition. The work of the Lord Jesus began the Age of Grace and ended the Age of Law. This is the part of God's work in the Age of Grace. After the Lord Jesus completed His work, His apostles led God's chosen people to experience and practice the words of the Lord Jesus on the foundations of His utterances and work, spreading testimonies of His salvation and spreading His gospel of

redeeming mankind throughout the earth. This is the work of the apostles in the Age of Grace, and also the work of men who were used by God. This allows us to see that there is a difference in essence between the work of the Lord Jesus and the work of the apostles. Almighty God incarnate of the last days has expressed all truths to cleanse and save mankind, revealing all mysteries of God's 6,000-year management plan, performing the work of judgment beginning from the house of God to thoroughly save mankind from Satan's corruption and influence, making man see God's righteous, majestic, wrathful, and unoffendable disposition, so that corrupted mankind can break free from sin, achieve holiness, and be gained by God. The work of Almighty God began the Age of Kingdom and ended the Age of Grace. This is God's work for the Age of Kingdom. The work of the man used by God, on the foundation of the work and words of Almighty God, is to water and shepherd God's chosen people, leading them to enter the reality of God's words and enter the right track to believing in God, and spread and testify to Almighty God's gospel of the descent of the kingdom. This is the work of the man used by God in the Age of Kingdom. This allows us to see that the work of God both times He became flesh is the work of beginning an age and ending an age. His work is oriented toward all of mankind and is all a stage of work for completing God's management plan. It is precisely the work of redeeming and saving mankind. The work of God both times He became flesh completely verifies that only God can express the truth in His work to cleanse and save mankind. No man can perform God's work. Only God incarnate can perform God's work. So both times God became flesh, He testifies that only Christ is the truth, the way, and the life. Apart from God in the flesh, no one else can do the work of God Himself. They cannot begin new ages, end old ages, and moreover cannot save mankind. The work of men used by God can only coordinate with God's work, to lead

and shepherd God's chosen people and fulfill man's duty. No matter how many years man has worked or how many words are spoken, or how great their work seems from the outside, its essence is all the work of man. That is a fact. That's the main difference between the work of God in the flesh and the work of men used by God.

The words of Almighty God have made us realize the substantive difference between God's work and man's work. Only now do we know that as God incarnate works He can express truths, express God's disposition and all that God has and is. If we accept and experience God's work we will be able to understand the truth, and be able to understand God's holy and righteous disposition, God's essence, God's intentions of saving mankind, God's methods of saving mankind, and God's love for mankind more and more. At the same time, we will also gain an understanding of the essence, nature and truth of our being corrupted by Satan. That way, our corrupt disposition can achieve purification and change, and we can generate true obedience and fear toward God, and achieve God's salvation. However, man's work and God's work are completely different. Because man cannot express the truth and can only discuss their personal experiences and knowledge of God's words, even if it conforms with the truth, it can only guide, shepherd, support, and assist God's chosen people. This shows that if it is a person approved by God, the work they do is just to coordinate with God's work and fulfill man's duty. If it is not a person used by God, a person without the work of the Holy Spirit, then they are a person who exalts man's gifts, talents, and fame. Even when they explain the Bible, they are exalting the words of man in the Bible, making God's words irrelevant and using man's words to replace God's words. The work of such people is the work of the Pharisees and is the work of resisting God. The work of man mainly falls into these two

different situations. No matter what, the biggest difference between man's work and God's work is this: If it is only man's work, it cannot achieve the results of cleansing and saving man. Only God is capable of expressing the truth in His work and only His work can achieve the results of cleansing and saving man. That's a fact. The main thing we're talking about here is the difference between God's work and the work of people used by God. The work of those religious leaders not used by God is another matter.

The work of God and the work of man have such obvious differences, then why can we still worship and follow man at the same time as believing in God? Why are there still so many people who treat the work of those they worship, such as famous spiritual figures and religious leaders as the work of God? Why are there people who even treat the deception of false Christs and evil spirits as God's work? It's because we don't possess the truth and can't distinguish between God's work and man's work. We don't know the essence of God incarnate and the essence of man, and don't know how to discern what is the truth and what conforms with the truth. We can't distinguish between God's voice and man's utterances, plus we have been corrupted by Satan and we all worship knowledge and gifts, so it is very easy to treat the biblical knowledge, religious doctrines, and theological theories that come from man as the truth. Accepting these things that are not the truth and that come from man might serve to increase our knowledge, but it provides no supply whatsoever to our life, and moreover cannot achieve the effects of knowing God and revering God. This is an undeniable fact. Therefore, no matter how much work man does, how many words man speaks, how long man works, or how great the work is, it cannot achieve the result of cleansing and saving man. Man's life will not change. This reveals that man's work can never replace God's work. Only God's work can save man. No matter how short the period of God's work and how

limited the words He utters, it can begin an age and end an age, and can achieve the results of redeeming and saving mankind. This is the obvious difference between the work of God and the work of man. Only when we understand the difference between God's work and man's work will we not blindly worship and follow man, and be able to discern and reject the deception and control of false Christs and antichrists. In this way, we will be able to accept and obey the work of Almighty God of the last days, and gain God's judgment and purification to achieve God's salvation. If we cannot distinguish between God's work and man's work, we will not be able to break free from the deception and control of false Christs and antichrists. Such people believe in God nominally, but are in fact believing in man, following man, and worshiping man; they are worshiping idols. This is resisting God and betraying God. If they still refuse to realize the error of their ways, they will ultimately be cursed by God and eliminated by God for offending God's disposition. Just as Almighty God says. "**It would be best for those people who claim to follow God to open their eyes and take a good look to see exactly who they believe in: Is it really God that you believe in, or Satan? If you know that what you believe in is not God, but your own idols, then it would be best if you did not claim to be a believer. If you really do not know who you believe in, then, again, it would be best if you did not claim to be a believer. To say so would be blasphemy! No one is forcing you to believe in God. Do not say you believe in Me; I have had enough of such talk, and do not wish to hear it again, because what you believe in are the idols in your hearts and the local bullies among you. Those who shake their heads when they hear the truth, who grin when they hear talk of death, are all the spawn of Satan, and they are the ones who will be eliminated**" (The Word, Vol.

1. The Appearance and Work of God. A Warning to Those Who Do Not Practice the Truth).

—The movie script of Who Is He That Has Returned

Question 5: The work in the Age of Law was performed by Moses as used by God. Why doesn't God use man to perform His judgment work of the last days? And why must He become flesh to do it Himself?

Answer: Why must God's judgment work of the last days be performed by God incarnate? Why can it not be done by people used by God? This question is indeed very important, very key, and directly related to the major issue of whether man can be brought before God's throne, achieve salvation, and enter the kingdom of heaven. Almighty God has said a lot on this question. Let's read a few passages of Almighty God's words on this.

Almighty God says. "**The work of judgment is God's own work, so it must naturally be carried out by God Himself; it cannot be done by man in His stead. Because judgment is the use of the truth to conquer humankind, there is no question that God would still appear in the incarnate image to perform this work among man. That is to say, in the last days, Christ shall use the truth to teach people across the world and make all truths known to them. This is God's work of judgment**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth).

"**In the last days, Christ uses a variety of truths to teach man, to expose the substance of man, and to dissect the words and deeds of man. These words comprise various truths, such as man's duty, how man should obey God, how man should be loyal to God, how man ought to live out normal humanity, as well as the wisdom and the disposition of God, and so on. These words are all directed at the substance of man and his corrupt disposition. In particular, the words that expose how man spurns God are spoken in regard to how man is**

an embodiment of Satan, and an enemy force against God. In undertaking His work of judgment, God does not simply make clear the nature of man with a few words; He exposes, deals with, and prunes over the long term. These methods of exposure, dealing, and pruning cannot be substituted with ordinary words, but with the truth of which man is utterly bereft. Only methods such as these can be called judgment; only through judgment of this kind can man be subdued and thoroughly convinced into submission to God, and moreover gain true knowledge of God. What the work of judgment brings about is man's understanding of the true face of God and the truth about his own rebelliousness. The work of judgment allows man to gain much understanding of the will of God, of the purpose of God's work, and of the mysteries that are incomprehensible to him. It also allows man to recognize and know his corrupt essence and the roots of his corruption, as well as to discover the ugliness of man. These effects are all brought about by the work of judgment, for the essence of this work is actually the work of opening up the truth, the way, and the life of God to all those who have faith in Him. This work is the work of judgment done by God" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth).

"**No one is more suitable, and qualified, than God in the flesh for the work of judging the corruption of man's flesh. … Satan can only be fully defeated if God in the flesh judges the corruption of mankind. Being the same as man possessed of normal humanity, God in the flesh can directly judge the unrighteousness of man; this is the mark of His innate holiness, and of His extraordinariness. Only God is qualified to, and is in the position to, judge man, for He is possessed of the truth, and righteousness, and so He is able to judge man. Those who are**

without truth and righteousness are not fit to judge others" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Corrupt Mankind Is More in Need of the Salvation of the Incarnate God).

"**It is precisely because of this judgment that you have been able to see that God is the righteous God, and that God is the holy God; it is precisely because of His holiness and His righteousness that He judges you and unleashes His wrath upon you. Because He can reveal His righteous disposition when He sees the rebelliousness of man, and because He can reveal His holiness when He sees the filth of man, this is enough to show that He is God Himself, who is holy and pristine, and yet lives in the land of filth. If a person wallows in the mire with others, and there is nothing holy about him, and he has no righteous disposition, then he is not qualified to judge man's iniquity, nor is he fit to carry out the judgment of man. If a person were to judge another, would it not be as if they were slapping themselves in the face? How could people who are equally filthy as one another be qualified to judge those who are alike to them? Only the holy God Himself is able to judge the whole of filthy mankind. How could man judge man's sins? How could man see the sins of man, and how could man be qualified to condemn these sins? If God were not qualified to judge the sins of man, then how could He be the righteous God Himself? When people's corrupt dispositions are revealed, God speaks in order to judge people, and only then do people see that He is holy**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. How the Effects of the Second Step of the Work of Conquest Are Achieved).

Almighty God clearly tells us the meaning of God becoming flesh to do the work of judgment in the last days. The judgment work of God in the last days is accomplished through God expressing truths, expressing God's

righteous disposition, and God’s almightiness and wisdom to expose and judge the satanic nature of corrupt mankind, to save mankind from Satan's influence and change man’s life disposition, and to perfect man to gain the truth, achieve understanding of God and live out a meaningful life. Such work of saving and perfecting man must be done personally by God incarnate Himself, because in the last days, mankind is deeply corrupted and full of Satan’s disposition. They are wildly arrogant, cunning and deceitful, selfish and despicable. They have all become descendants of Satan. They have all lost the conscience, reason, character, and dignity of normal humanity. They are like spiritless beasts, without much of a likeness of human beings. For God to save such extremely corrupted human beings, He must become flesh to directly express God’s words, and express God’s righteous, majestic, wrathful disposition to judge, conquer, and cleanse mankind, letting mankind not just hear God’s voice, but also see God’s disposition and wrath. Only then can corrupt mankind be thoroughly conquered and defeated. Only then will man fall to the ground, fear God, obey God, and shun evil. This is the result that can be achieved by the judgment work of God in the flesh. God becoming flesh is not just to express God’s words. The main thing is to let mankind see the appearance of God and His disposition, see God’s deeds and His almightiness and wisdom, and at the same time see God’s tabernacle with man, and God living alongside man, and mankind living before God and fellowshiping and directly conversing with God. These are all accomplished through God becoming flesh. This is the true meaning of God becoming flesh to perform His judgment work. All those who have experienced God’s judgment work of the last days can personally appreciate these facts.

A lot of people cannot understand why God does not use people to perform His judgment work of the last days. The main reason is because

man’s essence is that of corrupt mankind and man has Satan’s disposition. Even if they are perfected and have the control of the Holy Spirit, they are still not worthy of expressing God’s words, and moreover they are not worthy of expressing God’s disposition, His almightiness and wisdom, and all that He has and is, because a man used by God has the essence of humanity and has no divinity, so he is not qualified to work in God’s identity. No matter what he says or does, he cannot represent God, and so he cannot perform the work of saving mankind. For example, God used Moses to perform the work of the Age of Law. Moses could only convey God’s words like a prophet. Why did he not dare to speak on God’s behalf? Because he is a man, not God incarnate. This is the essential difference between God in the flesh and a person used by God. Someone asked just now, since God used Moses to work during the Age of Law, why couldn’t He have used man to perform His judgment work of the last days? There is a special context for God using Moses to do the work during the Age of Law. The corruption of man by Satan during the Age of Law was not very thorough. The work of the Age of Law was not the work of changing man’s disposition, but was the work of promulgating commandments and laws and decrees to guide people’s lives. God used Moses mainly to promulgate commandments and laws and decrees, telling people how to abide by the laws and commandments of Jehovah God and what principles people should live by, so people could understand how to live before God and worship God, in order to lead newborn humans to learn how to live on earth. The results of this work can be achieved just by God using Moses to do it. This shows that in every age, whether God becomes flesh to work or uses man to work is all based on God’s management plan and the needs of corrupt mankind. The work of redemption in the Age of Grace and the work of judgment in the last days are all work to begin an age and end an age.

They are the work of redeeming mankind and saving mankind, and must be personally done by God incarnate Himself. Nobody can replace Him. Just as Almighty God says. "**The work of God is to be done by God Himself. It is He who sets His work in motion, and it is He who concludes His work. It is He who plans the work, and it is He who manages it, and even more, it is He who brings the work to fruition. As stated in the Bible, 'I am the Beginning and the End; I am the Sower and the Reaper.' All that pertains to the work of His management is done by God Himself. He is the Ruler of the six-thousand-year management plan; no one can do His work in His stead and no one can bring His work to a close, for it is He who holds everything in His hand. Having created the world, He will lead the entire world to live in His light, and He will also conclude the entire age, thereby bringing His entire plan to fruition!**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Mystery of the Incarnation (1)).

—The movie script of Who Is He That Has Returned

Question 6: The words of famous spiritual figures also conform with the truth and are constructive for people. If what they say conforms with the truth, then how is that any different to the words of God that are the truth?

Answer: This question is so critical! Many people can't see through this key issue to investigating the true way. They accept Almighty God's word is the truth and has authority and power, but because they can't see through the differences between the words of famous spiritual figures that conform with the truth and the truths expressed by God, it is very difficult for them to accept God's work and be raptured before God's throne. If we treat all words that conform with the truth as God's words, then it is very easy for us to be deceived and follow and worship man, and follow Satan in resisting God, betraying God, and offending God's disposition. It's like how so many people follow religious pastors and leaders, and follow false Christs. This is something that will be cursed by God. Therefore, believing in God requires discerning what is the truth and what is knowledge and doctrines, and the difference between the truth and words that conform with the truth. This is extremely important. If we cannot discern the truth then we cannot recognize Christ. If we cannot distinguish the essential difference between the truth and words that conform with the truth, then it is impossible for us to hear God's voice and return to God. This is absolute. So just what is the truth and what are words that conform with the truth? Let's see what Almighty God has to say about it.

"**The truth is the most real of life's aphorisms, and the highest of such aphorisms among all mankind. Because it is the requirement that God makes of man, and is the work personally done by God, thus it is called 'life's aphorism.' It is not an aphorism summed up from something, nor is it a famous quote from a great figure. Instead, it is the**

utterance to mankind from the Master of the heavens and earth and all things; it is not some words summed up by man, but the inherent life of God. And so it is called 'the highest of all life's aphorisms'" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Those Who Know God and His Work Can Satisfy God).

"**That which is directly expressed by God is truth. Anything that arises from the enlightenment of the Holy Spirit merely conforms to the truth, for the Holy Spirit enlightens people based on their stature and cannot express the truth directly to man. This is something you must understand. And when, based upon the words of the truth, people gain insights, and knowledge from experiencing, do such insights and knowledge count as the truth? At most, this is a little knowledge of the truth. Words enlightened by the Holy Spirit do not represent the words of God, they do not represent the truth, they do not belong to the truth; they are merely a little knowledge of the truth, a little of the enlightenment of the Holy Spirit. … Everyone experiences the truth, but each does so under different circumstances, and everyone gains something different. Yet even if their knowledge were combined, they would still be incapable of fully articulating a single truth. That is how profound the truth is! Why is it said that the things you have gained and your knowledge cannot stand for the truth? You fellowship your knowledge with others, and it only takes two or three days of contemplation before they have fully experienced it. But people can spend a whole lifetime and still not fully experience the truth; even if what each person experienced were combined, the truth would still not be fully experienced. It can therefore be seen that the truth is extraordinarily profound. The truth cannot be fully articulated with words. In the language of man, the truth is the true essence of**

mankind. Man will never be able to fully experience the truth. Man should live by the truth. One truth can sustain the whole of mankind's existence for several thousand years.

The truth is the life of God Himself; it represents His disposition, His essence, and everything in Him. If you say that having a bit of experience means possessing the truth, then can you represent God's disposition? You may have some experience or light regarding a certain aspect or side of a truth, but you cannot supply others with it forever, so this light you have gained is not truth; it is merely a certain point that people can reach. It is simply the proper experience and the proper understanding a person should possess: some actual experience and knowledge of the truth. This light, enlightenment, and experiential understanding can never substitute for the truth; even if all people had completely experienced this truth, and pooled together all of their experiential understanding, it still would not be able to take the place of that one truth. … I mean that the life of man will always be the life of man, and no matter how much your understanding might accord with the truth, God's intentions, and His requirements, it will never be able to be a substitute for the truth" (The Word, Vol. 3. The Discourses of Christ of the Last Days. Do You Know What the Truth Really Is?).

Almighty God has made it very clear what the truth is and what are the words that conform with the truth. The truth originates from God. All words expressed by God are the truth. This is absolutely certain. Then just what is the truth? What is the essence of the truth? Because the truth is all an expression of God, it is naturally a revelation of the essence of God's life and a revelation of what God has and is, and are expressions of God's disposition. The truth is the reality of all things positive. It will never change and will always exist. The truth is what God's life is, and it carries

authority and power. That is why the truth can cleanse man, save man, perfect man, and be man’s eternal life. The purpose of God expressing the truth is so that man can gain the truth as their life and live by God’s words. If mankind gains the truth as their life, their corrupt nature and satanic disposition will be completely cleansed. Living by the truth, mankind can live out the likeness of a real man and become a mankind that is holy and accords with God's intentions. This way, the meaning of God’s creation of man is completely achieved. This is the ultimate result that God's work of saving mankind seeks to achieve. After the great disasters, the surviving humans will all obey God and worship God. They are all human beings who have gained the truth and achieved salvation. Such people will be brought up by God into His kingdom, enjoy God’s promise and gain a wonderful destination. These are all facts accomplished by God’s words. These are all results achieved by the truths expressed by God. Even though the words of those famous spiritual figures conform with the truth and are constructive for people, they don’t count as truth and cannot be compared to God’s words. God’s words can be man’s life, but man’s words cannot be man’s life. The truth can cleanse man, change man, perfect man, but words of man that conform with the truth cannot cleanse, change, or perfect man. This is a fact nobody can deny. We can all see that there have been quite a few people used by God throughout the ages, but no matter who it was and no matter how many years of work or how many words spoken, their work and words cannot achieve the result of cleansing, saving, and perfecting man. Why is that so? It is because words spoken by man that conform with the truth are all defined by their limited experience and knowledge of God’s word and the truth. What is expressed are all their own viewpoints and opinions, and it represents their personal stature and knowledge of God and the truth. Even if the reception is pure, conforms with the truth, and is

constructive and helpful to man, such words can only be said to be correct words, words that conform with the truth. But the words that conform with the truth are still very different from the essence of the truth itself, and cannot be said to be the truth. The books they write and words they preach all come from their own personal burden to the church and are for shepherding the church and comforting and exhorting believers, or helping people resolve some of their difficulties and confusion in their belief in God. But their words can only supply people for a period or a stage, and could never replace the results of God's work. The facts are sufficient to show that words spoken by man that conform with the truth are entirely different from the essence of the truth itself, and therefore cannot be said to be the truth and moreover cannot be said to be God's words. This is the essential difference between words spoken by man that conform with the truth and the truth itself. Everyone should understand this now, right?

It is through Almighty God's revelation of these mysteries that we realize there is a substantive difference between what people say in accordance with the truth and God's word that is the truth. The two are not comparable! The word of God is the truth. A man can spend his entire life in experiencing a single statement of God. For example, on being an honest person, the Lord Jesus had asked of people: "**But let your communication be, Yes, yes; No, no: for whatever is more than these comes of evil**" (Mat 5:37). "**And said, Truly I say to you, Except you be converted, and become as little children, you shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven**" (Mat 18:3). Today, Almighty God has come and asked the same of man. Almighty God said, "**In essence, God is faithful, and so His words can always be trusted; His actions, furthermore, are faultless and unquestionable, which is why God likes those who are absolutely honest with Him**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Three

Admonitions). "**You should be an honest person, not someone who is always being clever and constantly deceitful. (Here I am asking you again to be an honest person.)**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Transgressions Will Lead Man to Hell). We realize from the word of God that it is of profound significance to be an honest man. Only honest people are ones with true humanity. Honest people are the likeness of true humans. God loves the honest man. God created man, saves man, and makes perfect man in order to make man honest. What the Lord Jesus said about becoming as little children is the style of an honest man. If a man succeeds in becoming an honest person, he will be blessed by God to enter the kingdom of heaven. What is most valuable about honest people is that they give their hearts to God, believe in God with their hearts, and love God with their hearts. They can purely open themselves to truly communicate with and give their hearts to God. In addition, honest people do not make deals, harbor motives or seek demands when they perform their duties. They deceive neither God nor man. This is the reality that normal humanity should possess. The truth about being an honest man appears simple, easy to understand and practice, but it is the most basic truth of being a man. It is enough for man to experience for a lifetime. No matter how many experiences and entries people have in the truth of being an honest person, they still do not feel it is complete or perfect. They always feel there is still certain crookedness, deception, and deals that have not been completely cleansed. They somehow always feel that they have not really lived the style of an honest person. This is the real experience of the truth behind living as an honest person. It can be seen that any truth is a mystery with a lot of practical content, which is inexhaustible. No matter how deeply man has experienced and understood the truth, it is impossible to explicitly state the essence of the truth in human languages. This is a fact. Therefore, as

much as what one says is in conformity with the truth, it still cannot be compared with the word of the truth and regarded as the truth. The truth is possessed by God. Only God is the truth, so only Christ who possesses the divine essence can express the truth. Man only possesses the essence of humanity and what humanity is. Man himself is not the truth, and he does not possess the truth. So he can only express man's views and knowledge. Even with the enlightenment of the Holy Spirit and consistency with the truth, his words are never identical to the truth. If what man says in line with the truth is asserted as the word of God and the truth, it is purely an insult to God. It is blasphemy!

—The movie script of Who Is He That Has Returned

Question 7: Only God's words are the truth and can be man's life. This is certain. But I am not very clear on the meaning of God's words being man's life and the results it can achieve. Please fellowship about this to us in more detail.

Answer: Only God's words can be man's life, change man, and perfect man. No matter how much they conform with the truth, man's words are not the truth and cannot change or perfect man. This is a fact nobody can deny! Even though people admit that only God's words can be man's life, not many people can see through the meaning of God's words being man's life and the results it can achieve. If people can see through this issue, then they will hunger after the truth and seek the truth. Very few people understand just what the truth is, and moreover nobody understands why the truth can be man's life and what kind of results the truth being man's life can achieve. To understand this aspect of the truth, we must first understand that man was created by God and man's life comes from God. Only God can bestow upon man true life. Genesis 1:26: "**And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness. …**" God created man in His image, so God will surely bestow upon man new life. Both times God became flesh to redeem and save mankind, He mentioned: "**I am the truth, the way, and the life**." God has come and brought the way of eternal life. Without a doubt, God shall bestow upon man eternal life and allow man to gain eternal life. This way of eternal life is all truths expressed by God to cleanse and perfect man. "**Truly, truly, I say to you, If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death**" (Jhn 8:51). "**I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believes in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whoever lives and believes in me shall never die. Believe you this?**" (Jhn 11:25-26). The Lord Jesus' words are very clear. God's way is the eternal life God bestows upon man. If man complies with God's way, then he shall

never see death. If man can comply with God's way, then he shall gain eternal life.

Almighty God says, "**Christ of the last days brings life, and brings the enduring and everlasting way of truth. This truth is the path by which man gains life, and it is the only path by which man shall know God and be approved by God. If you do not seek the way of life provided by Christ of the last days, then you shall never gain the approval of Jesus, and shall never be qualified to enter the gate of the kingdom of heaven, for you are both a puppet and prisoner of history**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life).

"**Those who wish to gain life without relying on the truth spoken by Christ are the most ridiculous people on earth, and those who do not accept the way of life brought by Christ are lost in fantasy. And so I say that those who do not accept Christ of the last days shall forever be despised by God. Christ is man's gateway to the kingdom during the last days, and there are none who can go around Him. None may be perfected by God except through Christ. You believe in God, and so you must accept His words and obey His way. You cannot only think of gaining blessings while being incapable of receiving the truth and incapable of accepting the provision of life. Christ comes during the last days so that all those who truly believe in Him may be provided with life. His work is for the sake of concluding the old age and entering the new one, and His work is the path that must be taken by all those who would enter the new age. If you are incapable of acknowledging Him, and instead condemn, blaspheme, or even persecute Him, then you are bound to burn for eternity and shall never enter the kingdom of God**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work

of God. Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life).

Almighty God has said it very clearly. The way of truth brought by Christ of the last days is the way of eternal life. This way of eternal life is the eternal life God bestows upon mankind. If man gains the life bestowed by God then he will gain eternal life and shall never die. Then why can only God's words be man's eternal life? Let's take a look at what Almighty God says.

Almighty God says, "**The way of life is not something that anyone can possess, nor is it something anyone can attain easily. This is because life can only come from God, which is to say, only God Himself possesses the essence of life, and only God Himself has the way of life. And so only God is the source of life, and the ever-flowing wellspring of living water of life. Ever since He created the world, God has done much work involving the vitality of life, has done much work that brings life to man, and has paid a great price so that man might gain life. This is because God Himself is eternal life, and God Himself is the way by which man is resurrected. … Man's life originates from God, the existence of heaven is because of God, and the existence of earth stems from the power of God's life. No object possessed of vitality can transcend the sovereignty of God, and no thing with vigor can elude the domain of God's authority. … and only God possesses the way of life. Since His life is immutable, it is thus eternal; since only God is the way of life, God Himself is thus the way of eternal life**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life).

"**God Himself is life, and the truth, and His life and truth coexist. Those who are incapable of gaining the truth shall never gain life. Without the guidance, support, and provision of the truth, you shall only gain letters, doctrines, and, above all, death. God's life is ever-present, and His truth and life coexist. If you cannot find the source of truth, then you will not gain the nourishment of life; if you cannot gain the provision of life, then you will surely have no truth, and so apart from imaginations and notions, the entirety of your body shall be nothing but your flesh—your stench-ridden flesh. Know that the words of books do not count as life, the records of history cannot be feted as the truth, and the regulations of the past cannot serve as an account of words presently spoken by God. Only that which is expressed by God when He comes to earth and lives among man is the truth, life, God's will, and His current way of working**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life).

Almighty God's words make it very clear why God's words can be man's life. God is the source of life for all things. God not only created the heavens and earth and all things, but also rules over the heavens and earth and all things. This is an openly accepted fact. God is the self-existing and ever-existing God; only God is eternal life. That's why God can forever rule over the fate of all things. Apart from God, no person, event or thing lasts forever or exists forever. God used His word to create the heavens and earth and all things. God's word shall exist for eternity. Just as the Lord Jesus said, "**Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away**" (Mat 24:35). So the truth expressed by God will forever exist and never change. This is eternal life. God's word itself is the way of eternal life and can be man's eternal life. All words expressed by God incarnate are a

revelation of God's life. They are all expressions of God's righteous disposition and all that He has and is, represent God's almightiness and wisdom, and are all the intentions and requirements the Lord of creation has toward mankind. They are all truths corrupted mankind must possess to achieve salvation. It is the way of eternal life God has bestowed upon mankind. All those who have truly experienced God's word have seen this fact: The more man experiences God's word the more he will feel that God's word is the truth and the life, it is inexhaustible in supply and always available. Every sentence of God's word is sufficient for man to experience for a lifetime. When man experiences God's word to a certain extent, he will be able to gain the truth and life from God's word. When man lives by God's word, he will feel very fulfilled in his heart, and be happy, peaceful, comforted, and hopeful. He will feel deep in his heart that God is with him and that God's word gives him strength, and God's word can become his faith and his life. This fact is sufficient to prove that God's word is the eternal truth. Only God's word can be man's eternal life. This is undoubtable. All truth expressed by God during His judgment work of the last days is the life God bestows upon mankind. Each item of truth can be a part of man's life. For example: The truth of being an honest person can make man live out a normal humanity and live out the likeness of a real person. Knowing God can make man revere God, obey God, worship God, and be blessed by God for a thousand generations. Relying on God and obeying God can earn man God's guidance and blessings. If man truly loves God, he can be greatly used by God and always serve God. Walking in God's way, fearing God and shunning evil can gain man God's promise and entry to the kingdom of heaven. This shows that gaining these truths is gaining eternal life and enjoying eternal blessings. Each item of truth can be

man's life and can bring man blessings. This is the true meaning of the truth being man's life.

Now we understand why only God's word can be man's life. It is because only God's word is the truth, and only the truth can be man's life. This is an irrefutable fact. So what results can be achieved from God's word being man's life? Let's take another look at Almighty God's words:

"**The word 'words' may be simple and ordinary, but the words spoken from the mouth of the incarnate God shake the universe, they transform people's hearts, transform their notions and old dispositions, and transform the way the whole world used to appear. Through the ages, only the God of today has worked in this way, and only He speaks thus and comes to save man thus. From this time forward, man lives under the guidance of God's words, shepherded and supplied by His words. People live in the world of God's words, amid the curses and the blessings of God's words, and there are even more people who have come to live under the judgment and chastisement of His words. These words and this work are all for the sake of man's salvation, for the sake of fulfilling God's will, and for the sake of changing the original appearance of the world of old creation. God created the world using words, He leads people throughout the universe using words, and He conquers and saves them using words. Ultimately, He shall use words to bring the entire world of old to an end, thus completing the entirety of His management plan**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Age of Kingdom Is the Age of Word).

"**If people have a genuine understanding of God's disposition, and can give heartfelt praise to His holiness and righteousness, then it means they truly know Him and possess the truth; only then do they**

live in the light. Only once a person's view of the world and of life changes does one undergo a fundamental transformation. When one has a life goal and comports oneself according to the truth, when one submits absolutely to God and lives by His words, when one feels peaceful and illuminated to the depths of one's soul, when one's heart is free of darkness, and when one can live entirely free and unrestrained in God's presence, only then does one lead a genuine human life, and only then has one become a person who possesses the truth. In addition, all the truths in your possession have come from God's words and from God Himself. The Ruler of the entire universe and all things—God Most High—approves of you as a real person living a true human life. What could be more meaningful than God's approval? This is what it means to be in possession of the truth" (The Word, Vol. 3. The Discourses of Christ of the Last Days. How to Know Man's Nature).

Almighty God has very clearly explained the results that can be achieved by making God's word man's life. We have accepted God's work of the last days and seen that all words expressed by Almighty God are the truth and are all God's disposition and all that He has and is. Almighty God's word has revealed all mysteries of God's management plan: the inside truth of the three stages of God's work to save mankind, the mystery of God becoming flesh, the meaning of God's name, and the inside stories of the Bible, how Satan corrupts mankind and how God saves mankind, the destinations and endings of all kinds of people, how man should seek to achieve salvation and be perfected, and so forth. Almighty God has opened up our eyes and He is giving us a feast for the eyes. Almighty God's word is like a double-edged sword, thoroughly exposing our satanic nature and our various ugly states of disobeying and resisting God, making us realize that we have indeed been corrupted so deeply by Satan and that we don't have

the likeness of a human being whatsoever, and making us feel like we have nowhere to hide and very ashamed. God's word thoroughly conquered us, which shows that God's word is the truth and can conquer mankind. Experiencing the judgment of Almighty God's word is like being face to face with God. We got to know God's righteous disposition and genuinely felt God's majesty, wrath, and intolerance of man's offense, giving rise to a heart that reveres God. This is the result of the truth of God's word cleansing and perfecting man. The judgment of Almighty God's word has changed our view on life and values to different extents. In the past, we pursued the world's glory of wealth, fame, fortune, and status. We are now focused on pursuing truth and the pursuit of becoming honest people knowing God, obeying God, and loving God, and fulfilling our duty as a created being to satisfy God. Our life disposition has gradually changed, and we become more and more like what a real human being should be. We think living like this is especially valuable and meaningful. Through experiencing God's work of the last days, we have clearly seen that all words expressed by Almighty God can indeed cleanse, save, and perfect man, can be man's life and bring man a true life. This is precisely the result achieved by God's work through expressing words. This is sufficient to prove that only God's word and only the truth can cleanse, save, and perfect man, and can be man's life. If one truly gains the truth from God's word, then they can achieve knowing God, obeying God, and loving God, and achieve compatibility with God and will never betray God again. This way, man shall gain eternal life and never be destroyed. This is the result of the truth of God's words being man's life.

Why is it that only the word of God can be the eternal life of man, but man's words and knowledge cannot? Let us look at a fact. Satan has corrupted mankind for thousands of years. Why is mankind increasingly

evil and corrupt? Why is the world increasingly dark? It is because ever since mankind was corrupted by Satan, the philosophy, rules, logic and various poisons of Satan have become the life and nature of man. As a result, mankind is increasingly evil and resistant to God, and the world is increasingly dark. From this we can see that all negative things come from Satan, evil spirits and demons. Satan is the root of all evil and darkness. Corrupt mankind possesses Satan's nature, and lives according to Satan's philosophy, rules and poisons. Man is arrogant, crooked, deceitful, advocatory of evil, rife with intrigues, status struggles, and fratricidal conflict, etc. Man has lost his conscience and reason. He is destitute of humanity like filthy demons and evil spirits. There are enough facts to prove that neither the word of Satan nor that of corrupt mankind is the truth. It cannot be the life of man. It can only corrupt, deceive, harm, and kill man. Unless all the truths expressed by God are accepted, mankind will only be increasingly corrupted and finally ruined by Satan. This is the inevitable law. Therefore, those who do not accept the judgment of Almighty God in the last days will eventually perish with Satan. They will no longer exist. It is a certainty. Only God can save mankind, and only the word of God can be the life of man. Only by receiving the truth as life can man survive and enter the kingdom of God.

—The movie script of Who Is He That Has Returned

XIII. Questions and Answers on How to Differentiate Between Following God and Following Man

Question: Please share detailed fellowship on what is obeying and following God, and what is obeying and following man. Understanding this aspect of the truth is critical for us.

Answer: Concerning this aspect of the truth, let us first read a passage of Almighty God's words: "**Of principal importance in following God is that everything should be according to the words of God today: Whether you are pursuing entry into life or the fulfillment of God's will, everything should be centered around the words of God today. If what you commune and pursue are not centered around the words of God today, then you are a stranger to the words of God, and totally bereft of the work of the Holy Spirit. … Those who can follow the present work of the Holy Spirit, and who are able to follow the footsteps of God, such that they follow God wherever He leads them—these are people who are blessed by God. Those who do not follow the present work of the Holy Spirit have not entered into the work of God's words, and no matter how much they work, or how great their suffering, or how much they run about, none of it means anything to God, and He will not commend them. … 'Following the work of the Holy Spirit' means understanding the will of God today, being able to act in accordance with the present requirements of God, being able to obey and follow the God of today, and entering in accordance with the newest utterances of God. Only this is someone who follows the work of the Holy Spirit and is in the stream of the Holy Spirit. Such people are not only capable of receiving God's praise and seeing God, but can also know God's disposition from the latest work of God, and can know man's notions and disobedience, and man's nature and essence, from His latest work; furthermore, they are able to gradually achieve changes in their disposition during their service. Only people such as**

this are those who are able to gain God, and who have genuinely found the true way" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Know God's Newest Work and Follow His Footsteps). Following God primarily refers to following God's current work, submitting to and practicing God's current words, being able to keep God's commandments, seeking out God's intentions in all matters, practicing in accordance with God's word, and absolutely submitting to the work and guidance of the Holy Spirit. Finally, it refers to becoming a person who practices the truth and follows God's will. Only by doing these things can someone be said to follow God and be someone who gains God's salvation. If we outwardly base our faith on the Bible and exalt the Bible, but in reality we practice and experience everything according to the words and teachings of man in the Bible instead of submitting to and practicing the word of God from the Bible. Also, we do not grasp God's intentions and instead only adhere to religious ceremonies and rules, this is following man, not God. If we follow and practice the words of people from the Bible as if those were the words of God, yet consider the Lord Jesus a mere figurehead and ignore the words of the Lord Jesus and do nothing to follow His commandments, then we will surely be spurned and cursed by the Lord Jesus, which is just like what happened with the hypocritical Pharisees. There are many people who have faith in the Lord, yet they also maintain blind faith in spiritual celebrities or pastors and elders and they worship the hypocritical Pharisees. Whatever befalls them they run to the pastors and elders to seek guidance and they do the same when it comes to studying the true way. The result is they are deceived and misled by the hypocritical Pharisees and religious leaders and they start down the path toward resisting God, these are the consequences and ends of following man instead of God. The only way to truly follow God is to solely base our faith on following the work of the Holy Spirit,

following the current words of God, following the footsteps of the Holy Spirit's work, and giving our utmost to fulfill our duties. Especially as God does His work of judgment in the last days, the religious world has lost the Holy Spirit's work and it has become desolate. When we are compelled to seek the true way, we must put even more focus on seeking the Holy Spirit's words toward the churches and we must seek out the words and utterances of God and the work of the Holy Spirit. If we do not seek out the words and work of the Holy Spirit, if we are unable to hear the voice of God, if we are unable to gain what God's current words provide for us, then we will instead be eliminated during God's work in the last days and cast aside into the darkness of grief and sorrow. People who truly follow and submit to God will never be abandoned by Him. Those who worship religious pastors and elders are submitting to man and have become followers of man. These people will be revealed by God's work in the last days and they shall be eliminated and cast aside.

Even though from our mouths we cry out that we believe in God and that we should only follow God and submit to Him, however, what happens in reality is not the same. We can see this clearly from the way that those of the Jewish faith in the Age of Grace treated the Lord Jesus in contrast to how Peter and John and others did. The Lord Jesus performed His new work, issued forth the truth, and brought the way of repentance, but most of the Jewish faithful at that time only listened to the teachings of the chief priests and the Pharisees and they did not accept the work and words of the Lord Jesus, and in the end they lost the salvation of the Lord Jesus. Nominally, they believed in God, but in reality they believed in the chief priests, scribes and Pharisees. However, Peter, John, Matthew, Philip, and others saw the authority and power that the words and work of the Lord Jesus carried and that they were the truth. They saw that the words and

work of the Lord Jesus came from God and so they followed Him closely. They were not subject at all to the control of the Pharisees and they were the ones who truly followed and obeyed God. In the last days, the only way to truly follow and submit to God is to submit to Almighty God's judgment work, for this fulfills the prophecy found in the Book of Revelation: "**These are they which follow the Lamb wherever he goes**" (Rev 14:4). Currently, leaders in the religious world are playing the role of the Jewish Pharisees and make every effort to exalt the words of man in the Bible, yet they betray the words of the Lord Jesus. What is even more absurd is that they exploit the Bible by citing quotes out of context to place condemnation on the work God does in the last days and they do this to deceive, bind, and control believers. For example, the Lord Jesus clearly stated that only "**he that does the will of my Father which is in heaven**" will enter the kingdom of heaven. Yet among the leaders in the religious world, they say that all one needs to do in his faith is to work hard and he may then enter the kingdom of heaven, and that the kingdom of heaven is something to be forcefully seized. The Lord Jesus required us: "**You shall worship the Lord your God,**" yet some so-called spiritual celebrities lead believers to seek out how to become God or to seek out becoming a king and wielding power over all nations and all peoples, which is thoroughly preposterous. Leaders in the religious world nominally do work for the Lord and preach sermons, but in reality they are just spreading the teachings of man and they are promoting their own ideas as the truth and they let us abide by those ideas. They are just like the hypocritical Pharisees and they are blindly trying to lead the way. They are resisting Christ and they claim to stand as equals with Christ; they are antichrists and they are working to create separate, independent kingdoms. Once we the faithful begin following the leaders and celebrities of the religious world, we begin going our own path

and deviating from the Lord's way; this is a very serious instance of resisting and betraying God. If we do not repent, we will surely be cast aside and eliminated by God.

—The movie script of Rapture in Peril

XIV. Questions and Answers on Dissecting “God-man Theory”

Question 1: “God became man that man may become God” is the supreme vision of Brother Lin’s preachings! Even though what God created in the beginning was man, God’s purpose in creating man was to get them to become God. At first, because mankind lacked God’s life disposition, Satan was able to trick them into sinning. God’s purpose in saving mankind is to dispense His life disposition into us. Won’t we become God once we have acquired God’s life disposition?! How could there be anything wrong here?

Answer: The members of your church say “God became man that man may become God.” By saying that, what you really mean is that God was incarnated as man in order to make man become God. According to this idea, God’s purpose in creating man was to make them become God. But does this idea actually accord with God’s will? We should examine this in light of God’s words. During the creation of the world in Genesis, God said, “**Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth. So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them**” (Gen 1: 26-27). Today, Almighty God also says: “**In the beginning, I created mankind; that is, I created mankind’s ancestor, Adam. He was endowed with form and image, brimming with vigor, brimming with vitality, and was, furthermore, in the company of My glory. That was the glorious day when I created man. After that, Eve was produced from the body of Adam, and she too was the ancestor of man, and so the people that I created were filled with My breath and brimming with My glory. Adam was originally born from My hand and was the representation of My image. Thus the original meaning of ‘Adam’ was**

a being created by Me, imbued with My vital energy, imbued with My glory, having form and image, having spirit and breath. He was the only created being, possessed of a spirit, who was capable of representing Me, of bearing My image, and receiving My breath. In the beginning, Eve was the second human endowed with breath whose creation I had ordained, so the original meaning of 'Eve' was a created being who would continue My glory, filled with My vitality and furthermore endowed with My glory. Eve came from Adam, so she also bore My image, for she was the second human to be created in My image. The original meaning of 'Eve' was a living human, with spirit, flesh, and bone, My second testimony as well as My second image among mankind. They were mankind's ancestors, man's pure and precious treasure, and, from the first, living beings endowed with spirit" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. What It Means to Be a Real Person). God's words here tell us clearly what God created in the beginning is man, a living man with a spirit, a being that God created. God's purpose in creating man was for man to have dominion over all things on earth, and to glorify God and manifest God. We need to pay particular attention to God's word here. When creating man, God said, "**Let us make man in our image, after our likeness…**" (Gen 1:26). God has never said that He made God, much less that He created man in order to make them become God. So if someone interprets God's word and reads this as "creating God" instead of "creating man," what's wrong with this? Isn't he misinterpreting God's word and distorting the facts? Could it be that he has an ulterior motive for saying such things? We all know God is the Creator and men are merely His creations. Man and God are completely different in substance. Just as Almighty God says, "**God is God, and man is man. God has the essence of God, and man has the essence of man**"

(The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Preface). God's words are the absolute truth. Moreover, God is completely faithful by disposition. He does not lie. He does not deceive. So, God's words are precise and faultless. They are the eternal truth. God said that He made man in His image. Therefore, what He made was man. So why do some people say He was making God? This sounds like the voice of the archangel, because the archangel always desires to be on an equal footing with God, to become God Himself. It is through misinterpretation of God's word that Satan deceives and corrupts mankind. This is how Satan gets man to follow it. And so, we can be sure that taking God's words, taking "**Let us make man in our image, after our likeness**" and twisting them to become "God creating God," this is a serious resistance to God, blasphemes God, and gravely offends God's disposition. When someone misinterprets God's word wantonly and distorts the facts, this is a serious problem. It's not just a simple problem of misinterpretation, because if it comes from Satan, it creates a very serious problem. So when you say "God became man that man may become God," this is absolutely absurd. This is a figment of man's imagination and notion, and originates from Satan. We need to see this clearly. If we do not repent and continue to uphold this idea the consequences would be unimaginable.

What should we believers pursue? We need to understand God's will. What does God hope to achieve through the redemption and salvation of mankind? That is, what kind of man does God want to make in the end? What it comes down to is a vision for our belief in God, and the truth of God's work. When we choose our path as a believer in God, we must take His word as our guide. We must never, ever be deceived into following man or step onto any path that opposes God. We need to understand that because man has been corrupted by Satan, he has lost the glory of God and His

testimony. All that man lives out is corrupt satanic disposition. He has no human likeness at all. Man has become the devil, and just like the devil, mankind disobeys, denies, resists, and even betrays God. This is fact. God, in order to save mankind, was incarnated in the Age of Grace to be man's sin offering and redeem them. Now in the final age, the Age of Kingdom, God has been incarnated once more to do the work of judgment in the last days, and express all of the truths that will purify and save mankind. He leads us to gain the truth, cast away our corruptions, live out a meaningful life and the image of those who love God, so we may enter into rest. This is God's supreme goal in His salvation of mankind. Let's take a look at Almighty God's word.

Almighty God says, "**God created humans and placed them upon earth, and He has led them ever since. He then saved them and served as a sin offering for humanity. At the end, He still must conquer humanity, save humans entirely, and restore them to their original likeness. This is the work that He has been engaged in ever since the beginning—restoring humanity to their original image and likeness**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God and man will enter into rest together).

"**When the three stages of work come to an end, there will be made a group of those who bear testimony to God, a group of those who know God. These people will all know God and will be able to put the truth into practice. They will possess humanity and sense, and will all know the three stages of God's work of salvation. This is the work that will be accomplished at the end, and these people are the crystallization of the work of 6,000 years of management, and are the most powerful testimony to the ultimate defeat of Satan. Those who can bear testimony to God will be able to receive God's promise and blessing,**

and will be the group that remains at the very end, the group which possesses the authority of God and bears testimony to God" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Knowing the Three Stages of God's Work Is the Path to Knowing God).

"**When people experience until the day their outlook on life and the meaning, the basis of their existence have entirely changed, when they have been altered to their very bones and have become someone else, is this not incredible? This is a great change, an earth-shattering change. Only when you become disinterested in the fame and fortune, status, money, pleasure, power and glory of the world, and can easily forgo them, will you have the likeness of a human being. Those who will ultimately be made complete are a group such as this; they live for the truth, live for God, and live for that which is just. This is the likeness of a true human being**" (The Word, Vol. 3. The Discourses of Christ of the Last Days. One Must Understand That There Are Similarities and Differences Among People's Natures).

"**Throughout the entire management work, the most important work is to save man from the influence of Satan. The key work is the complete conquest of corrupt man, thus restoring the original reverence of God in the heart of conquered man, and allowing him to achieve a normal life, which is to say, the normal life of a creature of God. This work is crucial, and it is the core of the management work**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Corrupt Mankind Is More in Need of the Salvation of the Incarnate God).

According to Almighty God's words, we can be sure that God's goal for His three-stage management work for mankind is to make a group of people who understand, obey, and testify to God. God took on a human

form twice to save man completely from the influence of Satan, in order to make them holy and live in harmony with God's will. God’s word has already explained this thoroughly. It's easy to understand. Therefore, God's work is obviously not done in order to make man become God. Ever since God began to manage man, all the way up until the last days, the saints that God praised and blessed were those who aligned with God’s will, such as Abraham, Job, and Peter. They all have God’s word, His praise and blessing, as proof of this. These men were lavished with praise and emulated by the saints throughout the ages. It’s safe to say that they are in the kingdom of heaven. But did God ever say that they became God? God has never said anything like that. He only said that Abraham was the most faithful of all, that Job was a perfect man who revered God and shunned evil, and that Peter knew and understood God. Clearly, God’s ultimate goal for His salvation of mankind are men like these. That is to say, God will make a man into the same kind of man as Abraham or Job, and the perfected men will understand God, just like Peter. God said this clearly in the Bible. No one can deny it. God’s revealed His will to us here very clearly. In His management plan, God will ultimately make complete those that He praises and blesses; in the end, these are the men that God will gain. So, we should follow God based on His requirements, and take Abraham, Job and Peter as our models, we should do all that we can to pursue the truth and obey God’s work, and then we will be able to attain God’s perfection. This is the path we believers should take. The facts show that God didn’t create man to make man into God. In the Age of Law, Jehovah God never said anything about making man into God, and neither did the Lord Jesus in the Age of Grace. Today in the Age of Kingdom, Almighty God has put things more clearly. He has never said that He will make man into God. Therefore, we can say with certainty that the words “God became

man that man may become God" definitely aren't from God, but are human notions, a figment of man's imagination, and originate from Satan. God's disposition shall not be offended. Satan wanted to be God and stand equal to God. Satan offended God's disposition, and God struck Satan down and into the air. So if we persist in our pursuit to become God, doesn't this desire originate from Satan? Is it not the archangel's notion? Isn't this our ambition and greed?

—The movie script of Rapture In Peril

Question 2: About God's words in Genesis "**Let us make man in our image, after our likeness**" (Gen 1:26), I don't fully understand this. If God made man in His image, doesn't it mean we have the image of God? If we were made in God's image, are we man or are we God?

Answer: In Genesis, God said, "**Let us make man in our image, after our likeness …**" (Gen 1:26). But God never said that He made God in His image, after His likeness. The fact that God made man in His image and after His likeness doesn't mean that He would make man into God. God said, "**Let us make man in our image, after our likeness….**" In this verse, what does "image" refer to? "Image" here refers to God's disposition, what God has and is, and the substance of God's life, which also refers to the truth. If we live out all the truth God expresses, this image of truth will have God's image. But we all know, God's disposition and God's life being are so rich. And what God manifests through His work is very limited. Do you dare to say that God's disposition and His life being can be summed up and fully described by the words that God has expressed? Anyone who has experienced God's work in the last days and knows God will surely say that the truth and what God has and is that God has expressed, is merely one ten thousandth or one trillionth of the totality of God's life disposition. God is the Creator and the source of the life of all things. Compared with God's real life disposition, His possessions and being that He has expressed are merely a drop in the ocean. In fact, if we can manage to live out one drop of truth in that ocean, this is quite an accomplishment. Even if we pursue the truth for our entire lives, the truth that we are capable of living out is limited. We will never live out all the truth that God expresses. Anyone who has experienced God's work will acknowledge this fact. Someday when God's work ends, if we have managed to live out a tiny bit of God's image and His life being by this point, you still can't say that we have become

God. Because God is the Creator and the substance of His life is unfathomable to us humans. God created and governs the whole universe. God's life embraces and fulfills all things. The greatness of God can't be described in our words. What God has expressed in His work is but a small fraction of what God has and is. Even if we lived out all the truth God expresses in His work, it still wouldn't mean that we have truly possessed God's image, much less that we are completely possessed of the truth and have attained the truth. So even if we are able to live out a little bit of God's image, how can we possibly say that we have become God? It is absolutely impossible. Therefore, the idea that "Man has God's image and so he can become God" is absolutely groundless. It's an absurd fallacy.

Even if we finally manage to live out a bit of God's image through our experience of God's work, we can never become God. I'll give an example. Although it's not the most pertinent example, it will shed some light on this problem. Just like a father and son, the son looks a lot like his father from the outside, but their personality and character will certainly be different. Although the same blood runs through their veins, their character and personality can't be identical, and they each walk different paths, too. In some families, the father is a good man, but the son is an evil man. They look alike and are of the same bloodline, but they have a huge difference in character. And in some families, the father resists God while his son believes in Him and obeys Him. This sufficiently proves that having the same appearance and bloodline doesn't mean you'll have the same personality or character. So, even if we humans can live out a little bit of God's image, it still won't mean that we possess the substance of God's life. Man can never become God, this is for certain.

—The movie script of Rapture In Peril

Question 3: Man can never become God, even if he lives out a bit of God's image. I can totally get behind that. But when we say man can become God so long as he can manage to live out God's image, we are not referring to the God with His person, we are instead referring to the God with His life disposition but without His person. If we live out God's image, then we will become God with the life of God, it's just that we won't have the person of God. So, I think the words "God became man that man may become God" are still perfectly valid.

Answer: God is the Creator. There are not many Gods, there is only one God. God's disposition and the substance of His life are unique and unparalleled. It would be impossible for God to make other Gods, because what God created is man, and it is man that He will save and attain in the end. God never said anything about making man God. Almighty God says, "**Since all people say that God is the only one true God, then there is a single God, divisible at will by none! God is only one Spirit, and only one person; and that is the Spirit of God**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Does the Trinity Exist?). God is unique. He is the one true God, and He absolutely cannot be divided into separate persons. God's incarnation means that God's Spirit puts on a flesh to do His work and save mankind. "God's person", this kind of saying simply doesn't exist. Just as the Lord Jesus said, "**I and my Father are one**." So, we can be certain that the idea that God has different persons is one of Satan's deceptive fallacies. It is Satan, intending to disturb and interrupt God's work. According to your own words, God can be divided into God with God's person and God with God's life disposition but without God's person. If this were true, then there would be many Gods, and God would not be unique and unparalleled. Therefore, what you are talking about is polytheism. This has no basis in the Bible and does not accord with God's

word. It’s totally wrong! In fact, the God with His life disposition but without His person doesn’t exist at all! True believers in God expect nothing but for God’s salvation so that they can break free from Satan’s influence and become men of truth and humanity. Satisfying God is their highest aspiration. However, those who wish to become God are Satan, the archangel. So, those who fabricated this absurd fallacy—God became man that man may become God— have certainly come from Satan to disturb God's work. They are antichrists who deceive man. No doubt about it.

Even if we experience God’s work all the way through to the end, and are able to live out God’s image after God perfects us, we still can’t become God. Because in the beginning, God created man in His image, and Adam and Eve both had the glory of God. Does this make Adam and Eve God? God never said they were God. God only said they were humans, humans who lacked the truth and were corrupted by Satan. The work of God’s two incarnations is to save and perfect man, and to make man become men of truth and humanity, so that they will all obey and worship God and become the holy people. It’s not to make man God. Let’s read a passage from Almighty God, “**The first incarnation was to redeem man from sin, to redeem him by means of the fleshly body of Jesus, that is, He saved man from the cross, but the corrupt satanic disposition still remained within man. The second incarnation is no longer to serve as a sin offering but rather to save fully those who were redeemed from sin. This is done so that those who have been forgiven may be delivered from their sins and made fully clean, and by attaining a changed disposition, break free of Satan’s influence of darkness and return before the throne of God. Only in this way can man be fully sanctified. After the Age of Law had come to an end, and beginning with the Age of Grace, God began the work of salvation, which continues until the**

last days when, in judging and chastising the human race for their rebelliousness, He will completely purify mankind. Only then will God conclude His work of salvation and enter into rest" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Mystery of the Incarnation (4)). Man is the object of God's salvation in His 6,000 year management work. God began the work of salvation because after Satan corrupted mankind, mankind began to resist and betray God and fell into a life of sin. God's purpose in saving mankind is to save them from Satan's influence, to lead them to cast off their corrupt, satanic disposition and purify them, so that man can all obey and worship God, and live in accordance with God's will. This has absolutely nothing to do with making men into God. God has never, ever said He would make man God. Humans have been deeply corrupted by Satan. We will be lucky enough if we can attain God's salvation, gain the truth, become men possessed of truth and humanity, and become holy. So why do some people still have such greedy ambitions? Why can't they be satisfied with just being saved? Why do they still want to become God? Isn't it because of their satanic disposition? Isn't this the greedy ambition of the archangel? Because the archangel aspired to be God and stand equal to God, God struck it down from heaven. From this, we see that anyone who desires to become God and spreads misconceptions about becoming God has seriously offended God's disposition and committed a heinous crime. This is purely Satan disturbing God's work. This is Satan continuing to corrupt and deceive mankind, inciting them to oppose God. God will surely curse these men.

—The movie script of Rapture In Peril

Question 4: When the incarnate Lord Jesus was resurrected after His crucifixion, He became the life-giving Spirit. And thereby the life-giving Spirit dwells within us, blends with our spirit, and the two spirits will become one. So how could we not become God in the end? How could I be wrong about this?

Answer: You said "When the Lord Jesus was resurrected after His crucifixion, He became the life-giving Spirit." Is there any basis in God's word for such an idea? Did the Lord Jesus say anything about this after His resurrection? Since the Lord Jesus has never said such a thing, on what basis do you make such claims? I never heard the Lord Jesus say anything about becoming the life-giving Spirit after His resurrection, and the Holy Spirit hasn't borne testimony to this either. So what basis do you have for saying that the Lord Jesus became the life-giving Spirit after His resurrection? After His resurrection, the Lord Jesus said, "**But you shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come on you: and you shall be witnesses to me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and to the uttermost part of the earth**" (Acts 1:8). The Lord Jesus never said that the "life-giving Spirit" would come on you. If it really was the life-giving Spirit who was supposed to come, then why didn't the Lord Jesus Himself say so? Yet you insist on calling the Holy Spirit who comes to do His work the life-giving Spirit. This is merely a figment of your imagination. Even if a man undergoes the work of the Holy Spirit and gains life, he still can't call the Holy Spirit the life-giving Spirit. The Holy Spirit is the Holy Spirit. And regardless of how the Holy Spirit does His work, regardless of how He saves and perfects mankind, this is all the work of God. We humans must not make groundless explanations, speak without reason, or attempt to define the Holy Spirit or God as we please. God incarnate does His work for the sole purpose of redeeming and saving

mankind. The Lord Jesus, whether it was before or after He was crucified, did the work of redeeming humanity, and remained essentially the same. If we don't pursue the truth, but still study and attempt to define God, this is purely an expression of our satanic disposition. Let's read two passages of Almighty God's words. "**The Spirit within Jesus, the Spirit in heaven, and the Spirit of Jehovah are all one. It can be called the Holy Spirit, the Spirit of God, the sevenfold intensified Spirit, and the all-inclusive Spirit. The Spirit of God can carry out much work. He is able to create the world and destroy it by flooding the earth; He can redeem all mankind, and moreover, He can conquer and destroy all mankind. This work is all carried out by God Himself….**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Does the Trinity Exist?). "**The essence of God Himself is the Spirit, which can be called the Holy Spirit or the sevenfold intensified Spirit. All in all, They are the Spirit of God, though the Spirit of God has been called different names in different eras. Their essence is still one. Therefore, the work of God Himself is the work of the Holy Spirit, while the work of the incarnate God is nothing less than the Holy Spirit at work**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Work and Man's Work). We can see from God's word that in the two times God became flesh, He does the work of redeeming and saving mankind. It is the Holy Spirit doing God's own work. The Holy Spirit is God, and God is the Holy Spirit. Every stage of God's work, no matter whether it is through incarnation or by using man, it is the work of the Holy Spirit. which no man can interfere with. Therefore, we must not attempt to define the work of the Holy Spirit as we please, calling it the work of the Holy Spirit at one point in time, and calling it the work of the life-giving Spirit the next. This is completely unacceptable. This is a ludicrous misconception.

We all know that the Lord Jesus' work is the work of the Holy Spirit, and the Spirit of Lord Jesus is the Holy Spirit, without a doubt. And so, the Lord Jesus' work and expressions are those of the Holy Spirit, both before and after He was crucified. The Holy Spirit is always and forever the Holy Spirit. His substance will never, ever change. It is the Holy Spirit who does the work, no matter which level it has reached. It's not that the work of the Holy Spirit is done by the Holy Spirit at certain times, and then at other times it is done by the life-giving Spirit or the Spirit of resurrection. This is preposterous. The Holy Spirit is all-powerful, and His work is comprehensive. Not only does He utter God's voice, He also performs signs and miracles. He provides for the churches, endows man with the truth and life, and what's more, He can save and perfect man, and lead the entirety of mankind. The Holy Spirit is omnipotent, omnipresent, and fills all things. If we were to define God to be this Spirit or that Spirit according to His specific capabilities, wouldn't this be ridiculous? Only false prophets, antichrists, and charlatans speak such nonsense. You said, "God's Spirit dwells within man and mingles with our spirits to become as one." On what grounds do you make such a statement? Does this have any basis in God's word? Has the Holy Spirit confirmed this at all? What about evidence from experience and testimony? When the Lord Jesus did His work, He never said that His Spirit would mingle with man's spirit and they would become as one. The Holy Spirit hasn't said anything about this either. Nor are there any prophecies in the Bible about this. Furthermore, among all of the generations of saints in this world, has there ever been anyone whose spirit mingled with God's Spirit and became as one? Is there anyone who can bear witness to such a thing? Not a single one! In fact, anyone who has life experience can testify to the fact that when the Holy Spirit works on God's chosen people, He does this to enlighten and illuminate them to get them to

understand the truth within God's words, to lead and move them to experience God's word so that they may come to know God. But the Holy Spirit will never, ever be man's life. When we pray to Him, sometimes He will give us faith and strength, sometimes He will allow us to feel God's presence, and sometimes He makes revelations about His word to us to make us understand His will. However, the Holy Spirit Himself will never be man's life. This fact is widely acknowledged. So, no matter how often man prays to God and communes with Him, their spirits will never mingle with God's to become as one. When the Holy Spirit works on man, He leads man to understand the truth, break free of Satan's influence, return to God's side, so that they are able to obey and worship God. Once they achieve this, God's work of salvation will be complete, and the Holy Spirit will no longer need to work on them because they will have gained the truth as their life, and the Holy Spirit's work will have fulfilled His purpose. Therefore, there is no basis to say that "Man's spirit and God's Spirit will mingle and become as one." It comes purely from the notions and imaginations of men. Now we can see that people who spread such absurd misconceptions are truly interrupting God's work. They spread these fallacies with the sole purpose of deceiving and disrupting people so that they won't be able to understand God's will and His work. Their motives are wicked and malicious! Satan longs to mislead and deceive man, and so it fabricates these lies and misconceptions in order to mislead men into striving to become God, thus paving the way for the fallacy that "God became man that man may become God." Satan does this to make such fallacies become widely-accepted beliefs. We, God's chosen people, must be careful to resist Satan's schemes.

In actuality, the work that the Holy Spirit does on man is the work of salvation. We are all capable of experiencing this. The Holy Spirit often

enlightens and illuminates man within and helps them understand the truth and know God. He admonishes man, disciplines them, comforts them, and guides them in order to help them to live before God. But the Holy Spirit will never be man's life. Rather, He inspects man and reveals man to help them understand themselves. Everything that the Holy Spirit does, He does to save man. Anyone with eyes can see this. Whether it is in the Age of Grace or in the last days, the essence of the Holy Spirit's work never changes. And so the idea that "The Holy Spirit dwells within us and the two spirits mingle to become one" does not accord with the actual reality of God's work. So far, we have never heard of anyone in the Age of Grace whose spirit became one with God's Spirit, or who lived out God's image. And in the last days, Almighty God has never said that "Man's spirit will mingle with God's Spirit and ultimately become as one, so that man will live to become God." And so we can be sure that the idea that "The Holy Spirit dwells within us and the two spirits mingle to become as one" has absolutely no basis in God's word, and is completely derived from man's notions and imagination. This doesn't accord with the reality of the Holy Spirit's work at all. It is one of Satan's fallacies meant to deceive us, and nothing more! We all know that God is the Lord of all creation, and that God is unique and unparalleled, and we humans are merely His creations. Even if we undergo the work of God until we attain the truth as our life, even if we are able to live out a small piece of the image of the truth, we will never be able to become God. Let's read some more passages from the word of Almighty God so we can understand things better. Almighty God says, "**Though the disposition of man is ordained by God—this is unquestionable and can be considered a positive thing—it has been processed by Satan, and so the whole of man's disposition is Satan's disposition. … Even if someone already loves God to the extent that**

they are able to enjoy a life of heaven on earth, are able to make such statements as: 'Oh God! I cannot love You enough,' and have reached the highest realm, still it cannot be said that they live out God or represent God, for the essence of man is unlike that of God, and man can never live out God, much less become God. What the Holy Spirit has directed man to live out is only in accordance with what God asks of man" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Corrupt Man Is Incapable of Representing God). "**In short, people have to understand something: No matter how well you understand the truth, no matter your experience, no matter how fully obedient you are toward God's orchestration, no matter how high or deep your life entry is, your life is still the life of man, and man can never become God; this is absolute, and people must understand it**" (The Word, Vol. 3. The Discourses of Christ of the Last Days. Do You Know What the Truth Really Is?). "**If God Himself personally perfected a group of big Gods and small Gods, wouldn't that be chaotic? Anyway, that is something impossible, it is something absurd, and it is an absurd concept from humans. God can only create people and create other things, God cannot create God; God can only incarnate as an image of flesh, but it doesn't mean that He created God. God did not create Himself, He has His own substance, which will never change**" (The Word, Vol. 3. The Discourses of Christ of the Last Days. Do You Know What the Truth Really Is?). Almighty God makes everything so clear that as soon as we read His words, we understand. God created the heavens, the earth, all things, and mankind. This was established as fact a long time ago. God never said He would create a group of Gods both big and small. He merely said that He created man in His image. Even though we humans were made in God's image, we are still men by virtue of the fact that God created man in His

image. Why must some people misinterpret and twist God's words? How could it be wrong for God to create man in His image? It's clear that mankind's corruption by Satan runs far too deep. Even after God redeemed them, their desire to become God hasn't weakened in the slightest, and they flip through God's word, desperately looking for anything that might be able to confirm this desire. Isn't it the disposition of the archangel? Tell me, how did the archangel become Satan? Wasn't it because it desired to be God and to stand equal to God? After God struck Satan into the air, Satan assumed dominion over the earth. Satan can corrupt, control, and deceive man, and make man into enemies of God, so that man follows Satan and worships it. This is the ultimate consequence of Satan's corruption of mankind. This fallacy that "God became man that man may become God," what repercussions does it bring to mankind? It leads man to desire to be God and stand equal to God. Anyone deceived and poisoned by this theory will become arrogant and self-conceited, and even start to demand that others obey him, obey him and worship him as if he were God, to satisfy his desire. This runs completely against God and God's goal for saving mankind. So where on earth does this fallacious theory come from? Does it derive from man or from Satan? We must be able to discern. This theory clearly does not come from the Holy Spirit. It can only come from Satan. So we can say with confidence that this theory "God became man that man may become God" is nothing but a lie from Satan meant to deceive people. This is indisputable.

—The movie script of Rapture in Peril

Question 5: I still don't understand. Does Christ have the image of God? God has us emulate Christ, and in the end if we can live out Christ, wouldn't we have the image of God? Then wouldn't we become God?

Answer: You say that by emulating Christ, one can ultimately live out Christ and become God. Then we should first understand what the essence of Christ is before we can determine whether one can live out Christ. Let's first look at the word of Almighty God.

Almighty God's says: "**The incarnate God is called Christ, and Christ is the flesh donned by the Spirit of God. This flesh is unlike any man that is of the flesh. This difference is because Christ is not of flesh and blood; He is the incarnation of the Spirit. He has both a normal humanity and a complete divinity. His divinity is not possessed by any man. His normal humanity sustains all His normal activities in the flesh, while His divinity carries out the work of God Himself. Be it His humanity or divinity, both submit to the will of the heavenly Father. The essence of Christ is the Spirit, that is, the divinity. Therefore, His essence is that of God Himself….**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Essence of Christ Is Obedience to the Will of the Heavenly Father).

"**God become flesh is called Christ, and so the Christ that can give people the truth is called God. There is nothing excessive about this, for He possesses the essence of God, and possesses God's disposition, and wisdom in His work, that are unattainable by man. Those who call themselves Christ, yet cannot do the work of God, are frauds. Christ is not merely the manifestation of God on earth, but also the particular flesh assumed by God as He carries out and completes His work among man. This flesh cannot be supplanted by just any man, but is a flesh**

that can adequately bear God's work on earth, and express the disposition of God, and well represent God, and provide man with life" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life).

Christ is God's Spirit realized in the flesh, so the essence of Christ is divinity. Here we must understand that the realization of God's Spirit in the flesh means the appearance of God in the flesh. The Spirit of God is the Holy Spirit, which is God Himself. God's essence of life, the disposition of God, God's possessions and being are all actualized in the flesh. Thus, the life of Christ, the disposition of Christ, and the possessions and being of Christ have come from the actualization of God's Spirit. Therefore, Christ is the incarnate God Himself. Who can fathom God's life? The life of God is realized in Christ, so that no matter how man pursues the truth, he can never live out the essence of Christ's life because Christ is the incarnate God. Man is not God incarnate; he does not have the divine essence at all. How can he live out Christ? This is absolutely impossible. Someone says he wants to emulate Christ and live out Christ. That is because he does not know the essence of Christ and says such arrogant words. Therefore, the statement "live out Christ" is not valid. Christ is the embodiment of the truth. The abundance of Christ is infinite. However, the truth expressed by Christ is finite. It is a very small part of the truth which is expressed according to man's stature and what man can attain. Compared to the essence of Christ's life, these truths are like a drop in the ocean. Even if man can live out a little bit of the reality of truth, possess a little bit of the image of Christ, this does not count as really living out Christ. Living out the essence of the life of Christ can never be attained by man. However man pursues the truth, what he can attain is limited. We are always infants before God, so man can never say that when he is alive, he is Christ. The statement

“Man can become God if he can live out Christ” is not valid at all! Paul said that he was Christ when he was alive. This was too arrogant and senseless. It was simply inconsistent with the truth. Some people would like to emulate Christ. One cannot say this is wrong. To emulate Christ, one should emulate Christ’s absolute obedience to God, true love for God, carrying out of God’s will, and faithfulness to God unto death. This is praised by God. But no matter how we emulate, it is true that we can never live out Christ, because the essence of Christ’s life is that of God incarnate, it’s not from experience. So one can never live out Christ.

—The movie script of Rapture in Peril

XV. Questions and Answers on Dissecting the Essence of the Pharisees

Question 1: Religious pastors and elders are all people who serve God in the church. It is reasonable to say that, when it comes to the return of the Lord, they should be watching and waiting, and treating it with caution. But why do they not only not seek or investigate the work of Almighty God of the last days, and instead make up rumors, judge and condemn Almighty God, and deceive and restrict believers from investigating the true way?

Answer: This question is actually not strange. Back when the Lord Jesus came to work, He already once faced the furious opposition, resistance and condemnation of the religious world's chief priests, scribes and Pharisees, and was crucified by them in the end. This is a historical fact! Then please think, everybody, why was the Lord Jesus crucified by the religious world? If we can see through this question then it won't be hard to understand the reason why Almighty God of the last days has been crucified by the religious world. Everything expressed by Almighty God of the last days is the truth, and all that He does is precisely God's judgment work of the last days, and yet He faces furious condemnation and blasphemy from religious pastors and elders. This is indeed very thought-provoking! Condemning the work of God in the last days like this is blaspheming the Holy Spirit. This is basically the same as nailing Christ of the last days to the cross. The substance of this problem is too serious! It's just that some people can't see through this, and say that religious pastors and elders are all people in churches who serve God, but why don't they seek and investigate the true way, and instead condemn it? This is related to their nature. We all know that the Jewish chief priests, scribes and Pharisees were people in temples who served God. During the period the Lord Jesus worked among them, many people admitted that the Lord Jesus' work and words had authority and power. But why could they still nail the Lord Jesus to the cross? Based on the records of the Bible we know that the Lord

Jesus' work and preaching at the time shook up the entire Jewish state. The Lord Jesus used five loaves of bread and two fish to feed 5,000 people, made cripples walk, made the blind see, resurrected the dead, and so forth, majorly rocking all of Judea. Many people were all spreading the Lord Jesus' name and the facts of His work. The number of people who followed the Lord Jesus also grew and grew. But when those chief priests, scribes and Pharisees saw it they harbored hate in their hearts. They knew clearly in their hearts that if the Lord Jesus continued what He was doing then all Jewish believers would soon be following the Lord Jesus and it would not take long for all of Judaism to be paralyzed and shut down. Therefore, to protect the survival of Judaism, to protect the sanctity of the Bible, and actually also to protect their status and livelihoods, they did all they could to condemn, make up rumors about and frame the Lord Jesus, and in the end colluded with the Roman government to nail the Lord Jesus to the cross. Similarly, today's religious pastors and elders see that the words expressed by Almighty God are all the truth and carry authority and power. If these words are spread to all those in religious circles who love the truth, they will all acknowledge that this is the word of God and the voice of God, and will all admit that the Lord Jesus has already returned. Therefore, pastors and elders are extremely afraid of believers seeing Almighty God's words and hearing God's voice. They're even more afraid that believers will all follow Almighty God, as this will make them lose their status and livelihoods. As a result, they especially despise Almighty God and furiously make up rumors about, judge, resist and condemn Almighty God, doing all they can to disrupt and block believers from investigating the true way. This is a fact that all discerning people can see clearly. It shows that the root of religious pastors and elders resisting and condemning Almighty God is the same as that of Jewish Pharisees resisting the Lord Jesus. It is all dominated

by their satanic nature that is fed up with the truth, hates the truth and resists God! The facts are sufficient to prove that any religious elders and pastors who resist and condemn Almighty God, are not truly people who serve God and are all like the genuinely hypocritical Pharisees. They are all antichrists!

The Jewish Pharisees at the time were exposed as antichrists because of the work of the Lord Jesus. Today's religious pastors and elders have also been exposed as antichrists because of the work of Almighty God of the last days. Their truth-hating substance is the same. They are all antichrists who deny God incarnate. Just as the Bible says, "**For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist**" (2Jn 1:7). "**Hereby know you the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: And every spirit that confesses not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof you have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world**" (1Jn 4:2-3). Therefore, we can be absolutely sure that all those who don't admit that God is come in the flesh are all antichrists. All those who refuse to accept, condemn and resist God in the flesh are all antichrists. Those who truly believe in and know God will surely accept the work of God in the flesh. Those who do not sincerely believe in and know God will surely condemn and resist God in the flesh. The work of Christ of the last days, Almighty God, has exposed all antichrists and unbelievers and separated sheep from goats, the good from the evil. That way, man is sorted in accordance with his own kind. Therefore, if believers cannot distinguish antichrists, it will be very easy for them to be deceived and controlled, making it difficult for them to return before God's throne!

—The movie script of Break Through the Snare

Question 2: Pastors and elders often read the scriptures and preach to people, pray for brothers and sisters, have love for believers and ask people to hold on to the Bible. If we say they are hypocritical Pharisees, most believers will not be able to see through or distinguish. Then please communicate to us in more detail.

Answer: Back then, the Jewish Pharisees often explained the Scriptures and prayed for believers in synagogues. Didn't they appear quite godly to people too? Then why did the Lord Jesus expose and curse the Pharisees, saying woe to the hypocritical Pharisees? Could the Lord Jesus have wronged them? Do people not believe that the word of the Lord Jesus is the truth? Do people still suspect that the Lord Jesus did the wrong thing? Distinguishing whether pastors and elders are hypocritical Pharisees and antichrists or not cannot be done by just looking at how they treat people on the outside. The main thing is to look at how they treat the Lord and the truth. On the outside they can be loving toward believers, but do they have love toward the Lord? If they are quite loving toward people but are full of boredom and hate toward the Lord and the truth, and judge and condemn Christ of the last days—Almighty God, then aren't they hypocritical Pharisees? Aren't they antichrists? They seem to preach and work hard outwardly, but if it is for the sake of being crowned and rewarded, then does this mean that they obey and are loyal to the Lord? To distinguish whether someone is hypocritical, you mainly have to look inside their hearts and see their intentions. That is the most important thing about distinguishing. Only after such communication do I understand! God inspects people's hearts. So to see if a person truly loves and obeys the Lord, the main thing is to look at whether they practice and adhere to His word and uphold His commandments, and moreover look at whether they exalt the Lord Jesus and bear witness to the Lord Jesus, and if they follow God's will. We see

that the Pharisees often explained the Scriptures to people in synagogues, held on to the rules of the Bible for everything, and were also loving toward people. But in reality, everything they did was not practicing God's word or upholding God's commandments, but was done to be seen by people. Just as the Lord Jesus said when He exposed them: "**But all their works they do for to be seen of men: they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments**" (Mat 23:5). They even purposely stood in the synagogues and on the street corners to engage in long prayers. During fasting they purposely made their faces look very sad, so that people could tell that they were fasting. They even deliberately did good deeds in the streets so that people could all see. They even continued to hold on to ancient traditions and religious rituals such as "do not eat unless they wash the hands carefully." To deceive people into supporting and worshiping them, the Pharisees kept making a big deal out of small things to disguise themselves, and they only led people to engage in religious worship, singing and praise, or holding on to some ancestral traditions, but did not lead people to practice God's word, uphold God's commandments, and enter the reality of the truth. Moreover, they did not lead people to practice the truth and obey and worship God. All they did was use some external actions to confuse and deceive believers! When the Lord Jesus came to preach and work, for the sake of protecting their own status and livelihoods, these Pharisees who pretended to be godly actually openly abandoned God's laws and commandments under the guise of "defending the Bible." They made up rumors, bore false witness, and furiously condemned and framed the Lord Jesus, doing all they could to block believers from following the Lord Jesus. In the end, they even colluded with those in power to nail the Lord Jesus to the cross! Accordingly, the Pharisees' hypocritical and truth-hating essence was completely exposed. Their

antichrist essence was thereby completely revealed. This shows that the essence of the Pharisees was hypocritical, treacherous, deceitful and malicious. They were all false shepherds who abandoned God's way, deceived people and caged people! They deceived and bound believers, controlling the religious world to oppose God, furiously denying, condemning and hating the incarnate Christ. This is sufficient to prove that they were the antichrists who wanted to erect their own independent kingdom!

Now we see clearly the various expressions of the Pharisees' hypocrisy, when we compare them to today's religious pastors and elders, would we not discover that they are just like the Pharisees and are all people who don't practice the Lord's word or uphold the Lord's commandments, and moreover not people who exalt the Lord and bear witness to the Lord? They are just people who blindly believe in the Bible, worship the Bible, and exalt the Bible. They just hold on to various religious rituals, such as attending regular services, morning watch, breaking bread, partaking of Holy Communion, and so forth. They only pay attention to talking to people about being humble, patient, godly and loving, but they don't love God in their hearts, and moreover they don't obey God and don't have a heart that fears God at all. Their work and preaching only focuses on holding on to and explaining Bible knowledge and theological theory. But when it comes to how to practice and experience the Lord's word, how to uphold the Lord's commandments and how to spread and testify to the Lord's word, how people should follow the will of the heavenly Father, how to truly love God, obey God, and worship God, and all these various things the Lord Jesus asks of mankind, they do not seek, do not explore, and do not figure out the Lord's intentions, and moreover do not lead people to practice or comply. The purpose of them going around

everywhere preaching Bible knowledge and theological theory is to show off themselves, build up themselves, and make people look up to and worship them. Therefore, when Almighty God came to express truths and perform His judgment work of the last days, these pastors and elders, for the sake of achieving permanent power in the religious world, and for their ambition of controlling believers and creating their own independent kingdom, openly violated the word of the Lord Jesus, making up rumors, judging, attacking and blaspheming Almighty God, doing their utmost to block believers from seeking and investigating the true way. For example, the Lord Jesus taught people to be wise virgins: When one hears someone yell "Behold, the bridegroom comes," they should go out to welcome Him. But after pastors and elders heard news of the Lord Jesus' second coming, they instead did all they could to seal off the church and prevent believers from seeking and investigating the true way! The Lord Jesus said, "**You shall love your neighbor as yourself.**" Yet, they incited believers to slander and beat brothers and sisters who testify to Almighty God's work of the last days. The Lord Jesus asked man not to lie, not to bear false witness, but pastors and elders made up all sorts of lies to slander Almighty God, and even colluded with the devilish CCP to resist, condemn Almighty God's work of the last days and smear the Church of Almighty God. From this we can see that what religious pastors and elders have said and done completely violates the Lord's teachings. They are just like the hypocritical Pharisees. They are all people who blindly lead, resist God, and deceive people. Allow me to read a passage of Almighty God's word. Almighty God says, "**If your intention is not to obey God, and you have other aims, then all that you say and do—your prayers before God, and even your every action—will be in opposition to Him. You may be soft-spoken and mild-mannered, your every action and expression may look**

proper, and you may appear to be one who obeys, but when it comes to your intentions and your views about faith in God, everything you do is in opposition to God; everything you do is evil. People who appear as obedient as sheep, but whose hearts harbor evil intentions, are wolves in sheep's clothing. They directly offend God, and God will not spare a single one of them. The Holy Spirit will reveal each and every one of them and show everybody that all those who are hypocrites will, with certainty, be detested and rejected by the Holy Spirit. Worry not: God will reckon with and dispose of every last one of them in turn" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. In Your Faith in God You Should Obey God). These religious pastors and elders appear on the outside to be humble, patient and loving, but in their hearts they are full of treachery, deceit and malice. Under the guise of "defend the true way, protect the flock," they openly resist and condemn Almighty God and plan to control believers to achieve their goal of permanent power in the religious world and setting up their own independent kingdom. These hypocritical Pharisees who hate the truth and hate God are precisely the group of stubborn God-opposing antichrists exposed by Almighty God's work of the last days. All those who truly believe in God should learn how to distinguish their hypocritical essence and satanic, antichrist nature. Don't be deceived, confused, caged and controlled by them anymore. You should seek and investigate the true way and accept Almighty God's work of the last days, and return before God's throne!

—The movie script of Break Through the Snare

Question 3: No matter what, pastors and elders all preach based on the Bible. Isn't explaining the Bible and making people hold on to the Bible exalting and bearing witness to the Lord? Is it wrong for pastors and elders to explain the Bible? How could you say they are hypocritical Pharisees?

Answer: To people, explaining the Bible should not be wrong, but at the same time as explaining the Bible, what they actually do are acts that resist God. What kind of people are these? Aren't they hypocritical Pharisees? Aren't they God-resisting antichrists? Why is explaining the Bible resisting God? Why is it condemning God? I find this so strange. Even communicating in this way there are still people who don't understand and still think that explaining the Bible is exalting and bearing witness to God. The Jewish chief priests, scribes and Pharisees back then were all scripture scholars and experts who often explained the scriptures to people. If explaining the Bible is exalting and bearing witness to God, then why is it that when the Lord Jesus came to preach and work, they instead furiously resisted and condemned the Lord Jesus, and in the end colluded with the government to nail the Lord Jesus to the cross? Modern religious pastors and elders are all people who are familiar with the Bible and have explained the Bible for many years. If explaining the Bible is exalting and bearing witness to God, then why is it that when Almighty God came to express truths and perform His judgment work, they not only failed to seek and investigate, but instead resisted and condemned? What's the problem here? Isn't this a serious problem that all believers should reflect on? Furthermore, if religious leaders explaining the Bible is the same as exalting and bearing witness to God, then in the Age of Grace, why is it that the Lord Jesus did not work in the temple when He came? Why is it that Almighty God of the last days doesn't work in the church when He came? It's because religious leaders don't exalt and bear witness to God at all and

are all hypocritical, arrogant Pharisees. They are all antichrists who control religion and oppose God! How could they possibly allow God to exist or allow the religious world to have voices that bear witness to God?! If the incarnate Christ came into religion and worked and preached in the church, then He would surely be arrested and handed over to the ruling party and crucified. If people went to religious churches to bear witness to God, then they would surely be arrested and persecuted. As the Lord Jesus said, "**Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the middle of wolves. …**" (Mat 10:16) Can people still not see this fact clearly? Based on the fact of religious Pharisees' resisting and condemning God, we should be able to see clearly whether or not exalting the Bible is bearing witness to God. Can people who truly exalt and bear witness to God resist God? Can they see God as their enemy? Additionally, we should all know that the Bible does not contain only God's words but also many words of man. Therefore, exalting the Bible and exalting God are not the same thing. Upholding the Bible and upholding the Lord's commandments are not the same thing. When religious Pharisees explain the Bible, they only focus on explaining man's words in the Bible, explaining Bible knowledge and theological theory, and preaching and bearing witness to man's words, but do not focus on spreading and bearing witness to God's words and the truth expressed by God in the Bible. Can this still be said to be exalting and bearing witness to God? Is this not resisting and betraying God? Therefore, all those who think explaining the Bible is exalting and bearing witness to God don't understand spiritual matters and cannot see through the essence of the problem. They are all confused people, people who worship and blindly believe in and follow religious leaders. Is this not a fact?

Back then, those Jewish Pharisees only focused on explaining Bible knowledge and doctrines, as well as engaging in religious rituals and

observing religious rules and human traditions, but instead abandoned God's commandments and veered off God's way, such that when the Lord Jesus came, they furiously resisted, condemned the Lord Jesus and nailed Him to the cross. As a result, they were cursed and punished by God. Although today's religious pastors and elders often explain the Bible and bear witness to the Bible to people, they do not pay attention to spreading and bearing witness to God's word, or pay attention to preaching the Lord Jesus' will and His requirements of man, and also rarely bear witness to the Lord Jesus' divine substance and loveliness. They don't guide people to practice and experience the Lord's word, and moreover do not pay attention to how to uphold the Lord's commandments and follow God's will. They only focus on explaining and exalting the words of man in the Bible, asking others to treat man's words in the Bible as God's words and as the truth to practice and uphold. When they resolve problems it is also mostly based on man's words in the Bible instead of God's words in the Bible. They use man's words in the Bible to reject and resist God's words. On the issue of entry into the kingdom of heaven, for instance, the Lord Jesus clearly told people: "**Not every one that said to me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of my Father which is in heaven**" (Mat 7:21). But pastors and elders instead put the words of the Lord Jesus aside and treat man's words in the Bible as the truth and as the standard for man's entry into the kingdom of heaven, teaching people that they only need to toil and work for the Lord to enter the kingdom of heaven. They use man's words to replace God's words and reject God's words, and as a result lead people astray. This is the most treacherous, malicious aspect of religious pastors' and elders' resistance of God! They interpret the Bible out of context, using man's words in the Bible to resist and condemn Almighty God, and stopping at nothing to deceive, bind, and

control believers, and block them from investigating and accepting Almighty God's work of the last days, putting them all firmly under their own control. It's just as Almighty God says, "**Look at the leaders of each denomination—they are all arrogant and self-righteous, and their interpretations of the Bible lack context and are guided by their own imaginings. They all rely on gifts and erudition to do their work. If they could not preach at all, would people follow them? They do, after all, possess some knowledge and can preach on some doctrine, or they know how to win others over and make use of some artifice. They use these to bring people before themselves and deceive them. Nominally, those people believe in God, but in reality, they follow their leaders. When they encounter someone preaching the true way, some of them say, 'We have to consult our leader about our faith.' A human is the medium of their faith in God; is that not a problem? What have those leaders become, then? Have they not become Pharisees, false shepherds, antichrists, and stumbling blocks to people's acceptance of the true way?**" (The Word, Vol. 3. The Discourses of Christ of the Last Days. Only to Pursue the Truth Is Truly to Believe in God). Based on these facts, how can we say that religious pastors and elders explaining the Bible is exalting and bearing witness to God? Are they not taking advantage of the opportunity of explaining the Bible to misinterpret the Bible and take things out of context to resist God? They have long become obstacles and stumbling blocks to people accepting the true way and returning to God, and are precisely the antichrists exposed by the work of Almighty God in the last days. Can people still not see this fact clearly?

According to people's conceptions, explaining the Bible is the same as exalting and bearing witness to God, but from the Pharisees' and religious leaders' explaining of the Bible, we can see that this is not really the case.

What religious Pharisees are exalting and bearing witness to is the Bible and not God. Their preaching is mainly explaining man's words in the Bible and not God's words. They use man's words in the Bible to replace and resist God's words, and take the words of man in the Bible out of context in order to resist and draw conclusions about God. The purpose of their explaining of the Bible is not to exalt and bear witness to God, but to deceive and control people and achieve their despicable purposes. Such explaining of the Bible is resisting God and doing evil! That is why, when God comes to work, they use the Bible to keep a tight grip on people making them blindly believe in the Bible and hold on to the Bible, taking them all on the road to resisting God. This shows that Pharisees' and religious leaders' explaining of the Bible is a means of resisting God. They are completely taking the words of man in the Bible out of context to resist and oppose God, to set up their own independent kingdom. Then how should one explain the Bible to be exalting and bearing witness to God? What the Bible records is God's work and testimonies of God. Explaining the Bible means to exalt and bear witness to God in accordance with God's words in the Bible and the truths in the Bible. It is to spread and bear witness to God's words in the Bible. It is to communicate God's intentions in accordance with God's requirements and based on God's words and communicate the truth in God's words. It is to bring people testimonies of God's work and His disposition, and to bear witness to God's essence and His loveliness. It is to lead people to practice and experience God's words, thus allowing them to achieve entry into the reality of Go's words. It is to exalt the Lord Jesus and bear witness to Him in all things. Only by explaining the Bible in such ways is one exalting and bearing witness to God, being after God's heart, and genuinely serving God. The words of man in the Bible can only be used as reference and supplement, and can never be

compared to God's words. Yet religious pastors and elders only care about explaining the words of man in the Bible. They treat the words of man in the Bible as God's words, as the truth, using it as a guideline for their conduct and behavior, as the basis of the way they handle problems. But they rarely mention God's words, and they use the words of man in the Bible to replace God's words and leave God's words behind. Is explaining the Bible like that bearing witness to God? Isn't this just exalting and bearing witness to man? Additionally, when they explain the Bible they only focus on explaining theological theory, explaining characters, locations, and historical backgrounds in the Bible to show off. Isn't this just deceiving and trapping people? Isn't this making people worship and follow them? Back then, those hypocritical Pharisees took advantage of their opportunity of explaining the Bible to misinterpret the Bible in order to deceive and control people, and in the end they took believers on the road to following man and resisting God, and turned Judaism into a God-opposing independent kingdom. In the last days, religious pastors and elders are also taking advantage of explaining the Bible to make people blindly believe in and worship the Bible, and are using the Bible to replace God's place in people's hearts, unwittingly taking believers on the road to betraying the Lord's word and resisting God, also turning the religious world into a God-opposing independent kingdom, a staunch bastion of resistance to God's work. Isn't explaining the Bible like they do resisting and blaspheming God? Isn't this precisely the deception of the antichrist Pharisees in opposing God and setting up their own independent kingdom? How could it be said to be exalting and bearing witness to God? The cunningness of religious Pharisees in resisting God lies in using their opportunity to explain the Bible to misinterpret the Bible in order to deceive and control people. The Bible was originally a testimony of God. Based on man's conceptions,

they are always bearing witness to God no matter how they explain the Bible, yet the hypocritical Pharisees take advantage of this conception of man, doing their utmost in exalting and bearing witness to the Bible. They use the Bible to replace God and to resist God and deceive people. This makes people all blindly believe in and worship the Bible, and makes people worship and follow Bible scholars like them and thus betray God. This is Satan's most treacherous, cunning deception to resist God and deceive people, and the aspect that is most difficult for people to see through and the easiest for them to be deceived with.

Let's take a look at Almighty God's words: "**There are those who read the Bible in grand churches and recite it all day long, yet not one among them understands the purpose of God's work. Not one among them is able to know God; still less can any one among them accord with God's will. They are all worthless, vile people, each standing on high to lecture God. They willfully oppose God even as they carry His banner. Claiming faith in God, still they eat the flesh and drink the blood of man. All such people are devils that devour the soul of man, head demons that deliberately get in the way of those trying to step onto the right path, and stumbling blocks impeding those who seek God. They may appear of 'sound constitution,' but how are their followers to know that they are none other than antichrists who lead people to stand against God? How are their followers to know that they are living devils dedicated to the devouring of human souls?**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. All People Who Do Not Know God Are People Who Oppose God). "**Most rebellious of all are those who intentionally defy and resist God. They are the enemies of God, the antichrists. Theirs is always an attitude of hostility toward the new work of God; they never have the slightest inclination to submit,**

nor have they ever gladly submitted or humbled themselves. They exalt themselves before others and never submit to anyone. Before God, they consider themselves the best at preaching the word, and the most skillful in working on others. Never do they discard the 'treasures' in their possession, but treat them as family heirlooms for worship, for preaching about to others, and they use them to lecture those fools who idolize them. There are indeed a certain number of people like this in the church. It can be said that they are 'indomitable heroes,' generation after generation sojourning in the house of God. They take preaching the word (doctrine) to be their highest duty. Year after year, generation after generation, they go about vigorously enforcing their 'sacred and inviolable' duty. None dare touch them; not a single person dares openly reproach them. They become 'kings' in the house of God, running rampant as they tyrannize others from age to age. This pack of demons seeks to join hands and demolish My work; how can I allow these living devils to exist before My eyes?" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Those Who Obey God With a True Heart Shall Surely Be Gained by God). Evidently, even though religious pastors and elders often explain the Bible, they are not people who understand the truth and know God. They are precisely the hypocritical Pharisees. They are false shepherds and workers who deceive, control, bind and harm people. They lead people to deny Christ, condemn Christ, to the extent of even resisting and opposing God, making them all into Satan's accomplices and puppets. Anyone with eyes can see that this is the case.

—The movie script of Break Through the Snare

Question 4: Religious pastors and elders often explain the words of man in the Bible, especially the words of Paul, rather than spread the words of the Lord or discuss the intentions of the Lord Jesus. This is a fact. But there is still something I don't understand. Isn't all scripture inspired by God? Isn't everything in the Bible the word of God? Why do you have to distinguish the words of man and the words of God in the Bible so clearly? Aren't all the words of man in the Bible inspired by God?

Answer: "All scripture is given by inspiration of God." Just who said this, do you know? Did God say it or did man say it? On what basis do you say "All scripture is given by inspiration of God"? "All scripture is given by inspiration of God." This was not said by Jehovah God, or by the Lord Jesus or by the Holy Spirit, but by Paul. Paul is not Christ; he is just a corrupted human being. How could he know that all scripture is inspired by God? Whether or not the Bible is inspired by God is something only God knows. Only Christ can answer this question clearly, because man does not know at all and cannot see through to these things. The Bible began when Moses wrote Genesis, and it was at least 1,000 years later that the Lord Jesus began His work. Paul did not know any of the authors of the Scripture at all. How could he know that the words of those people were inspired by God? Were those authors able to tell Paul: that their words were all inspired by God? This shows that what Paul said has no basis in fact whatsoever! What he said was only his personal knowledge of the Bible. He didn't represent the Lord Jesus and moreover didn't represent the Holy Spirit. This is the truth! Just based on these words of Paul, religious pastors and elders determine that all words in the Bible are inspired by God and are all the word of God. This completely contravenes historical fact! In the apostolic age, after the letters of the apostles were passed on to the church, everyone would have said that they were the words of the apostles, the words of

Brother Paul. No one would have said that these words were inspired by God or that they were the words of the Lord Jesus. Even Paul himself would not have dared to say that his words were God's words, or that they were inspired by God, and much less that he talked on behalf of the Lord Jesus. Therefore, the phrase "All scripture is given by inspiration of God" simply cannot stand! "All scripture is given by inspiration of God" was only said by Paul alone, and it's only referring to the Old Testament, and yet people all believe it. Why can people believe this statement from Paul? Would they believe it had someone else made this statement? This is sufficient to prove that people believe in Paul too blindly and worship Paul. Anything said by Paul is thought to be God's words. Isn't this man's notions and imaginations? This completely reveals that there is only Paul in man's hearts and not the Lord Jesus. They are all people who worship man and follow man, rather than people who fear the Lord and exalt the Lord.

—The movie script of Break Through the Snare

Question 5: I believe that all scripture is inspired by God! The words of Paul cannot be wrong! Since you differentiate the words of God and the words of man in the Bible so clearly, then how does one distinguish which are God's words and which are man's words?

Answer: Anyone who has read the Bible, as long as they have normal thinking, can see clearly which words in the Bible are God's words and which are man's words. It's just that most people have been misled by Paul's statement that "All scripture is given by inspiration of God." Actually, in the entire Bible, only the words of Jehovah God, the words of God conveyed by the prophets, the words of the Lord Jesus, the words of the Holy Spirit, and the words God revealed to John in Revelation come directly from God and are God's words. Apart from these, those biographies of man and letters of apostles are all words of man. They only represent their personal experiences and insights, not God's words, and moreover cannot be said to be the word of God! Because of Paul's statement that "All scripture is given by inspiration of God," religious pastors and elders have determined that all words in the Bible are God's words and regarded man's words in the Bible as God's words. In their work and sermons, they only focus on preaching and exalting man's words, but don't communicate or bear witness to God's words. They use man's words to replace God's words, which is completely abandoning God's commandments. The substance of this is serious! It has led to the entire religious world only worshiping man's words in the Bible and getting away from God's words, only paying attention to following man's words but abandoning God's words. Is this not falling for Satan's deception? As a result, when Almighty God came to do His judgment work of the last days and express the truth to save mankind, people stubbornly held on to the Bible due to the deception of these fallacies, rejecting, condemning and resisting the work of Almighty God in

the last days. This is concrete evidence of the religious Pharisees' resistance to God and also a clear symbol of their hypocrisy.

—The movie script of Break Through the Snare

Question 6: I don't agree with what you've said! Belief in God is belief in the Bible. Moving away from the Bible is not believing in God!

Answer: "Believing in God is believing in the Bible, leaving the Bible is not believing in God," this statement is wrong! Can the Bible save people? Can the Bible replace God? Can the Bible replace the work of the Holy Spirit? Can it represent God and perform His judgment work of the last days? Is God greater or is the Bible greater? Did God or the Bible come first? There was no Bible in the time of Abraham, so can you say that Abraham did not believe in God? There was also no Bible when Moses led the Israelites out of Egypt, so can you say Moses did not believe in God? God is God, the Bible is the Bible. The Bible cannot represent God, and the Bible moreover is not God. The Bible is just a historical record of God's past work, just testimonies of God. The Bible cannot replace God's work and utterances of the last days, and moreover cannot replace God in saving man! Therefore, believing in the Bible does not equate to believing in God. If people treat the Bible as God, it is seriously resisting and blaspheming God! The Bible is just a testimony to God's work. The Bible cannot represent God in bestowing life upon mankind, and moreover cannot replace the work of the Holy Spirit. There is no life in the Bible. Only Christ is the truth, the way, and the life. Only by accepting Christ and following Christ can man gain the work of the Holy Spirit and obtain life. The Lord Jesus said, "**Search the scriptures; for in them you think you have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me. And you will not come to me, that you might have life**" (Jhn 5:39-40). That is why if believers only believe in the Bible but don't accept or follow Christ, they will not be able to receive truth and life, and also will, because they hold on to the Bible, resist and condemn Christ, and become God-opposing antichrists. Back then, it was because the Jewish Pharisees only blindly

believed in and worshiped the Bible, saw the Bible as higher than all and even treated the Bible as God, that in the end, when the Lord Jesus came to work, they stubbornly held on to the Bible and protected the Bible, using the letters of the Bible to try and trip up the Lord Jesus and furiously resist and condemn Him. Ultimately, they crucified the Lord Jesus, having charged Him with not adhering to the Old Testament, committing a heinous crime. In the last days, religious pastors and elders only blindly believe in and worship the Bible. They protect the Bible, bear witness to the Bible, and use the Bible to replace God in all that they do. When Almighty God comes to express truths and perform His judgment work of the last days, they are just like the Pharisees in that, for the sake of protecting the status of the Bible in people's hearts, they furiously resist, condemn and blaspheme Almighty God, Christ of the last days. They have already committed the sin of crucifying Christ again, severely offending God's disposition. Isn't this a fact everyone can see? The Bible was originally a testimony of God, but why did the Pharisees and religious leaders use the Bible to replace God and resist God? Why would they rather make people exalt and worship the Bible than let them come before God to obey and worship God? This is Satan's trick to deceive people! It is because Satan is most afraid that mankind will obey and worship God, but Satan is not at all afraid of mankind worshiping and exalting the Bible. Therefore, since Satan cannot deny the Bible, it adopts this trick to make people worship and blindly believe in the Bible, and to let the Bible replace God, making people only believe in the Bible and hold on to the Bible, but not acknowledge God and the truth, such that even when they discover that everything Christ says is the truth, they don't dare to move away from the Bible and betray religion. As a result, man may believes in God nominally, but in reality they have already cut off their relationship with God. This is the cunningness of

Satan's resistance of God and also the thing that is most difficult for man to discern. Therefore, if believers only blindly believe in the Bible and worship the Bible, it means they have fallen for Satan's trick and embarked on the road to resisting and betraying God. If they can still take the Bible out of context and use the words of man in the Bible to deny and condemn Christ, then they have become God-opposing antichrists! If people always worship the Bible, will their hearts still have a place for God? If the Bible has replaced God in one's heart, then are they still someone who believes in God? As believers in God, we should be God's servant and a servant of truth, rather than a servant of the Bible. If a person still insists that believing in God is believing in the Bible, then God does not have a place in their heart at all. They are simply not believing in God, but are people who deny and resist God. Such a person is destined to be eliminated by God!

Let's take another look at Almighty God's words. Almighty God says, "**Those who only care about the words of the Bible and are concerned neither with the truth nor with seeking My footsteps—they are against Me, for they limit Me according to the Bible, constrain Me within the Bible, and so are blasphemous in the extreme toward Me. How could such people come before Me? They pay no heed to My deeds, or My will, or the truth, but instead obsess over words—words that kill. How could such people be compatible with Me?**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. You Should Seek the Way of Compatibility With Christ). "**They believe in My existence only within the scope of the Bible, and they equate Me with the Bible; without the Bible there is no Me, and without Me there is no Bible. … to the extent that they use verses from the Bible to measure every word I say and to condemn Me. What they seek is not the way of compatibility with Me or the way of compatibility with the truth, but the way of compatibility with the**

words of the Bible, and they believe that anything that does not conform to the Bible is, without exception, not My work. Are such people not the dutiful descendants of the Pharisees? The Jewish Pharisees used the law of Moses to condemn Jesus. They did not seek compatibility with the Jesus of that time, but diligently followed the law to the letter, to the extent that—after having charged Him with not following the law of the Old Testament and not being the Messiah—they ultimately nailed the innocent Jesus to the cross" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. You Should Seek the Way of Compatibility With Christ). "**And what of people today? Christ has come to release the truth, yet they would rather expel Him from this world so that they may gain entry into heaven and receive grace. They would rather completely deny the coming of the truth in order to safeguard the interests of the Bible, and they would rather nail the Christ returned to flesh to the cross again in order to ensure the everlasting existence of the Bible. How can man receive My salvation when his heart is so malicious and his nature so antagonistic toward Me?**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. You Should Seek the Way of Compatibility With Christ). Over the long run, religious leaders have all taught people that "Believing in God is believing in the Bible, leaving the Bible is not believing in God." They do their utmost to exalt and bear witness to the Bible, equating the Bible and God and using the Bible to replace God in people's hearts, making people have more and more blind faith in the Bible, worship the Bible, and treat the Bible as God. They use the Bible as the basis for everything. Even when Christ comes, they use the letters of the Bible as the basis to delimit Christ, deny Christ, and condemn and resist Christ. On the surface, religious pastors and elders are bringing people before the Bible, but in fact they are bringing people before

themselves! Because people blindly believe in the Bible, they worship these biblical scholars and experts even more. This is precisely the most despicable trick employed by the religious Pharisees throughout the ages to misinterpret the Bible, use the letters of the Bible to deceive and control people, and block people from returning to God! This is the cunningness of Satan and also factual proof of them setting up their own independent kingdom! In fact, many religious pastors and elders are basically unbelievers. They only believe in the Bible but don't believe in God. They treat the records in the Bible as mythical stories and don't believe that they are the facts of God's work. Therefore, they don't admit that God became flesh at all! If anyone bears witness to God incarnate, they will do their utmost to deny and furiously resist and condemn Him. Such people are not believers at all! Therefore, all those who don't admit that God came in the flesh are antichrists. This is without a doubt! This shows that the religious world has been completely controlled by Pharisees and antichrists, and has become a staunch bastion that resists God and an independent kingdom that opposes God. This is an undeniable fact! People of religion may believe in God, but in actuality they have been deceived and controlled by Pharisees and antichrists, becoming the accomplices and puppets of antichrists! Therefore, people who believe in the God in religion cannot be saved.

—The movie script of Break Through the Snare

Question 7: Most believers now still think that by believing in God in religion they are believing in the Lord Jesus and not pastors and elders, so how can they not be saved?

Answer: What kind of place is religion? It's the world of the Pharisees, the old nest of antichrists! To think that you can be saved by believing in God there is just wishful thinking! Why can't one be saved if they believe in God in religion? The main reason is that, when God performed new work in the last days, the work of the Holy Spirit has been transferred along with God's new work, and the religious world thus lost the work of the Holy Spirit, becoming a wasteland. Additionally, the religious world has been completely controlled by the hypocritical Pharisees and antichrists, and has long become a place that resists God. Not only is the Holy Spirit not working in religion, God incarnate also does not come into religion to work. Therefore, one cannot experience God's work of the last days by believing in God in religion. They cannot eat, drink and enjoy the words of God in the last days, and thus naturally fall in the darkness. If people don't seek and investigate the true way now, it will be very easy to collapse in the wasteland and not receive God's salvation! People who have fallen in the wasteland of the religious world only hold on to the Bible during meetings and cannot enjoy God's present words. Without the work and guidance of the Holy Spirit, the God man believes in is a vague one. All their communications at meetings are about records of God's work and utterances in the Bible from the past. How can such people gain the salvation of God of the last days and receive God's promise? It's just like back when the Lord Jesus started working outside of the temple. The temple became a chaotic wasteland, a den of thieves. Because they did not follow the Lord Jesus' work, those who remained in the temple were still holding onto the old laws and rules, naturally losing out on the Lord's salvation.

Similarly, now in the last days, Almighty God has performed His work of judgment beginning from the house of God, expressing truths to judge and cleanse mankind, making man break away from Satan's corrupt disposition and influences to gain God's salvation, and be perfected by God into an overcomer and directly taken up into His kingdom. This is a golden opportunity! If man does not follow Almighty God's work of the last days, they will not be able to receive salvation and enter the kingdom of heaven. Let's read some from Almighty God's words. Almighty God says, "**Those who do not accept the new work of God are bereft of the presence of God, and, moreover, devoid of the blessings and protection of God. Most of their words and actions hold to the past requirements of the Holy Spirit's work; they are doctrine, not truth. Such doctrine and regulation are sufficient to prove that the gathering together of these people is nothing but religion; they are not the chosen ones, or the objects of God's work. The assembly of all those among them can only be called a grand congress of religion, and cannot be called a church. This is an unalterable fact. They do not have the Holy Spirit's new work; what they do seems redolent of religion, what they live out seems replete with religion; they do not possess the presence and work of the Holy Spirit, much less are they eligible to receive the discipline or enlightenment of the Holy Spirit. … They have no knowledge of man's rebelliousness and opposition, have no knowledge of all of man's evildoing, much less do they know all of God's work and God's present will. They are all ignorant, base people, and they are scum that are unfit to be called believers!**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Work and Man's Practice). "**Those who wish to gain life without relying on the truth spoken by Christ are the most ridiculous people on earth, and those who do not accept the way of life**

brought by Christ are lost in fantasy. And so I say that those who do not accept Christ of the last days shall forever be despised by God. Christ is man's gateway to the kingdom during the last days, and there are none who can go around Him. None may be perfected by God except through Christ. You believe in God, and so you must accept His words and obey His way. You cannot only think of gaining blessings while being incapable of receiving the truth and incapable of accepting the provision of life. Christ comes during the last days so that all those who truly believe in Him may be provided with life. His work is for the sake of concluding the old age and entering the new one, and His work is the path that must be taken by all those who would enter the new age. If you are incapable of acknowledging Him, and instead condemn, blaspheme, or even persecute Him, then you are bound to burn for eternity and shall never enter the kingdom of God" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life).. This shows that all those who don't accept the work of Almighty God in the last days and those who don't obey God's present work and words are objects of God's loathing. This way, those who remain in religious places have naturally lost God's guidance and are unable to gain the supply of God's actual words. They can only fall into the darkness and be eliminated, losing God's salvation of the last days. Just like it was in the Age of Grace, people still held on to the work and regulations from the Age of Law, naturally losing out on the salvation of the Lord Jesus. In the Age of Kingdom, if people still hold on to the work and regulations from the Age of Grace, they will naturally be abandoned and eliminated by God and will not be saved into the heavenly kingdom! This is a fact nobody can change!

Believing in God in religion and yet still wanting to be saved—is this not daydreaming? Wanting to please Satan and antichrists on the one hand and on the other still wanting to receive God's salvation— is that possible? The religious world is controlled by hypocritical Pharisees and controlled by religious pastors and elders. The reality is that it is controlled by these God-opposing antichrists. This is an established fact! When pastors and elders work and preach, they never pay attention to explaining or bearing witness to the Lord’s words, or bearing witness to God’s work and His disposition in the Bible. They only pay attention to explaining man’s words in the Bible and use man’s words in the Bible to replace God’s words and make God’s words irrelevant, making people all follow man’s words while keeping away from God's words. Additionally, they also focus on explaining biblical knowledge and theological theory, explaining characters in the Bible, historical background, and so forth. They explain these things to show off and make others worship them, taking people on the path to following man, worshiping man and resisting God. Especially when Almighty God comes to do His work of the last days, they furiously resist and condemn Almighty God, and do all they could to block and restrict people from seeking and investigating the true way, prohibiting people from accepting the truths expressed by Almighty God and not letting them receive the supply of Almighty God's words. They only let people accept their various fallacies and ideological theories. Therefore, when people believe in God in the religious places controlled by Pharisees and antichrists, and accept the teachings of religious Pharisees, their thoughts and viewpoints, choices, and ability to receive are all influenced and affected by them. They naturally grow darker and darker inside and become isolated from God! When Almighty God comes to do His work in the last days, they are bound and controlled by religious Pharisees and antichrists,

and so they won't able to hear God's actual utterances or enjoy the supply of the living water of life flowing from God's throne. That way, they won't be able to receive God's salvation of the last days. More frightening is that, even though people believe in God in religion, what they follow are men, antichrists, and the path they walk is precisely that of the Pharisees and antichrists. After a while, they will naturally also turn into Pharisees. How could they then become people who follow God's will and enter the kingdom of heaven? That's certainly impossible! Now, the essence of the religious world has been thoroughly revealed through the work of Almighty God of the last days. The religious world is not the kingdom of heaven; it is the old nest of antichrists. It is a staunch bastion that resists God, a satanic kingdom that opposes God! Hence, people are unable to achieve salvation by believing in God in religion. Even if they are someone who loves the truth, since they don't accept Almighty God's work of the last days, they won't be able to gain the supply of the words expressed by Christ of the last days and also won't be able to receive God's salvation!

—The movie script of Break Through the Snare

Question 8: Even though the religious world is ruled by pastors and elders and they are hypocrites who walk the path of the Pharisees, what do their sins have to do with us? Although we follow and listen to them, who we believe in is the Lord Jesus and not pastors and elders. I feel we have not embarked on the path of the Pharisees. How come we have also become Pharisees?

Answer: There are a lot of people in religion who blindly believe in and worship and follow Pharisees. So whether the path they walk is the path of the Pharisees is obvious once you think about it. You dare say you worship and protect Pharisees in your heart but have nothing to do with their sins? You dare say you follow hypocritical Pharisees, but aren't like them, a person who resists God? Can people still not see through such a simple question? The type of person you follow is the type of path you walk. If you follow the Pharisees then you are on the Pharisees' path. If you walk the path of the Pharisees then you are naturally the same type of person as the Pharisees. Whom a person follows and what path they choose is all directly related to their nature. Whoever follows the Pharisees has the same nature and essence as the Pharisees. This is an undeniable truth! The essence of Pharisees is hypocrisy. They believe in God but don't love the truth or seek life. They only believe in a vague God up in heaven and their own notions and imaginations, but they don't believe in or admit Christ incarnate. Strictly speaking, they are all unbelievers. Their believing in God is researching theology and treating faith in God as a form of knowledge to conduct research. Their livelihoods depend on researching the Bible and theology. In their hearts, the Bible is their livelihood. They think the better they are at explaining biblical knowledge and theological theory, the more there will be people who worship them and the higher and more firmly they can stand on the podium, and the more stable their status will be. It's

precisely because Pharisees are people who only live for their status and livelihood, and are people who are fed up with and despise the truth, that when the Lord Jesus became flesh and came to work, they stubbornly held on to their own notions and imaginations and biblical knowledge for the sake of protecting their own status and livelihood, stopping at nothing to resist and condemn the Lord Jesus and oppose God. From the words of Almighty God we can completely see the Pharisees' truth-hating essence and the roots of their resistance to God. Almighty God says, "**Do you wish to know the root of why the Pharisees opposed Jesus? Do you wish to know the essence of the Pharisees? They were full of fantasies about the Messiah. What is more, they believed only that the Messiah would come, yet did not seek the life truth. … they made the mistake of clinging in vain to the name of the Messiah while opposing the essence of the Messiah by any means possible. These Pharisees in essence were stubborn, arrogant, and did not obey the truth. The principle of their belief in God was: No matter how profound Your preaching, no matter how high Your authority, You are not Christ unless You are called the Messiah. Are these views not preposterous and ridiculous?**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. By the Time You Behold the Spiritual Body of Jesus, God Will Have Made Heaven and Earth Anew). "**Many of those who do not pursue reality become the enemies of God incarnate, become antichrists. Is this not an obvious fact? In the past, when God had yet to become flesh, you may have been a religious figure, or a devout believer. After God became flesh, many such devout believers unwittingly became antichrists. Do you know what is going on here? In your belief in God, you do not concentrate on reality or pursue the truth, but instead obsess over falsehoods—is this not the clearest source of your enmity to God incarnate? God incarnate is called Christ,**

so are not all those who do not believe in God incarnate antichrists?" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Those Who Know God and His Work Can Satisfy God). This shows that in nature the religious Pharisees are fed up with the truth and hates the truth. They only believe in their own notions and imaginations. They only believe in the theological theories researched and developed by themselves, but they don't believe in Christ incarnate or the truths expressed by Christ. They are all enemies of God incarnate. They are all antichrists exposed by the work of God's incarnation in the last days! Those who follow them are the same as them, also stubbornly holding on to their notions and imaginations as well as biblical knowledge and theological theory. They follow them in denying Christ, resisting and condemning Christ, refusing to accept the truth and treating Christ as the enemy! The facts are sufficient to prove that, in nature and substance, anyone who follows the Pharisees is also fed up with the truth and hates the truth! The path they walk is precisely the path of the Pharisees. They belong in the same category as the Pharisees and are all people who oppose Christ! This is a fact all can see. It has already been completely revealed by God's work of the last days!

In religion, people all believe in God under the control of Pharisees, fully following them and listening to them. Like them, they only study the Bible and theology, only paying attention to understanding biblical knowledge and theological theory, and never focusing on seeking the truth or practicing the Lord's words. Like the Pharisees, they only believe in a vague God up in heaven, but don't believe in Christ incarnate of the last days—Almighty God. No matter how authoritative and powerful the truths expressed by Almighty God, they still stubbornly hold on to their notions and imaginations, and follow pastors and elders in resisting and condemning Almighty God. Needless to say, such people are the same type

of people as the Pharisees, and are walking the God-resisting path of the Pharisees! Even if such people are not following the Pharisees, they are still the same type of people as the Pharisees and are also the descendants of the Pharisees because their nature and essence are the same. They are all unbelievers who only believe in themselves but don't love the truth! They are antichrists who despise the truth and oppose Christ! Just as Almighty God has revealed: "**Many in the church have no discernment. When something deceptive occurs, they unexpectedly stand on the side of Satan; they even take offense at being called Satan's lackeys. Though people might say they have no discernment, they always stand on the side without truth, they never stand on the side of the truth at the critical time, they never stand up and argue for the truth. Do they truly lack discernment? Why do they unexpectedly take the side of Satan? Why do they never say one word that is fair and reasonable in support of the truth? Has this situation genuinely arisen as a result of their momentary confusion? The less discernment people have, the less able they are to stand on the side of truth. What does this show? Does it not show that people without discernment love evil? Does it not show that they are the loyal spawn of Satan? Why is it that they are always able to stand on the side of Satan and speak its language? Their every word and deed, the expressions on their faces, are all sufficient to prove that they are not any kind of lovers of the truth; rather, they are people who detest the truth**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. A Warning to Those Who Do Not Practice the Truth). Isn't this the truth? When people in religion follow pastors and elders, they not only listen to them but do all they can to protect them; as soon as they hear someone exposing religious pastors and elders, these people will feel uncomfortable and come out in defense of pastors and elders. What is the problem here? Is

this not sufficient to prove that these people only have pastors and elders in their hearts but no place for God? In these people's hearts, religious pastors and elders are all higher than God. What problem does this show? When man resists God, there aren't many who come out in defense of God. There aren't many who can stand up and bear witness to God! But as soon as the Pharisee essence of religious pastors and elders is exposed, why are there so many people who cry injustice on their behalf and come out in their defense? This is sufficient to prove that these people are the dutiful descendants of the Pharisees. They are the accomplices and lackeys of antichrists! This is a fact no one can deny!

—The movie script of Break Through the Snare

Question 9: I want to know how Almighty God of the last days performs His judgment work to save mankind from Satan's influence. Can you tell us about your experience and testimonies?

Answer: That's a great question! We should ask these key questions in investigating and seeking God's work of the last days. This is too beneficial for us to gain salvation through our faith in God! In regard to how Almighty God performs His judgment work of the last days to save man from Satan's influence, let's first read Almighty God's words! Almighty God says, "**In the last days, Christ uses a variety of truths to teach man, to expose the substance of man, and to dissect the words and deeds of man. These words comprise various truths, such as man's duty, how man should obey God, how man should be loyal to God, how man ought to live out normal humanity, as well as the wisdom and the disposition of God, and so on. These words are all directed at the substance of man and his corrupt disposition. In particular, the words that expose how man spurns God are spoken in regard to how man is an embodiment of Satan, and an enemy force against God. In undertaking His work of judgment, God does not simply make clear the nature of man with a few words; He exposes, deals with, and prunes over the long term. These methods of exposure, dealing, and pruning cannot be substituted with ordinary words, but with the truth of which man is utterly bereft. Only methods such as these can be called judgment; only through judgment of this kind can man be subdued and thoroughly convinced into submission to God, and moreover gain true knowledge of God. What the work of judgment brings about is man's understanding of the true face of God and the truth about his own rebelliousness. The work of judgment allows man to gain much understanding of the will of God, of the purpose of God's work, and of the mysteries that are**

incomprehensible to him. It also allows man to recognize and know his corrupt essence and the roots of his corruption, as well as to discover the ugliness of man. These effects are all brought about by the work of judgment, for the essence of this work is actually the work of opening up the truth, the way, and the life of God to all those who have faith in Him. This work is the work of judgment done by God" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth).

"**God does the work of judgment and chastisement so that man may gain knowledge of Him, and for the sake of His testimony. Without His judgment of man's corrupt disposition, man could not possibly know His righteous disposition, which brooks no offense, and nor would man be able to turn his old knowledge of God into a new one. For the sake of His testimony, and for the sake of His management, He makes His entirety public, thus enabling man, through His public appearance, to arrive at knowledge of God, to be transformed in his disposition, and to bear resounding testimony to God. The transformation of the disposition of man is achieved through many different kinds of God's work; without such changes in his disposition, man would be unable to bear testimony to God and to be after God's heart. The transformation of man's disposition signifies that man has freed himself from Satan's bondage and from the influence of darkness, and has truly become a model and specimen of God's work, a witness of God, and one who is after God's heart**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Those Who Know God Can Bear Testimony to God).

Since Almighty God began expressing truths and performing His judgment work, God's chosen people have started eating, drinking and

enjoying Almighty God's words. At every meeting they will communicate their understanding and discuss their actual experiences of the truths in God's words. Almighty God's words come upon God's chosen people carrying God's righteous disposition, judging and exposing man's nature and essence of sinning and resisting God, exposing and dissecting how man is deceived and controlled by Satan, their various situations of resisting and betraying God while living under Satan's domain, and revealing to mankind God's righteous and majestic, and unoffendable disposition. Through God's words, God's chosen people see that God's disposition is righteous and behold His wrath and majesty in His revelations to mankind. All men repent to the extreme before God and feel very ashamed. Only then do they feel that God's holy essence is unoffendable. They see just how corrupt they are and have no face to face God. They all loathe Satan and despise that they are full of Satan's disposition. They see that they are practically living like the embodiment of Satan, without the likeness of a real person whatsoever! Only then do they start to develop a truly repentant heart and be willing to accept the truth to become a new person. We have realized through experiencing Almighty God's judgment and chastisement that corrupt mankind can resist and betray God and live in sin without release just because of the deception and control of Satan's various influences. For instance: the influence of the CCP, the influence of religious antichrists, Satan's various heretical fallacies, philosophies and laws, and so forth. These influences of Satan are like an invisible snare, firmly binding and controlling us all, making us unable to see the light and God's appearance, unable to grasp God's intentions and living in the darkness, struggling bitterly. It is the judgment of Almighty God's word that makes us see the depths of mankind's corruption, and the fact that the world is dark and evil and controlled by Satan. We see clearly the deceptive and harmful demonic

essence of the CCP, see clearly religious pastors' and elders' hypocritical and truth-hating antichrist nature, and are able to discern their various heretical fallacies, and realize that we have been deceived and corrupted too deeply by Satan! Satan's toxins and philosophies and laws have become our nature. We rely on these things for survival and all we live out is Satan's ugliness: arrogant and conceited, doing whatever we please, selfish and despicable, cunning and deceitful, being full of lies, being fed up with the truth, not having a heart that fears God at all. We have long become the embodiment of Satan, without any of the likeness of a real person! Even so, we still anticipate being brought up into the kingdom of heaven. We are so shameless! In the past, we were deceived and controlled by religious pastors and elders. We were following Satan and resisting God but we didn't know it. We believed in God but worshiped and followed man, and listened to pastors and elders in everything, but did not choose to seek the truth and obey God. We were really pitiful and blind; we didn't know God. Since experiencing Almighty God's judgment work of the last days, we have gradually come to understand and know all of the truths expressed by Almighty God, and are able to distinguish between positive and negative things more and more, and know God better and better. Our outlook on life and values have changed as well. Our satanic disposition has gradually been cleansed and we are no longer bound by Satan's influence. All heretical fallacies belonging to Satan can no longer deceive us easily. We have gained release from all bondages in secular families. We have started to live freely before God, fulfilling our duty of a creature, practicing living by God's words each day, and gradually entering the reality of the truth of God's words. This is how we experience God's work face to face. In fulfilling our duties we also often accept God's disciplining, pruning and dealing with, living in God's love. We have all truly felt that the work of

Almighty God in the last days is too practical! It can indeed save and perfect people! We truly appreciate that only by accepting judgment before Christ's seat can man gain the truth and life. What Christ of the last days brings is the way of eternal life. This is absolutely true.

—The movie script of Break Through the Snare

Question 10: Pastor Yuan of our church often expounds on the Bible, teaching us to be humble, patient, and obedient. He speaks very convincingly, and seems quite godly from the outside. Pastor Yuan also listened to your testimony of Almighty God's work in the last days with us. He also admits Almighty God's word is the truth, but why does he not accept it? Why is he even spreading rumors everywhere, condemning and resisting God's work in the last days, and blocking people from turning to Almighty God?

Answer: Religious leaders resisting and condemning the work of Almighty God is not something unusual. When the Lord Jesus came to do His work, didn't those Jewish leaders also condemn and persecute Him? In the end they even nailed the Lord Jesus to the cross. That's a historical fact. Almighty God of the last days comes, and the words He expresses are all the truth and make people utterly convinced. Anyone who sincerely believes in God and hungers for the truth, once reading Almighty God's word, will turn toward Almighty God. But pastors and elders from religious circles fear that if all believers turn to Almighty God, there won't be anyone to listen to their empty Bible knowledge and theological theories. Then their status and livelihood would be at risk. That's why they must resist and condemn Almighty God like crazy. Let's first take a look at a passage from Almighty God's word. Almighty God says, "**Anyone who does not understand the purpose of God's work is one who opposes Him, and one who has come to understand the purpose of God's work but still does not seek to satisfy God is even more to be deemed an opponent of God. There are those who read the Bible in grand churches and recite it all day long, yet not one among them understands the purpose of God's work. Not one among them is able to know God; still less can any one among them accord with God's will. They are all worthless, vile people,**

each standing on high to lecture God. They willfully oppose God even as they carry His banner. Claiming faith in God, still they eat the flesh and drink the blood of man. All such people are devils that devour the soul of man, head demons that deliberately get in the way of those trying to step onto the right path, and stumbling blocks impeding those who seek God. They may appear of 'sound constitution,' but how are their followers to know that they are none other than antichrists who lead people to stand against God? How are their followers to know that they are living devils dedicated to the devouring of human souls?" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. All People Who Do Not Know God Are People Who Oppose God). No one believed that the religious world would resist God, but the coming of the Lord Jesus revealed the antichrists in religious circles. Religious leaders persecuted and condemned the Lord Jesus, and in the end they crucified Him. This fact proves that religious leaders are all resisting God while serving Him. When pastors and religious leaders of the last days explain the Bible, they often use words and doctrines to flaunt themselves, but they don't carry out the Lord Jesus' words. Especially when Almighty God's work arrives upon them in the last days, their truth-hating, satanic nature is fully exposed. To protect their positions and livelihoods, they make up all sorts of rumors and furiously resist and condemn Almighty God, deceiving and controlling believers. They even seal off the church under the guise of "protecting the sheep flock and defending the truth," obstructing people from investigating the work and words of Almighty God. More detestable is that some pastors and leaders build and maintain their own prestige, try to achieve their despicable purpose of caging and controlling people, by shamelessly stealing Almighty God's words and preaching them to believers. This completely exposes their wild ambitions to compete with God for status.

These pastors and religious leaders are just the same as the Jewish Pharisees who condemned and resisted the Lord Jesus back then. They all hate the truth and are antichrists who see God as the enemy. They are devils who trample people and swallow their souls. They have seriously offended God’s disposition and are bound to receive God's righteous punishment.

—The movie script of Song of Victory

Question 11: Pastor Yuan was also persecuted by the CCP for his belief in the past. I never thought he could work hand in glove with the devilish CCP to resist Almighty God. Isn't this flagrantly opposing God? How could these pastors and leaders be so treacherous and malicious?

Answer: Every time God becomes flesh He exposes some antichrists, devils, in religious circles. When the Lord Jesus came to earth, He exposed all the hypocritical Pharisees and evil forces of antichrists. Now Almighty God has come, and He has also exposed the evil antichrist forces in the religious circles of the last days. The appearing and work of God incarnate reveal people so much. There have indeed been many religious leaders who were persecuted by the evil CCP. Some were imprisoned for 10 or even 20 years. Some were separated from their wives and children, had their families destroyed. But they still don't see the true face of the CCP devils. When Almighty God expresses the truth and does His judgment work in the last days, they even collude with the devilish CCP to furiously condemn and resist Almighty God, essentially crucifying God once more. This is determined by their truth-hating and God-opposing satanic nature. It shows that these religious circles are just like the demonic regime—they all belong in Satan's camp. They are all satanic, evil forces that furiously condemn and resist God. Let's take a look at another passage of Almighty God's word. Almighty God says, "**How many among them seek the truth and follow righteousness? They are all beasts, no better than pigs and dogs, at the head of a gang of stinking flies, wagging their heads in smug self-congratulation and stirring up all kinds of trouble,**[1] **in the middle of a dung heap. They believe that their king of hell is the greatest king of all, little knowing that they themselves are no more than stinking flies. … With green wings upon their backs (this refers to their claiming to believe in God), they are full of themselves and boast everywhere of**

their own beauty and allure, while they secretly fling the impurities on their own bodies onto man. Furthermore, they are exceedingly pleased with themselves, as if they can use a pair of rainbow-colored wings to conceal their own impurities, and by these means they bring their oppression to bear on the existence of the true God (this refers to what goes on behind the scenes in the religious world). How would man know that, as enchantingly beautiful as the wings of a fly may be, the fly itself is after all no more than a tiny creature, with a belly full of filth and a body covered with germs? On the strength of the pigs and dogs they have for parents, they run amok across the land (this refers to the way in which the religious officials who persecute God rely on the strong backing of the government of the nation to rebel against the true God and the truth), unrestrained in their savagery. It is as if the ghosts of the Jewish Pharisees have returned along with God to the nation of the great red dragon, back to their old nest. They have begun yet another round of persecution, picking up their work of several thousand years ago. This group of degenerates is sure to perish on earth in the end! It would appear that, after several millennia, the unclean spirits have become even more crafty and sly. They are constantly thinking of ways to undermine the work of God in secret. With tricks and wiles galore, they wish to reenact in their homeland the tragedy of several thousand years ago, goading God nearly to the point of crying out. He can hardly keep Himself from returning to the third heaven to annihilate them" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Work and Entry (7)). Ever since Almighty God began expressing the truth to do His judgment work, religious leaders have been condemning and resisting. They've colluded with the devilish CCP and relied on the CCP regime's evil forces, on the one hand sealing off and strictly

controlling religious circles to block believers from seeking and exploring the work of Almighty God in the last days, and on the other hand willingly becoming the CCP's spies to monitor God's chosen people. They supply the CCP with information to arrest God's chosen people, and are forming a united front with the evil CCP in an attempt to collectively abolish the work of God in the last days. These facts amply prove that most religious leaders also have truth-hating, satanic nature like the CCP devils. They are all reincarnated demons and all enemies of God. What Almighty God's words reveal is absolutely right. The current religious leaders are the Pharisees of modern times. Their God-resisting, evil actions have even gone beyond those of the Jewish Pharisees back then. Their resistance and condemnation of Almighty God's work in the last days is blaspheming the Holy Spirit. It's essentially nailing Christ to the cross again in the last days. This shows that religious leaders are all antichrists exposed by the work of Almighty God in the last days. This is a fact no one can deny!

—The movie script of Song of Victory

Footnotes:

1. "Stirring up all kinds of trouble" refers to how people who are demonic run riot, obstructing and opposing the work of God.

Question 12: Most of our brothers and sisters do not understand: Before the arrival of the Lord Jesus, the Pharisees often interpreted the Bible to others in the synagogue; they stood before people and prayed and used the rules of the Bible to condemn people; they looked very reverent on the outside and never seemed to have gone against the Bible, but why were the Pharisees cursed by the Lord Jesus? In what ways did they resist God? How did they display their hypocrisy? Why did they incur God's wrath?

Answer: People that believe in the Lord know that the Lord Jesus really hated the Pharisees and cursed them and pronounced seven woes upon them. This is very meaningful in allowing believers in the Lord to discern the hypocritical Pharisees, break away from their bondage and control and obtain God's salvation. However, it's a shame. Many believers cannot discern the essence of the Pharisees' hypocrisy. They don't even understand why the Lord Jesus hated and cursed the Pharisees so much. Today we will talk for a bit about these problems. The Pharisees often interpreted the Bible to others in the synagogue. They often prayed before others and used the rules of the Bible to condemn people. To outside observers, they seemed like reverent keepers of the Bible. If so, then why did the Lord hate them and curse them so much? In reality, the main reason is that in essence, they were hypocrites that resisted God. The Pharisees only cared about performing religious ceremonies and following rules; they only interpreted the rules and doctrines in the Bible and never communed God's will to anyone, nor did they focus on practicing God's words or obeying God's commandments. In fact, they ignored God's commandments. Everything they did was completely in opposition to God's will and demands. That is the essence of the Pharisees' hypocrisy. That is the key reason why the Lord Jesus hated and cursed them. The Lord Jesus said as much when He exposed them, "**Why do you also transgress the**

commandment of God by your tradition? For God commanded, saying, Honor your father and mother: and, He that curses father or mother, let him die the death. But you say, Whoever shall say to his father or his mother, It is a gift, by whatever you might be profited by me; And honor not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus have you made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition. You hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying, This people draws near to me with their mouth, and honors me with their lips; but their heart is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men" (Mat 15:3-9). Now that the Lord Jesus has exposed the Pharisees, we can clearly see that although the Pharisees often interpreted the Bible to others in the synagogue, they did not revere or magnify God at all. They did not follow God's commandments, and even replaced God's commandments with the traditions of men; they forgot about God's commandments. They were openly opposing God. Isn't this irrefutable evidence of how the Pharisees served God yet also resisted Him? How could they have avoided incurring God's curses and hatred? God's commandments clearly stated, "**You shall not kill.**" "**You shall not bear false witness against your neighbor.**" But the Pharisees ignored God's commandments. They openly bore false witness and condemned and killed the prophets and righteous men sent by God; they directly resisted God. Therefore, the Lord Jesus condemned and cursed the Pharisees, saying, "**You serpents, you generation of vipers, how can you escape the damnation of hell? Why, behold, I send to you prophets, and wise men, and scribes: and some of them you shall kill and crucify; and some of them shall you whip in your synagogues, and persecute them from city to city: That on you may come all the righteous blood shed on the earth …**" (Mat 23:33-35). The Pharisees

fanatically resisted God and killed the prophets and righteous men He sent. They tried to destroy God's work and block the carrying out of His will. They seriously enraged God's disposition. How could they not have been cursed by Him! Everything the Pharisees did was facts, wasn't it? Are we unable to see the Pharisees' hypocritical essence and behavior?

The Pharisees seemed reverent from the outside, but their essence was insidious and cunning; they were particularly skilled at pretending and tricking others. If the Lord Jesus had not exposed all of their evil deeds, including their betrayal and abandonment of God's commandments, we wouldn't be able to see the essence of the Pharisees' hypocrisy. Now let's have another look at the Lord Jesus' exposure and condemnation of the Pharisees. Matthew 23:23-24: "**Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for you pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought you to have done, and not to leave the other undone. You blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel.**" 27-28, "**Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for you are like to white washed sepulchers, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness. Even so you also outwardly appear righteous to men, but within you are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.**" The Pharisees pretended to be very reverent in front of others. They purposely prayed in the synagogue and on the street corners. When they fasted, they'd purposely have a sad expression on their faces. They wrote scriptures on the tassels of their garments. When they donated to charity, they made sure that other people saw them do it. They made sure they did not forget to pay their tithes of mint, cummin and anise. They even followed many of the historical rules such as, "Do not eat unless you've washed your hands thoroughly" etc. The Pharisees tended to many

small details exquisitely. However, they did not obey God’s requirements of the law, i.e. to love God, love others, be righteous, merciful, and faithful. They did not obey God’s commandments at all. They only talked about biblical knowledge and theological theory. They only performed religious ceremonies and obeyed the rules. That is the height of their hypocrisy and the way they fooled others. Their behavior clearly shows us that everything the Pharisees did was part of their attempt to deceive and constrain others. They only sought to establish themselves so they would be worshiped. They were only concerned with managing and consolidating their own positions and meal-tickets. They traveled down a false path of hypocrisy and resistance to God. That is the reason their resistance of God caused God to curse them.

The Pharisees do not love the truth. They never focused on practicing God’s words or keeping God’s commandments. They only focused on performing religious ceremonies and walked on a path of resistance to God. Therefore, when the Lord Jesus came to work and preach, their satanic nature of hypocrisy and hostility against God was fully exposed by God. The Pharisees knew very well that the Lord Jesus’ words had authority and power. Not only did they not seek for the essence and source of the Lord Jesus’ words and work, but they maliciously attacked and defamed the Lord Jesus; they said the Lord Jesus was driving out demons by the prince of demons; they labeled the Lord Jesus’ work, filled with God’s authority and power, as madness. They committed the sin of blasphemy against the Holy Spirit and seriously offended God's disposition. Not only did the Pharisees blaspheme and condemn the Lord Jesus themselves, but they incited and deluded believers to resist and condemn the Lord Jesus. They made the faithful lose the Lord’s salvation and turn into their funerary objects and victims. Therefore, when the Lord Jesus condemned and cursed them, He

said, "**But woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for you shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for you neither go in yourselves, neither suffer you them that are entering to go in**" (Mat 23:13). "**Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for you compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, you make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves**" (Mat 23:15). Therefore, we can see that the Pharisees were hypocrites that resisted and committed blasphemy against God, antichrists that stood as enemies to God. They were an evil group that devoured men's souls and lured them into hell. Therefore, the Lord Jesus denounced the Pharisees with the "Seven Woes" due to their evil behavior. This fully shows God's holiness and righteous disposition which cannot be offended.

Now we have gained some discernment with regard to the hypocritical substance of the Pharisees. Now let's look at the modern-day pastors and elders. They only interpret biblical knowledge and theological theory. They only perform religious ceremonies and follow the rules. They do not practice God's words at all, nor do they carry out His commandments. They're the same as the Pharisees, walking along a path where they serve but also resist God. The Lord Jesus said, "**You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like to it, You shall love your neighbor as yourself**" (Mat 22:37-39). Those that love God should practice His words and must be mindful of His will. They should be responsible for the lives of their brothers and sisters. Now pastors and elders face desolate churches and the believers' faith and love being diminished. They don't find the living water of life for believers. When Almighty God comes to express the truth and give people life, they reject it; they do not study it or accept it. They continue to resist and condemn it

while preventing believers from searching for the true way. They do not allow believers to contact people from the Church of Almighty God, nor do they allow them to read Almighty God's words. What's worse, they curse or attack our brothers and sisters that spread the gospel of His kingdom. They may even call the police and have them arrested. Are they not doing evil and resisting God with everything they do? How is what they do any different from the way the Pharisees resisted and condemned the Lord Jesus? To protect their positions and meal-tickets, the pastors and elders prevent believers from accepting God's salvation in the last days. Aren't they dragging people to hell? Are they not the evil servants that the Lord Jesus spoke of? Are they not the modern-day Pharisees?

—The movie script of The City Will Be Overthrown

Question 13: Through reading the Bible, we all know that the Jewish Pharisees condemned and resisted the Lord Jesus. When the Lord Jesus did His work, the Pharisees knew His words had authority and power. Nevertheless, they still fanatically resisted and condemned the Lord Jesus. They crucified Him on the cross. We do not understand and what was their nature and substance?

Answer: Everyone that believes in the Lord knows the Pharisees resisted the Lord Jesus, but what was the root, the true essence of their resistance? You can say that in the 2,000 year history of religion, no one has figured out the answer to this question. Though the Lord Jesus' cursing of the Pharisees was written in the New Testament, no one has been able to discern the Pharisees' essence. When Almighty God arrives in the last days, He reveals the true answer to this question. Let's read Almighty God's words. Almighty God says, "**Do you wish to know the root of why the Pharisees opposed Jesus? Do you wish to know the essence of the Pharisees? They were full of fantasies about the Messiah. What is more, they believed only that the Messiah would come, yet did not seek the life truth. And so, even today they still await the Messiah, for they have no knowledge of the way of life, and do not know what the way of truth is. How, say you, could such foolish, stubborn and ignorant people gain God's blessing? How could they behold the Messiah? They opposed Jesus because they did not know the direction of the Holy Spirit's work, because they did not know the way of truth spoken by Jesus, and, furthermore, because they did not understand the Messiah. And since they had never seen the Messiah and had never been in the company of the Messiah, they made the mistake of clinging in vain to the name of the Messiah while opposing the essence of the Messiah by any means possible. These Pharisees in essence were stubborn,**

arrogant, and did not obey the truth. The principle of their belief in God was: No matter how profound Your preaching, no matter how high Your authority, You are not Christ unless You are called the Messiah. Are these views not preposterous and ridiculous?" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. By the Time You Behold the Spiritual Body of Jesus, God Will Have Made Heaven and Earth Anew).

Almighty God says it very clearly. The root of the Pharisees' resistance and condemnation of the Lord Jesus was that they did not revere God or search for the truth at all. Deep down, they were stubborn and arrogant; they did not obey the truth. The Pharisees defined God within their own conceptions and imaginings, within the literal words of the Bible. They kept the Messiah in name only. No matter how profound and correct the Lord Jesus' preachings are, how His words are the truth, or how much authority or power His words have, because His name is not Messiah, the Pharisees opposed and condemned Him. Their principles of faith are exactly as Almighty God says, "**No matter how profound Your preaching, no matter how high Your authority, You are not Christ unless You are called the Messiah**". Not only did the Pharisees not accept the truths expressed by the Lord Jesus, they tempted Him and tried to find fault with Him. For example, they tempted the Lord Jesus by asking what authority He used to perform miracles and purposely asked the Lord Jesus whether they could pay taxes to Caesar. They asked the Lord Jesus whether He was the Son of God, Christ, etc. The Lord Jesus struck back at their evil plans with truth and wisdom. The Pharisees had no strength to refute Him, yet they still did not search for the truth. They still fanatically resisted and condemned the Lord Jesus; they had the Lord Jesus arrested and demanded that He be nailed to the cross. It was just as the Lord Jesus said when He exposed them, "**But now you seek to kill me, a man that has told you the**

truth, which I have heard of God… And if I say the truth, why do you not believe me?" (Jhn 8:40, 46). Therefore, we can see that the Pharisees, in nature and essence, were satanic demons, enemies of God that hated the truth! Brothers and sisters, what kind of people can hate and condemn Christ? The Pharisees' story clearly demonstrates one fact: All who believe in God but do not love the truth, are weary of the truth and hate the truth do not know God. In addition, these people surely resist God and take Him as their enemy. Because Christ's essence is the truth, the way, and the life, anyone who hates the truth also hates Christ. Many people that hate the truth seem good on the outside; they follow the rules of the Bible and do not seem like evil people at all, but when Christ comes to do His work, these satanic enemies of God will be completely exposed.

The Pharisees' evil resistance and condemnation of the Lord Jesus completely exposes their demonic essence: They hate the truth and resist God. that when the Lord Jesus preached and did His work, He expressed many truths, displayed many miracles and gave people abundant grace. The Lord Jesus' work shook the foundations of Judaism and shocked the Jewish state. Many people followed the Lord Jesus. The Pharisees knew that if the Lord Jesus continued to do His work, all of the faithful in Judaism would follow Him; Judaism would fall, and their positions and meal-tickets would disappear. Therefore, they decided to kill the Lord Jesus. Just as the Bible says, "Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a council, and said, What do we? for this man does many miracles. If we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him: and the Romans shall come and take away both our place and nation. … Then from that day forth they took counsel together for to put him to death" (John 11:47, 48, 53). To protect their status and meal-tickets, the Pharisees colluded with the Roman government to crucify the Lord Jesus on the cross. They said, "His blood be on us, and on

our children" (Matthew 27:25). As you can see, the Pharisees hated the truth and hated Christ. They reached the point where they no longer wished to co-exist with Christ long ago! They would rather forsake their sin offering than not crucify the Lord Jesus; they would rather commit monstrous sins, resist God and offend God and have their sons and grandsons cursed than not nail the Lord Jesus to the cross, He who expresses the truth of redemption for mankind. That is the genuine, satanic, truth-hating nature and substance of the Pharisees. that when the Lord Jesus was nailed to the cross, the sun became dark, the earth shook and the curtain of the temple split open. After the Lord Jesus was resurrected, He appeared before men once again. After people learned these facts, they repented for their sins and turned to the Lord Jesus. As for the Pharisees? Not only did they not repent, but they became even more antagonistic enemies of the Lord Jesus. They paid off soldiers to bear false witness and say the Lord Jesus had not been resurrected. When the apostles spread the gospel of the Lord Jesus, the Pharisees fanatically captured and persecuted them. They wanted to ban the Lord Jesus' work to obtain their ambitions of permanently controlling the religious community. The Pharisees believed in God in name only. In reality, they hated the truth and resisted God. The essence of their resistance and condemnation of the Lord Jesus was as follows: They were trying to compete with God and size Him up; they were fighting against God. The arrogance of their resistance and hatred of the Lord Jesus completely exposed their ambitions and exposed their evil, satanic face. Plus, it exposed their demonic antichrist nature: a refusal to repent, a frenzied hatred of the truth and a hatred of God. Isn't that how the pastors and elders of the religious community treat Almighty God? If we could clearly see how the pastors and elders resist and condemn Almighty

God, we would definitely know that the Pharisees resisted and condemned the Lord Jesus in the same way.

2,000 years ago, the Jewish chief priests, scribes and Pharisees nailed the Lord Jesus to the cross. 2,000 years later, the religious leaders have caused history to repeat itself by nailing God to the cross again! We have all seen that Almighty God carries out the work of judgment beginning with God's house in the last days. He expresses truths that cleanse and save humanity. He uncovers all the mysteries of God's management plan. He judges and exposes humanity's satanic nature that resists and betrays God. He shows them His righteous disposition which cannot be offended. Almighty God's words are the truth. They have authority and power and fully convince us. These truths cleanse and save humanity. Then what about the pastors and elders nowadays? They don't care how Almighty God's words are the truth, how much authority and power His words have, how they can cleanse and save man. They still stubbornly maintain their fallacy: "Whoever does not descend on a cloud and raise me up into the kingdom of heaven is not the return of the Lord Jesus." They frantically resist and condemn Almighty God. They keep the Lord Jesus in name only, yet fanatically resist and condemn Almighty God. Is that any different from when the Pharisees kept the name of Messiah but resisted and condemned the Lord Jesus? Is their essence not the same as that of the Pharisees: stubborn, arrogant, disobeys the truth, hates the truth? They only believe in a vague God up in heaven, and they deny, resist and condemn Christ incarnate; they are irreconcilable rivals with Christ. Aren't they just antichrists denying, condemning and resisting Christ? The Bible says, "as you have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time" (1Jn 2:18). "For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is

come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist" (2Jn 1:7). Therefore, all who do not acknowledge God incarnate are antichrists. All who resist and condemn Christ are antichrists. Therefore, the Jewish Pharisees were exposed as antichrists by the Lord Jesus' work. The pastors and elders in the last days are all antichrists that are exposed by Almighty God's work. God incarnate's work really does expose people! Everything Christ expresses in the last days is the truth. Not only does He expose the wise and foolish virgins, He exposes all kinds of antichrists and non-believers. This is a truth that no one can deny!

The religious leaders in the last days and the Jewish chief priests, scribes and Pharisees, the essence and roots of their resistance to God are the same. The ways that the pastors and elders resist God are even worse than those of the chief priests, scribes and Pharisees. Ever since Almighty God started doing His work of judgment from God's house, all people of every denomination were raptured before God's throne, as long as they love the truth and long for God's appearance. The pastors and elders stop at nothing to resist and condemn Almighty God, all in an attempt to constrain the faithful and stabilize their positions and livelihoods. They spread rumors, bear false witness and blaspheme Almighty God; they seal off the church and strictly forbid believers from studying Almighty God's work in the last days. They threaten, scare, ridicule and beat brothers and sisters who spread the gospel of the kingdom. They even collude with the devilish CCP to capture and persecute them, leaving hundreds of thousands of brothers and sisters without a home to return to. At least a hundred thousand people have been brutally tortured by the CCP. Many have even been killed… The pastors and elders' resistance of Almighty God is even more fanatical than the Pharisees' resistance of the Lord Jesus was. Their evil deeds in resistance to God are numerous. Almighty God judged and

cursed them long ago. Almighty God says, "**How many among them seek the truth and follow righteousness? They are all beasts, no better than pigs and dogs, at the head of a gang of stinking flies, wagging their heads in smug self-congratulation and stirring up all kinds of trouble,**[1] **in the middle of a dung heap. They believe that their king of hell is the greatest king of all, little knowing that they themselves are no more than stinking flies. … With green wings upon their backs (this refers to their claiming to believe in God), they are full of themselves and boast everywhere of their own beauty and allure, while they secretly fling the impurities on their own bodies onto man. Furthermore, they are exceedingly pleased with themselves, as if they can use a pair of rainbow-colored wings to conceal their own impurities, and by these means they bring their oppression to bear on the existence of the true God (this refers to what goes on behind the scenes in the religious world). How would man know that, as enchantingly beautiful as the wings of a fly may be, the fly itself is after all no more than a tiny creature, with a belly full of filth and a body covered with germs? On the strength of the pigs and dogs they have for parents, they run amok across the land (this refers to the way in which the religious officials who persecute God rely on the strong backing of the government of the nation to rebel against the true God and the truth), unrestrained in their savagery. It is as if the ghosts of the Jewish Pharisees have returned along with God to the nation of the great red dragon, back to their old nest. They have begun yet another round of persecution, picking up their work of several thousand years ago. This group of degenerates is sure to perish on earth in the end!**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Work and Entry (7)). The words expressed by Almighty God were publicly shared via newspapers, TV and

the Internet a long time ago. All different types of gospel movies and videos have already been posted on the Internet to openly bear witness of God's manifestation and work to the whole world. This has caused a big ripple among the religious community and humanity in general. The pastors and elders in the religious community have already seen the growing trend: The words of Almighty God are conquering those of the religious community and humanity in general. No person and no force can stop it. They have become irritable and are frantically resisting and condemning Almighty God. They are trying to outlaw Almighty God's work in the last days and achieve their wildest dreams: eternal control over the religious community and eternal hegemony over God's chosen people. These facts are enough to prove that the religious pastors and elders in the last days are the reappearance of the Pharisees! They are the antichrist demons that work as hard as they can to disturb and destroy God's work and swear to the death to be enemies of God! Their numerous evil deeds have already provoked God's disposition. How can they escape God's righteous judgment and punishment?

—The movie script of The City Will Be Overthrown

Footnotes:

1. "Stirring up all kinds of trouble" refers to how people who are demonic run riot, obstructing and opposing the work of God.

Question 14: Many brothers and sisters worship the pastors and elders in the heart. They do not understand why, although the pastors and elders often interpret the Bible and exalt the Bible, they still hate the truth and resist and condemn Almighty God incarnate. Interpreting the Bible and exalting the Bible, is that the same as bearing witness to the Lord and exalting the Lord?

Answer: An atmosphere is already growing in the religious community. Those that can interpret the Bible best, those that have the best biblical theory are widely praised and worshiped. The people that can interpret the mysteries of the Bible and the prophecies are worshiped the most. Therefore, many people worship the pastors and elders in the church. They all see interpreting the Bible and exalting the Bible as bearing witness to the Lord and exalting the Lord. When they see the pastors and elders resist and condemn Almighty God's work in the last days, most of them feel conflicted and confused. On the one hand, they think the fact that the pastors and elders interpret the Bible and exalt the Bible means they're bearing witness to the Lord. On the other hand, all that Almighty God expresses is the truth, but why do the pastors and elders resist and condemn Him? Do they condemn Almighty God because His name is not the Lord Jesus? However, all that Almighty God expresses is the truth, so He should not be condemned! Then why do the pastors and elders fanatically resist and condemn Almighty God who expresses the truth? Many people don't understand it. Actually, this problem is not that hard to explain. If you think back to when the Lord Jesus came to do His work, didn't the Jewish chief priests, scribes and Pharisees fanatically condemn and resist the Lord Jesus in the same way? Didn't they nail the Lord Jesus to the cross? Wasn't that because the Lord Jesus was not named Messiah? Wasn't that because He expressed many truths? They saw that the Lord Jesus' words had authority

and power; they saw that He could reveal miraculous things. They saw that thousands of people followed Him. It shocked the whole of Judea. If they allowed the Lord Jesus to spread His work, Judaism itself would be overturned. The consequences to Judaism would be unimaginable! Therefore, they developed a hatred for the Lord Jesus and a desire to kill Him. That's how the Lord Jesus ended up crucified by them on the cross. Back then, didn't the chief priests, scribes and Pharisees all interpret and exalt the Bible? Then why did they crucify the Lord Jesus on the cross? To put it plainly, wasn't it because the Pharisees hated the truth and God's work? To protect their own positions and meal-tickets, they were ruthless and vicious to the truth-expressing God. As you can see, they were willing to do any evil deed to resist God! It isn't hard to see that these chief priests, scribes and Pharisees' true nature is a hatred of the truth and resistance of God! They interpreted and exalted the Bible for their own positions and meal-tickets. They were full of hatred for God and the truth. Therefore, when the Lord Jesus expressed the truth and did His work, their true nature —a hatred of the truth and resistance to God—was completely exposed. As you can see, whether people can resist God or not is not affected by how they interpret the Bible; it has to do with their nature. For people with a truth-hating and God-resisting nature, no matter how well they interpret the Bible, their inner hatred of the truth and resistance of God cannot be changed. Didn't the Pharisees use their interpretations of the Bible to condemn and resist the Lord Jesus? This is something that God revealed long ago through His work. Do we really not see yet?

Both the Pharisees and the pastors and elders interpret and exalt the Bible. However, how can they still resist and condemn God incarnate? We must understand yet another truth: The Bible is only testimony of God; it is a record of God's work during the Age of Law and the Age of Grace. God

expresses some truth during each stage of His work. In His words, people find His disposition and all that He has and is. Therefore, each time people experience a stage of God's work, they understand some truth and know more about God. During the three stages of work in His management plan, God gradually reveals His inherent disposition, all that He has and all that He is. During the Age of the Kingdom, God fully reveals His inherent righteous disposition, almightiness and wisdom, authority and glory. If we only know God from His work during the Age of Law and the Age of Grace, that is an all-too-limited knowledge of God. It's like during the Age of Law when believers acknowledged God's real existence and wise deeds through the work of Jehovah God. They came to know that Jehovah God's laws could not be violated. In the Age of Grace, when believers saw the Lord Jesus' work, they knew He was the Redeemer of mankind, the compassionate, merciful God. However, they did not understand God's substance or inherent righteous disposition. They did not really achieve true knowledge of God. Therefore, we can see that if we only know God from His work and words in the Age of Law and the Age of Grace, our knowledge of God will be too one-sided. We will only know a part of His disposition and what He is. We cannot achieve the standard of truly knowing God. when people who do not know God interpret the Bible, they are very liable to define Him and resist Him. Is that the truth? However, not only did the Jewish chief priests, scribes and Pharisees not know God, but most importantly, they had satanic nature: They hated the truth and resisted God. That was their fatal flaw! If their hearts had been good, they would not have crucified the loving Lord Jesus, Redeemer of mankind, on the cross, even if they did not know God. God did not have any place in the hearts of the Pharisees. Their positions and meal-tickets were more important than all else. Therefore, when God's work threatened their

positions and meal-tickets, they treated God as their enemy and killed Him. As you can see, their hearts and their nature and substance were so toxic! No wonder God said they were brood of vipers! Although the leaders of the religious community do not know God, nonetheless those that fanatically condemn and resist God will be exposed as antichrists. Of course, some religious leaders have their own conceptions of God's work, but their God-fearing heart prevent them from verbally condemning or resisting God. Take for example, when the Lord Jesus did His work, Gamaliel, a teacher of the law, did not condemn the Lord Jesus. Nicodemus was able to search for the truth in the Lord Jesus at night. These are all facts recorded in the Bible. As you can see, if people believe in God but do not know Him or have a God-fearing heart, then when they serve God, they are also liable to resist Him. If people with a truth-hating nature and toxic heart become religious leaders, sooner or later they will be exposed as antichrists. This is a fact that no one can deny! Are you all clear on this now? At that time, the Lord Jesus critically exposed and cursed the hypocritical Pharisees. In the last days, Almighty God has exposed, judged and condemned the pastors and elders who have the antichrist essence of misleading others with their interpretations of the Bible and resisting God. Let's read two more passages from Almighty God's word. "**There are those who read the Bible in grand churches and recite it all day long, yet not one among them understands the purpose of God's work. Not one among them is able to know God; still less can any one among them accord with God's will. They are all worthless, vile people, each standing on high to lecture God. They willfully oppose God even as they carry His banner. Claiming faith in God, still they eat the flesh and drink the blood of man. All such people are devils that devour the soul of man, head demons that deliberately get in the way of those trying to step onto the**

right path, and stumbling blocks impeding those who seek God. They may appear of 'sound constitution,' but how are their followers to know that they are none other than antichrists who lead people to stand against God? How are their followers to know that they are living devils dedicated to the devouring of human souls?" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. All People Who Do Not Know God Are People Who Oppose God).

"**Theirs is always an attitude of hostility toward the new work of God; they never have the slightest inclination to submit, nor have they ever gladly submitted or humbled themselves. They exalt themselves before others and never submit to anyone. Before God, they consider themselves the best at preaching the word, and the most skillful in working on others. Never do they discard the 'treasures' in their possession, but treat them as family heirlooms for worship, for preaching about to others, and they use them to lecture those fools who idolize them. … They take preaching the word (doctrine) to be their highest duty. Year after year, generation after generation, they go about vigorously enforcing their 'sacred and inviolable' duty. None dare touch them; not a single person dares openly reproach them. They become 'kings' in the house of God, running rampant as they tyrannize others from age to age. This pack of demons seeks to join hands and demolish My work; how can I allow these living devils to exist before My eyes?**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Those Who Obey God With a True Heart Shall Surely Be Gained by God). Almighty God's words reveal the pastors and elders' essence clearly: They interpret the Bible but resist God. The pastors and elders do not know God; they define and resist Him instead. This is especially true for those that condemn or blaspheme against Almighty God; their natures and essences

are the same as those of the Pharisees who crucified the Lord Jesus on the cross. They are all satanic, toxic people that hate the truth. They are all antichrists exposed by God's work; they are all the ones that crucified God on the cross again. They are all cursed by God!

Truly witnessing the Lord and exalting the Lord isn't about how men interpret the Bible. The key is whether they can practice God's words and experience His work. If men love the truth, they will obtain the enlightenment of the Holy Spirit and true experience and knowledge of God's word. This knowledge is created by practicing and experiencing God's words. It is what it means to truly know God. Communicating these real experiences and testimonies is what it means to truly exalt God and bear witness to Him! The true knowledge of God that those who exalt and bear witness to Him speak of does not come from their own conceptions, imagination or logic; it definitely does not come from their literal interpretation of God's words. Those who exalt and bear witness to God focus on communicating God's words in the Bible, communicating God's will, His demands toward people, His disposition and all that He has and is, allowing people to understand God's will and disposition and truly know God. This is how people can truly revere and obey God. These kinds of biblical interpretations and communications about God's words are how they can truly exalt God and bear witness to God. However, when the pastors and elders interpret the Bible, can they really communicate the essence of the truth of God's words? Can they communicate God's will? Can they bear witness to God's disposition? Can they make others know, obey or revere God? The facts have showed us that most of the pastors and elders in the religious community hate the truth and resist God; that is their true nature. They do not practice God's words or experience His work. They do not understand His will or demands at all, and they certainly do not

understand His disposition, all that He has or all that He is. Therefore, they cannot communicate any true knowledge of God, and they cannot bear witness to the Lord Jesus' divine substance or lovable qualities. They just interpret biblical knowledge and theological theory or certain characters' stories in the Bible, along with the historical backgrounds to make people admire and look up to them. Not only that, but most of the time the pastors and elders are interpreting man's words, like Paul's words in the Bible. According to Paul, "All scripture is given by inspiration of God," they take the words of the Bible as if they were God's words. This has caused the entire religious community to take the words of the apostles as the words of God and tell the believers to practice and observe them. They're quoting the words of the apostles more and more frequently when they give sermons, communicate or testify. However, they're quoting God and the Lord Jesus less and less. The end result is that God and the Lord Jesus' words in the Bible have all been replaced and nullified. The Lord Jesus' place in people's hearts is continually diminishing, while Paul's and others' place in their hearts continues to rise. This has allowed Paul's words, along with other man's words in the Bible, to occupy men's hearts. People believe in the Lord Jesus in name, but in reality they're just proceeding according to man's words in the Bible, like Paul's words. They are traveling along their own path of faith in God. How can people that believe in God this way not stray from the Lord's way? How can this type of service be in accordance with God's will? For instance, the Lord Jesus once said this regarding entering the kingdom of heaven: "**but he that does the will of my Father which is in heaven**" (Mat 7:21). However, the pastors and elders talk about salvation and the entry into the kingdom of heaven according to Paul's words instead. This is a complete betrayal of the Lord Jesus' words. The result is that most believers do not know how to follow God's will. They're

even less clear of what kind of people can enter the kingdom of heaven. People use Paul's words as their motto: "I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith: From now on there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness …" (2Ti 4:7–8). The pastors and elders teach others that as long as they labor for the Lord as Paul did and endure suffering, they can enter the heavenly kingdom. They substitute the words of men for the words of God; they exclude the words of God. The result is that they lead people astray. When they interpret the Bible this way, are they exalting God or bearing witness to God? I think they are in direct opposition to God! This problem is very serious! The religious pastors and elders often substitute men's words in the Bible for God's words. We should now be clear on the consequences of this, right? How can many people believe in the Lord for years and still not know Him? Why do they never really experience the Lord's words? How can they that believe in the Lord this way ever obtain the truth or life? Isn't this because the pastors and elders continually interpret and testify about the words of men from the Bible and urge their followers to keep these words? How can they exalt the Lord or bear witness to the Lord by interpreting the Bible this way? How can that kind of service be in accordance with God's will? They are no different from the hypocritical Pharisees; both of them are traveling on a path of serving God while also resisting Him. During the last days, when God incarnate appears and does His work, they start to unscrupulously resist and condemn God's work, which exposes their hidden satanic nature: They hate the truth and resist God. In the end, they will be cursed and punished by God. Just as Almighty God says, "**Look at the leaders of each denomination—they are all arrogant and self-righteous, and their interpretations of the Bible lack context and are guided by their own imaginings. They all rely on gifts and erudition to do their work. If they**

could not preach at all, would people follow them? They do, after all, possess some knowledge and can preach on some doctrine, or they know how to win others over and make use of some artifice. They use these to bring people before themselves and deceive them. Nominally, those people believe in God, but in reality, they follow their leaders. When they encounter someone preaching the true way, some of them say, 'We have to consult our leader about our faith.' A human is the medium of their faith in God; is that not a problem? What have those leaders become, then? Have they not become Pharisees, false shepherds, antichrists, and stumbling blocks to people's acceptance of the true way?" (The Word, Vol. 3. The Discourses of Christ of the Last Days. Only to Pursue the Truth Is Truly to Believe in God). Almighty God has clearly exposed the God-resisting essence of the pastors and elders clearly. True believers and truth-seekers should understand the truth: The religious pastors and elders quote the Bible out of context and misinterpret the Bible in resistance of God. This way, we'll be able to escape their deception and control and return before God's throne.

Almighty God's work in the last days exposed these pastors and elders, these antichrist demons in the religious community. Otherwise, no one would be able to see that their exaltations and interpretations of the Bible are actually their insidious ways to deceive and control people, nor would anyone be able to see the truth: They are establishing their own, independent kingdom as enemies of God. At that time, the Pharisees exalted and bore witness to the Bible; they restricted God within the Bible. They never sought the truth or looked to follow God's footsteps. The result was that they crucified the Lord Jesus on the cross, using His refusal to follow the Old Testament as their justification. They committed an extremely serious sin! The pastors and elders in the last days are just like the Pharisees

were. They exalt and bear witness to the Bible; they define God in the Bible. They also disseminate fallacies, saying, “None of God's words and work exist outside of the Bible,” “To believe in the Bible is to believe in God. The Bible represents God; if you leave the Bible, you no longer believe in God.” They use these sayings to mislead people into believing in and worshiping the Bible. They treat the Bible as if it were God. They replace God with the Bible. The pastors and elders are using this secret, underhanded methods to steal people from God, and bring them before the Bible. This causes people to subconsciously lose their relationship with God. The people who once believed in God now only believe in the Bible. The Bible becomes the Lord in their hearts, the God in their hearts. Therefore, their blind belief in and worshiping of the Bible causes them to worship and follow the biblical scholars: the pastors and elders. As for the pastors and elders, they use the Bible as a tool to control the religious community and achieve their own ambitions. They exalt the Bible and interpret it out of context to deceive, snare and control people. They subconsciously lead people down a path of worshiping men, following men, resisting God and being enemies of God. They mislead people into thinking that worshiping the Bible and keeping the Bible is believing in God, and having the presence of God. Therefore, these people do not seek or study God’s work in the last days, and miss their last chance at salvation. This really is Satan’s most insidious, cunning plan. It’s really harmful! Therefore, we can see that the pastors and elders in the religious community are a group of genuine Pharisees and con-men! They are false shepherds and antichrists that mislead and control God’s elect! The religious community is controlled by a group of Pharisees and antichrist demons that resist God. It ceased to be a place where God could do His work long ago. It has become a satanic camp that takes God as its enemy. It became the

great city Babylon long ago! How can the religious Babylon not fall under God's wrath?!

The religious community's history of resistance to God goes back at least to the end of the Age of Law. When God was incarnated and did His work for the first time during the Age of Grace, the religious community had already been taken over by Pharisees and antichrists a long time ago. It became the opposition force to the Lord Jesus' work of redemption. When Almighty God, Christ of the last days, appears and does His work, those in the religious community still stand as enemies to God's judgment work in the last days. Not only do they fanatically condemn and blaspheme against Almighty God, they collaborate with the CCP satanic regime to persecute and suppress the Church of Almighty God. They have committed the heinous sin of crucifying God on the cross again! Not only did the Lord Jesus curse the Pharisees, revealing the darkness of the religious community, but when Almighty God does His work of judgment in the last days, He still exposed the pastors and elders' true essence: their resistance to God. In addition, He cursed the antichrists that once again crucified God on the cross. This really is thought-provoking! Both times God was incarnated, He condemned and cursed the religious community. What does this show? God's elect finally understand that the religious community, Babylon the great, is destined to fall. The religious community believes in God in name only, but never really exalts God or bears witness to Him. They definitely do not implement His will. They cannot bring God's elect up to His throne. They certainly cannot lead them down the right track, so that they understand the truth and know God by practicing and experiencing His words. The religious leaders completely go against God's will. They do not practice the truth themselves, but preach biblical knowledge and theological theory to show off and make people look up to them and

worship them. They lead the believers on the hypocritical path of the Pharisees. They hurt and ruin God's elect. The religious leaders have all become Satan's tools, genuine antichrists. During the three stages of His work to save mankind, God has been incarnated twice to redeem humanity and save humanity. The entire religious community are enemies of Christ; they have become stumbling blocks to God's work of salvation. They have offended God's disposition and were cursed and punished by Him as a result. It is just as the prophecies say, "**Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit…**" (Rev 18:2). "**Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication**" (Rev 14:8). "**Alas, alas that great city Babylon, that mighty city! for in one hour is your judgment come**" (Rev 18:10).

Let's look at how Almighty God condemns these antichrists that fanatically resist God and the religious community controlled by the antichrists. Almighty God says, "**Christ comes during the last days so that all those who truly believe in Him may be provided with life. … If you are incapable of acknowledging Him, and instead condemn, blaspheme, or even persecute Him, then you are bound to burn for eternity and shall never enter the kingdom of God. For this Christ is Himself the expression of the Holy Spirit, the expression of God, the One whom God has entrusted to do His work on earth. And so I say that if you cannot accept all that is done by Christ of the last days, then you blaspheme the Holy Spirit. The retribution to be had by those who blaspheme the Holy Spirit is self-evident to all. … For what you resist is not a man, what you spurn is not some puny being, but Christ. Do you know what the consequences of this will be? You will not have made a small mistake, but committed a heinous crime**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The

Appearance and Work of God. Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life).

"**Recall what followed after the Jews nailed Jesus to the cross 2,000 years ago. The Jews were expelled from Israel and fled to countries around the world. Many were killed, and the entire Jewish nation was subjected to unprecedented destruction. They had nailed God to the cross—committed a heinous sin—and provoked the disposition of God. They were made to pay for what they did and were made to bear all the consequences of their actions. They condemned God, rejected God, and so they had but one fate: to be punished by God. This was the bitter consequence and disaster that their rulers brought upon their country and nation**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God Presides Over the Fate of All Mankind).

"**We trust that no country or power can stand in the way of what God wishes to achieve. Those who obstruct God's work, resist the word of God and disturb and impair the plan of God shall ultimately be punished by God. He who defies the work of God shall be sent to hell; any country that defies the work of God shall be destroyed; any nation that rises up to oppose the work of God shall be wiped from this earth and shall cease to exist**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God Presides Over the Fate of All Mankind).

"**So long as the old world continues to exist, I will hurl forth My rage upon its nations, openly promulgate My administrative decrees throughout the universe, and visit chastisement upon whosoever violates them:**

"**As I turn My face to the universe to speak, all mankind hears My voice, and thereupon sees all the works I have wrought throughout the**

universe. Those who set themselves against My will, that is to say, who oppose Me with the deeds of man, will fall under My chastisement. … The many nations within the universe will be partitioned afresh and replaced by My kingdom, so that the nations upon the earth will disappear forever and all will become a kingdom that worships Me; all the nations of the earth will be destroyed and cease to exist. Of the human beings within the universe, all those belonging to the devil will be exterminated, and all who worship Satan will be laid low by My burning fire—that is, except for those now within the stream, all will be turned to ashes. When I chastise the many peoples, those in the religious world will, to varying extents, return to My kingdom, conquered by My works, because they will have seen the advent of the Holy One riding on a white cloud. All people will be separated according to their own kind, and will receive chastisements commensurate with their actions. All those who have stood against Me will perish; as for those whose deeds on earth have not involved Me, they will, because of how they have acquitted themselves, continue to exist on the earth under the governance of My sons and My people. I will reveal Myself to the myriad peoples and the myriad nations, and with My own voice, I will sound forth upon the earth, proclaiming the completion of My great work for all mankind to see with their own eyes" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Words to the Entire Universe, Chapter 26).

"**The world is falling! Babylon is in paralysis! Oh, the religious world! How could it not be destroyed by My authority on earth? Who still dares to disobey and oppose Me? The scribes? Every religious official? The rulers and authorities on earth? The angels? Who does not celebrate the perfection and fullness of My body? Among all**

peoples, who does not sing My praises without cease, who is not unfailingly happy? … How could the countries on earth not perish? How could the countries on earth not fall? How could My people not cheer? How could they not sing with joy?" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Words to the Entire Universe, Chapter 22).

Every sentence of Almighty God's words is the truth; they have authority and power; they completely display God's righteousness, majesty, wrath and unoffendable disposition. Those that resist God, interrupt or disturb God's work will definitely receive punishment and retribution from God. In the Age of Law, the citizens of Sodom publicly denied God and resisted Him. They enraged His disposition and were all destroyed by God; they were reduced to nothing. During the Age of Grace, the Jewish chief priests, scribes and Pharisees publicly resisted and condemned the Lord Jesus. They colluded with the Roman government to crucify the Lord Jesus on the cross. They committed a grave sin that provoked God's disposition. The entire Jewish nation was subjected to unprecedented destruction. In the last days, the religious leaders wantonly judge, resist and condemn Almighty God. They even cooperate and collude with the CCP devil to suppress, arrest and persecute those brothers and sisters who spread the gospel of the kingdom. They committed the heinous sins of blaspheming against the Holy Spirit and recrucifying God on the cross long ago. Their evil behavior is even worse than that of the men of Sodom. It is incomparably worse than that of the Jewish Pharisees. They are the antichrists exposed by God's work during the last days. They are the evil religious force that has resisted God more severely and fanatically than any other in history! The religious community is composed entirely of evil forces that resist God. It is a nest of antichrist demons. It is a staunch

bastion which tries to stand with the kingdom of Christ as an equal. They are a satanic camp of sworn enemies to God that stubbornly rebel against Him! God's righteous disposition cannot be offended. God's holiness cannot be besmirched! God's work in the last days is the dawning of a new age and the end of an old one. The religious community that is controlled by all manner of antichrist demons as well as this evil world will be destroyed soon by God's disaster in the last days. God's righteous punishment has already arrived! It's just as Almighty God says, "**The world is falling! Babylon is in paralysis! Oh, the religious world! How could it not be destroyed by My authority on earth?**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Words to the Entire Universe, Chapter 22).

—The movie script of The City Will Be Overthrown

XVI. Questions and Answers on Dissecting the Essence of Paul

Question 1: The apostle Paul once said, “I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith: From now on there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness …” (2Ti 4:7–8). Therefore, acting in accordance with Paul’s words means we are doing God’s will. In that case, we will definitely be able to enter the kingdom of heaven and gain rewards.

Answer: As to the question of what kinds of people can enter the kingdom of heaven, the Lord Jesus said long ago, “**but he that does the will of My Father which is in heaven.**” This completely shows God’s substance of righteousness and holiness. People of Satan, filthy and corrupt, cannot enter the kingdom of heaven. However, Paul said that fighting the good fight, finishing his course and keeping the faith would allow him to enter the kingdom of heaven and be rewarded. According to Paul, as long as man labors for the Lord, they can enter the kingdom of heaven, even if they do not follow God’s words or have not attained sanctity. Then how should God’s righteousness and holiness be reflected? When Paul said this, he was opposing God. He was openly denying the Lord Jesus’ words and interrupting and disturbing God’s work! Could it be that fighting the good fight and running the course men are supposed to run is doing the heavenly Father’s will? Keeping the Lord Jesus’ name without betraying the Lord, is that doing the heavenly Father’s will? Doing the heavenly Father’s will is following God’s words, God’s commandments and God’s instructions. If people do not practice according to the Lord’s words, they can’t be doing the heavenly Father’s will, no matter what they do or how they suffer. What Paul said was completely based on his own conceptions and imaginations and mixed with his own ambitions and opinions. This is enough to prove that Paul was not a person that did the heavenly Father’s will. If he was doing God’s will, why didn’t he lead the followers to obey the Lord Jesus’ words? Why did he just throw out an opinion like that, one that was

completely against the Lord Jesus' words? Why did he work against the Lord Jesus? He misled and deceived others with his own absurd conceptions, He prevented others from walking in the Lord Jesus' way, and made His words empty and meaningless. He made the believers listen to him and betray the Lord. This proves that Paul was not someone who pursued the truth or followed God's will. Brothers and sisters, when we pursue entry into the kingdom of heaven, we must use the Lord Jesus' words as the standard because the Lord Jesus is the King of the kingdom of heaven; Only His words are the truth; only they have authority. Only the Lord Jesus determines what kinds of people can enter the kingdom of heaven, and Paul was only an apostle who spread the gospel. He was not Christ. His words are not the truth. Therefore, his words do not hold weight. The Lord Jesus determines whether or not Paul can enter the kingdom of heaven, so how is Paul qualified to determine whether other people can enter?

—The movie script of Stinging Memories

Question 2: You say Paul's words are not the truth. Then why are his words in the Bible? Paul's words are written in the Bible. Therefore, they were inspired by God; they represent God's words. We should pursue them!

Answer: Although Paul's words are written in the Bible, that does not mean they're God's words. This is because the Bible was compiled by man; it was not compiled by Jehovah God, not compiled by the Lord Jesus, and it was definitely not compiled by the Holy Spirit. Can something compiled by men be free of errors? Jehovah God's words in the Bible, Jehovah's words in the Bible, the words Jehovah God instructed to the prophets, and the Lord Jesus' words, those are the words of God. God never testified that the apostles' words represented His words, nor did He ever testify that the apostles' words were inspired by Him. "All scripture is given by inspiration of God." Paul said this. The Holy Spirit never testified to that effect, nor did the Lord Jesus. Only Paul said that. Therefore, his words hold no weight! In the age of the apostles, when their letters were distributed to churches, the people only said those were Brother Paul's words or Brother Peter's words. They all knew the apostles' letters were man's words. No one treated those letters as the words of God. That is a historical fact that no one can deny! In the Age of Grace, only the Lord Jesus was the incarnate God. Only the Lord Jesus expressed the words of God. The apostles were merely people being used by the Lord; their words are the words of men and only represent their personal interpretations and experiences of God's words. Even if their words contain the enlightenment of the Holy Spirit, you cannot say they're the words of God. Paul himself didn't dare say his words were the words of God or inspired by God. He didn't dare say he talked on behalf of the Lord Jesus. Therefore, if we say Paul's words are God's words and follow and pursue them as if they were God's requirement, just because they are written in the Bible, that is wrong!

Why do people always exalt and place blind faith in the Bible? Because they do not know that the Bible was compiled by men and did not originate from God's will. Therefore, people place blind faith in and worship the Bible; they claim all the words in the Bible are the words of God. This is a betrayal of historical facts. This is caused by men's ignorance. Let's read a passage from the words of Almighty God: "**The Pauline epistles of the New Testament are epistles that Paul wrote for the churches, and not inspirations from the Holy Spirit, nor are they the direct utterances of the Holy Spirit. They are merely words of exhortation, comfort, and encouragement that he wrote for the churches during the course of his work. So, too, are they a record of much of Paul's work at the time. … All he said that was edifying and positive to people was right, but it did not represent the utterances of the Holy Spirit, and it could not represent God. It is an egregious understanding, and a tremendous blasphemy, for people to treat the records of a man's experiences and a man's epistles as the words spoken by the Holy Spirit to the churches! … His identity was merely that of a working apostle, and he was merely an apostle who was sent by God; he was not a prophet, nor a foreteller. To him, his own work and the lives of the brothers and sisters were of the utmost importance. Thus, he could not speak on behalf of the Holy Spirit. His words were not the words of the Holy Spirit, much less could they be said to be the words of God, for Paul was nothing more than a creature of God, and was certainly not the incarnation of God. His identity was not the same as that of Jesus. The words of Jesus were the words of the Holy Spirit, they were the words of God, for His identity was that of Christ—the Son of God. How could Paul be His equal? If people see the epistles or words like Paul's as the utterances of the Holy Spirit, and worship**

them as God, then it can only be said that they are too indiscriminating. To speak more harshly, is this not simply blasphemy? How could a man talk on behalf of God? And how could people bow down before the records of his epistles and of the words he spoke as if they were a holy book, or a heavenly book? Could the words of God be casually uttered by a man? How could a man talk on behalf of God?" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Concerning the Bible (3)). Brothers and sisters, now I believe we can tell the difference between God's words and the words of men, right? In the past, we put too much blind faith in the Bible and worshiped it too much. We thought that the Bible was inspired by God and contained only God's words. We thought that the Bible was compiled by God. This was a huge mistake! People without the truth are liable to be deceived. They even cannot distinguish between God's words and the words of men. They treat the words of men as if they were God's words. This is the height of foolishness! Paul is just one of the apostles sent by God; he is not the incarnate God. He can never express the words of God. If we make Paul's words on par with God's words, we are offending God's disposition gravely!

—The movie script of Stinging Memories

Question 3: Even if Paul's words are not God's words, yet after being called by God, he spread the gospel and endured suffering for the Lord for the rest of his life. He traveled so far and worked so hard to establish the churches. He paid such a heavy price. His contributions to the church are as plain as the eye can see. His faith in the Lord and the way he suffered for the Lord are an example for all Christians. Do you not accept these facts?

Answer: How many people just read about how Paul spread the gospel and suffered in his letters but do not understand Paul's nature and substance. Everyone knows that when the Lord Jesus did His work, Paul was the main culprit that hated the truth and resisted the Lord Jesus. This is something that Paul himself did not dare deny. The Lord Jesus gave so many sermons and performed so many miracles. Why did Paul still hate and resist the Lord Jesus? Why did he fanatically persecute and hunt the Lord Jesus' disciples? This is evidence that Paul's nature and substance was hatred of the truth and of God. Why did he work so hard to protect the interests of the chief priests and Pharisees? Why did he stay loyal to Judaism? This shows that his heart was only thinking of his position, not God. To increase his position, he resisted the true God and persecuted His believers. He wanted to obtain rewards from Judaism at all costs. What kind of person is he? It isn't hard to tell. What was the situation that caused Paul to accept the Lord's call and spread the gospel as an apostle? When he was fanatically hunting and persecuting the Lord Jesus' disciples, the Lord had no choice but to appear to Paul in the sky. The Lord blinded him with a great light, bringing him to his knees. The Lord did not appear to Paul because he was loyal to the Lord. He appeared to him as part of a punishment; He had no choice. Paul was forced to sacrifice and suffer for the Lord Jesus because the Lord Jesus appeared before him. His objective was atonement. He saw that the Lord was too almighty, capable of blinding

him and forcing him to kneel down. He was afraid that he would be punished and sent to hell. That's why he sacrificed for the Lord. If the Lord Jesus had not appeared to him, would he have followed the Lord or sacrificed for Him based on his devilish nature that resisted the Lord Jesus? Definitely not! Therefore, Paul did not really have faith in the Lord Jesus. His suffering and sacrifice were not done willingly. He had no choice; he was forced.

—The movie script of Stinging Memories

Question 4: Even if Paul wasn't perfect, the Lord wouldn't remember his past transgressions. Paul worked and suffered for the Lord for many years; he paid a higher price than anyone else. His suffering must have earned the Lord's praise. Brother Paul is still our exemplar! He is an example to all Christians. If Paul did not obtain God's praise, then who can?

Answer: You dare say that Paul's suffering definitely obtained God's praise? Do you know why he suffered, what his intentions were? I think he did it to atone for his sins; he had no choice. He did it to obtain the crown and a reward. How could the Lord accept his suffering? The Lord is righteous; the Lord is always watching people and their hearts. People cannot see through Paul, but God can. Should people not believe that God is righteous? Why do they extol Paul, adore Paul, and exalt Paul like this? Is that not resisting the Lord Jesus? Why do people defend Paul? What problem does this illustrate? Are they standing on the Lord Jesus' side and speaking up for Him? Do those kinds of people really have faith in the Lord?

People worship and follow Paul. It proves that people's nature is the same as Paul's. It proves that people's intentions are the same as Paul's when they suffer and expend for the Lord. The kind of man people worship and follow represents the essence of their nature. In the conception of man, whoever suffers and expends for preaching the Lord's name will be saved by God. This is wrong! God saves people like Peter, who possess humanity, love the truth, pursue the truth and love God truly. God does not save wicked people who hate the truth, deny and resist God. Such people possess Satan's nature, and they will never change. Paul was such a person. Contrary to Paul, Peter took the initiative to follow the Lord Jesus when He was preaching. He was instructed by the Holy Spirit and recognized Jesus

as the Lord and as the Christ. Peter had true faith in the Lord Jesus. The Lord Jesus observed everything, and later focused on training Peter and making him perfect. The Lord Jesus asked Peter on many occasions, "**Simon, son of John, love you Me?**" and said to Peter, "**Feed My sheep**" (Jhn 21:16), "**And I will give to you the keys of the kingdom of heaven**" (Mat 16:19). It can be seen that Peter was the one who truly loved the Lord and truly did the heavenly Father's will. And Paul was a Pharisee who hated the truth and resisted God. The Lord Jesus called on Paul to give him a chance to repent, and let him serve by preaching the gospel. The Lord Jesus conquered someone like Paul with demonic nature, revealing the omnipotence of the Lord Jesus. God can mobilize anyone to serve His work. From the work of God, we can clearly see what kind of people God saves and what kind He doesn't. In the Age of Grace, the Lord Jesus did not save those Jewish Pharisees, but condemned and cursed them, "**Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchers of the righteous, And say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets. Why you be witnesses to yourselves, that you are the children of them which killed the prophets. Fill you up then the measure of your fathers. You serpents, you generation of vipers, how can you escape the damnation of hell?**" (Mat 23:29–33). In the last days, Almighty God also judges and reveals the essence of the Pharisees: "**These Pharisees in essence were stubborn, arrogant, and did not obey the truth. The principle of their belief in God was: No matter how profound Your preaching, no matter how high Your authority, You are not Christ unless You are called the Messiah**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. By the Time You Behold the Spiritual Body of Jesus, God Will Have Made Heaven

and Earth Anew). "**What was their substance? Was it not that they didn't seek the way of compatibility with the truth? They obsessed over each and every word of Scripture while paying heed neither to My will nor to the steps and methods of My work. They were not people who sought the truth, but people who rigidly clung to words; they were not people who believed in God, but people who believed in the Bible. Essentially, they were watchdogs of the Bible. … So they preferred to forsake their future and the sin offering to condemn Jesus, who did not conform to the doctrine of Scripture, to death**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. You Should Seek the Way of Compatibility With Christ). Brothers and sisters, from the fact that both times God became flesh, He judges and condemns the Pharisees, we saw God's righteous and holy disposition. God did not save the hypocritical Pharisees at all because their essence was annoyed with the truth, hateful of the truth and hostile to God. Paul himself had the essence of the Pharisees. No matter how many years he had believed in God, how much he had suffered, he was unable to know God or become someone who obeyed God's will. Therefore, if you think that Paul was praised by God for suffering and expending, such view of yours is wrong!

—The movie script of Stinging Memories

Question 5: Paul's sacrifices and suffering were forced. We admit that as well. However, when you say that Paul in substance hated the truth and was the enemy of God, I don't agree with that. What are you basing that on?

Answer: There are facts that can show whether or not Paul hated the truth and opposed God: When the Lord Jesus did His work, He expressed many truths, displayed many miracles and shook all of Judea. A person of Paul's caliber should have known that all of the Lord Jesus' work came from God, but Paul never sought or studied the Lord Jesus' way. Instead, he went from place to place, publicly speaking out against the Lord Jesus. When the Lord Jesus was crucified on the cross, the sun went dark, the earth shook, and the curtain of the temple was torn in two. The Lord Jesus was resurrected and appeared for forty days after His death These two greatest miracles shook all of Judea The Lord's disciples also performed many miracles in His name. Despite seeing all of this, not only did Paul not acknowledge that the Lord Jesus was God, he intensified his deliberate resistance of God. He asked letters from the high priest and then fanatically resisted and persecuted the Lord Jesus' disciples. It seemed that he would not be satisfied until he had killed all of the Lord Jesus' followers and was willing to resist to the death. These facts are enough to prove that Paul resisted God on purpose and desperately disturbed and disrupted God's work. His nature and essence is hatred of the truth and resistance to God. Otherwise, how would he have been able to treat the Lord Jesus, who expressed the truth, as his enemy? Let's see how Almighty God exposes Paul's nature and substance. Almighty God says, "**At the mention of Paul, you will think of his history, and of some of the stories about him that are inaccurate and out of line with reality. He was taught by his parents from a young age, and received My life, and as a result of My**

predestination he was possessed of the caliber that I require. … Nevertheless, his one imperfection was that, because of his talents, he would often be glib and boastful. As a result, due to his disobedience, part of which directly represented the archangel, when I became flesh for the first time, he made every effort to defy Me" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Words to the Entire Universe, Chapter 4). "**For, in the beginning, he persecuted Christ, and did not submit to Christ; he was inherently a rebel who deliberately opposed Christ, and someone who had no knowledge of the work of the Holy Spirit. When his work was almost concluded, still he did not know the work of the Holy Spirit, and merely acted of his own accord pursuant to his own character, without paying the slightest attention to the will of the Holy Spirit. And so his nature was in enmity to Christ and did not obey the truth. Someone like this, who had been forsaken by the work of the Holy Spirit, who did not know the work of the Holy Spirit, and who also opposed Christ—how could such a person be saved?**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Success or Failure Depends on the Path That Man Walks). Brothers and sisters, Almighty God's words have exposed Paul's substance all too clearly. Paul was an enemy of God who deliberately resisted Christ. In reality, Paul did not know the Lord Jesus at all. He fanatically resisted the Lord Jesus. That is because he hated God and the truths expressed by the Lord Jesus. Therefore, Paul's nature and substance were hatred of the truth and resistance to God.

—The movie script of Stinging Memories

Question 6: All these things you're talking about are sins Paul committed before he accepted the Lord's calling. However, after he was shone by the great light, he began traveling everywhere spreading the Lord's gospel. He established so many churches and led so many people to accept the salvation of the Lord Jesus. He wrote so many letters in support of the faithful. This shows that Brother Paul had already repented. You can't conclude that he was an enemy of the Lord Jesus based on his performance before he returned to the Lord.

Answer: It is true that Paul spread the gospel for many years and wrote many letters after being shone by the great light, but that doesn't mean he really repented. Nowhere in his letters does it ever indicate that he really reflected on and knew his own evil behavior: his fanatical resistance of the Lord Jesus and persecution of His disciples. He just merely acknowledged that he was the foremost of all sinners. He never described his own nature and substance, nor did he say why he resisted the Lord Jesus, what his motive was. The fact that he never addressed these things in writing means he never really repented, doesn't it? Why was Paul able to answer the Lord Jesus' calling and work for the Lord? In reality, he had no other choice. Paul knew if he didn't accept the Lord Jesus' calling, he'd face punishment and certain death. He was able to spread the gospel and suffer a bit because he wished to atone for his sins. How can one person who just seek atonement truly repent? Furthermore, we can clearly see from Paul's letters that when Paul was spreading the gospel and doing his work, he never exalted the Lord Jesus or bore witness to Him. He never testified about how the Lord Jesus redeemed people, supplied people, and led people. He definitely never testified about how the Lord Jesus is the truth, the way, and the life, that He is the appearance of God, God incarnate who does God's own work. Paul never testified about the Lord Jesus' loveable

qualities, nor did he ever testify about how the Lord Jesus suffered pain and humiliation in order to save mankind. He never preached or testified about the truths that the Lord Jesus once expressed or everything He said. He never encouraged other believers to abide by the Lord Jesus' words, He never told them that they must follow, serve and testify to the Lord according to the truths expressed by the Lord Jesus. He definitely never told them about the substance of the Lord Jesus' work and its true effects, or how people should do the heavenly Father's will in order to enter the kingdom of heaven. Instead, he explained the Lord Jesus' work according to his ideas, and misinterpreted the Lord Jesus' words. Many words that he said seriously interrupted and disturbed God's work in the Age of Grace. Does that prove he really repented? Paul's work did not bring the believers before the Lord Jesus. He did not lead people to experience the Lord Jesus' words or know that the Lord Jesus was the appearance of God. Instead, he exalted himself and bore witness to himself. He brought the believers before himself and made them adore him. Is this not the same path the Pharisees walked down? These facts are enough to prove that Paul never truly repented.

—The movie script of Stinging Memories

Question 7: You say Paul did not exalt or bear witness to the Lord Jesus. I don't accept what you're saying. Brother Paul wrote so many letters. Weren't they all testimonies to the Lord Jesus?

Answer: Even though Paul wrote all those letters, he never exalted or testified about the Lord Jesus. Even when he mentioned the Lord Jesus, he was only using Jesus Christ's name to testify about himself. For example, in his letters, he often said, "Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God." What Paul meant was he was serving as the Lord Jesus' apostle by God's will, not by the Lord Jesus' will. Did God up in heaven call him? No! The Lord Jesus called him. The Lord Jesus did not call him in the identity of God; He called Paul in the identity of Christ. However, Paul said, "by the will of God." He didn't acknowledge that the Lord Jesus Christ and God were one and the same. In Paul's letters, he always separated God, Christ, and the Holy Spirit. He thought that God was God and Christ was Christ, that God is above Christ, and only the heavenly Father is the highest. We can see that Paul believed in the God of heaven, not Christ incarnate. Because Paul didn't know the Lord Jesus, he never exalted the Lord Jesus Christ as God. He never exalted Jesus Christ's words or testified to the fact that His words were the words of God, nor did he make people magnify the Lord Jesus. Therefore, did Paul really believe in Christ? Was he following Christ and bearing witness to Him? No! The true nature of what Paul did is very serious! According to the words of the apostle, John, "Every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: And every spirit that confesses not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist …" (1Jn 4:2–3). This passage tells us that all that fail to acknowledge God's incarnation are antichrists. Considering the fact that Paul only believed in the God of heaven and therefore did not really believe in Christ, as far as Jesus Christ's work is concerned, Paul was

a non-believer! Paul flew the “an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God” flag, and exalted and established himself in all that he did. He always wanted equal standing with the Lord Jesus Christ. This fully shows that Paul was too ambitious. He did not revere or obey the Lord Jesus in the slightest. His true nature, the nature of hatred of the truth and resistance to God, never changed. This is even more proof of how Paul never really repented.

Paul did work and spread the gospel for many years, but he never preached or bore witness to Jesus Christ’s words. We also never saw Paul talk about the truths expressed by the Lord Jesus, despite the many churches he traveled to. We really doubt how many of the Lord Jesus’ words were in Paul’s heart. Therefore, we are sure that Paul did not pursue the truth because he did not focus on experiencing the Lord Jesus Christ’s words, nor did he practice the Lord Jesus’ words. Instead, he spread the gospel based on his gifts, human efforts, human knowledge and human ability. How was he someone that pursued the truth? No wonder he never truly knew, loved or obeyed the Lord Jesus. Even after working for many years, his old nature never changed. Instead, he became more and more arrogant and mercenary. He established himself through labor to make others follow and adore him. Then he tried to use that as capital for making a deal with God. It is just as Paul himself once said, “I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith: From now on there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness” (2Ti 4:7–8). This sentence clearly explains Paul’s motive for his many years of work: rewards and the crown. From the beginning to the end, Paul never pursued the truth; he never sought to change his disposition. His objectives and satanic nature never changed at all. The path he traveled was that of the Pharisees. All these prove that he never truly repented. The Lord Jesus called Paul to give him a chance to repent and to

use him to spread the gospel. The fact that the Lord Jesus was able to conquer Paul, someone with a demonic nature, proves that He is almighty and shows us that He can get anyone to serve His work.

—The movie script of Stinging Memories

Question 8: You say Paul never really repented. But Paul said that for him to live is Christ. How do you explain that?

Answer: Paul said for him to live was Christ, but those are just his own words. They are not the testimony of the Holy Spirit and are not supported by the Lord Jesus' words. The other apostles never said for Paul to live was Christ. Just basing this on Paul's words is not credible! None of the ancient saints and prophets dared claim that for them, to live is Christ. Only Paul dared say that. Therefore, we can see that Paul was too arrogant and unreasonable. In the Age of Grace, the Holy Spirit only testified that the Lord Jesus was Christ. The Lord Jesus' work of redemption, the disposition He expressed, and all that He has and is completely proved that His identity was that of Christ. Paul was the main culprit who hated the truth and resisted God. He said for him to live was Christ; that shows he did not know Christ at all. As to this question, let us see what Almighty God says.

"**The incarnate God is called Christ, and Christ is the flesh donned by the Spirit of God. This flesh is unlike any man that is of the flesh. This difference is because Christ is not of flesh and blood; He is the incarnation of the Spirit. He has both a normal humanity and a complete divinity. His divinity is not possessed by any man. His normal humanity sustains all His normal activities in the flesh, while His divinity carries out the work of God Himself. Be it His humanity or divinity, both submit to the will of the heavenly Father. The essence of Christ is the Spirit, that is, the divinity. Therefore, His essence is that of God Himself….**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Essence of Christ Is Obedience to the Will of the Heavenly Father).

"**God become flesh is called Christ, and so the Christ that can give people the truth is called God. There is nothing excessive about this, for He possesses the essence of God, and possesses God's disposition, and wisdom in His work, that are unattainable by man. Those who call themselves Christ, yet cannot do the work of God, are frauds. Christ is not merely the manifestation of God on earth, but also the particular flesh assumed by God as He carries out and completes His work among man. This flesh cannot be supplanted by just any man, but is a flesh that can adequately bear God's work on earth, and express the disposition of God, and well represent God, and provide man with life**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life).

From God's words, we can see that God incarnate is called Christ. Christ is God's Spirit realized in the flesh. Christ is the appearance of God, that is, the flesh God takes when He comes down to do His own work. Therefore, Christ is God. Christ can give man truth and supply man with life; He can express God's righteous disposition and the wisdom of His work. Christ is the righteous and holy God Himself. Christ's life is inherently possessed by Him. He is God incarnate from the moment He was born. He does not become God halfway down the path of faith. He who is Christ at birth will forever be Christ. Those who are not Christ at birth never will be Christ. No matter how men pursue the truth, they cannot become Christ. Christ's life is something that no created or non-created being possesses or can ever obtain. Paul said for him to live was Christ. Then did he possess God's disposition and all that God has and is? Could he express truths to save mankind? If he had Christ's life, how was he still able to sin and resist the Lord Jesus? Paul himself admitted he was the "foremost of all sinners." How can to live be Christ for a sinner? Isn't this blasphemy

against God? Are you saying that people who labor and work a lot can become Christ? Is that not a fallacy? Paul originally was the main culprit who resisted Christ. That is a publicly-known fact. In his later years, he testified that for him to live was Christ, trying to replace Jesus Christ and take His position. How can a life-long antichrist, a person of Satan's ilk like that, become Christ? Paul said for him to live was Christ. This clearly was false! It was an expansion of his satanic ambition! It completely exposed Paul's desire to become God. He wanted to take the place of the Lord Jesus in the hearts of men. This proves that Paul's true nature was that of an antichrist, and that Paul walked the path of an antichrist.

—The movie script of Stinging Memories

XVII. Questions and Answers on Why the True Way Is Subject to Persecution

Question 1: I don't understand, if Eastern Lightning is the true way, then why would it be strongly opposed by the CCP government? Why would religious leaders also furiously condemn it? It's not like pastors and elders have not been persecuted by the CCP government. But when it comes to Eastern Lightning, how come the pastors and elders who serve God can have the same view and attitude as the CCP government? Just what is the reason behind this?

Answer: The Bible says: "… the whole world lies in wickedness" (1Jn 5:19). The Lord Jesus also said, "**This is an evil generation**" (Luk 11: 29). Then just what is the extent of this world's darkness and evil? In the Age of Grace, for the sake of redeeming mankind, the Lord Jesus in the flesh was crucified by the religious circles and rulers of the time. In the last days, Almighty God expressing truths and judging mankind has also been met with the condemnation and resistance of religious circles and the CCP government, and rejected by this era. This fulfills the Lord Jesus' words: "**For as the lightning, that lightens out of the one part under heaven, shines to the other part under heaven; so shall also the Son of man be in his day. But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation**" (Luk 17:24-25). This prophecy of the Lord Jesus has now finally been fulfilled. All those who hunger for God's appearance should see clearly that the Lord has already arrived and is performing His judgment work of the last days. The prophecy of the Lord Jesus has already been fulfilled. Can people still not see this fact clearly? Atheist regimes and the majority of religious leaders are all satanic forces that hate God and the truth. This point can be confirmed through what happened with the crucifixion of the Lord Jesus. Therefore, as long as it is the true way, it will surely suffer the rejection and condemnation of atheist regimes and religious circles, and those who preach the true way and practice the truth

will also surely be framed and persecuted. As the Lord Jesus said, "**If the world hate you, you know that it hated me before it hated you. If you were of the world, the world would love his own: but because you are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hates you**" (Jhn 15:18-19). It is because of this that, throughout history, the only people among mankind who can accept the true way and follow the one true God are those very few who truly love and seek the truth, while most people will, because they follow satanic forces or because they fear persecution, be afraid to look into the true way, and lose the opportunity to be saved by God! Therefore, the Lord Jesus once warned man: "**Enter you in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leads to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leads to life, and few there be that find it**" (Mat 7:13-14).

—The movie script of Break Through the Snare

Question 2: If Eastern Lightning is the true way, then what is the basis of your confirmation? We believe in the Lord Jesus because He redeemed us, but what do you use to verify that Eastern Lightning is the true way?

Answer: On this point, let's read two passages of Almighty God's words to see what Almighty God says. Almighty God says, "**What is the most basic principle in seeking the true way? You have to look at whether or not there is the work of the Holy Spirit in this way, whether or not these words are the expression of the truth, who is testified to, and what it can bring you**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Those Who Know God and His Work Can Satisfy God).

"**It is not difficult to inquire into such a thing, but it requires each of us to know this one truth: He who is God incarnate shall possess the essence of God, and He who is God incarnate shall possess the expression of God. Since God becomes flesh, He shall bring forth the work He intends to do, and since God becomes flesh, He shall express what He is, and shall be able to bring the truth to man, bestow life upon him, and point the way for him. Flesh that does not have the essence of God is decidedly not the incarnate God; of this there is no doubt. If man intends to inquire into whether it is God's incarnate flesh, then he must corroborate this from the disposition He expresses and the words He speaks. Which is to say, to corroborate whether or not it is God's incarnate flesh, and whether or not it is the true way, one must discriminate on the basis of His essence. And so, in determining whether it is the flesh of God incarnate, the key lies in His essence (His work, His utterances, His disposition, and many other aspects), rather than external appearance**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Preface).

Brothers and sisters, as long as it is the true way it comes from work personally done by God. Since it is God's own work, there will surely be expression of truth and the work of the Holy Spirit. We have witnessed that the Eastern Lightning is the true way and that Almighty God is God incarnate precisely because Almighty God came and expressed many aspects of the truth and performed work to judge and cleanse mankind, fulfilling God's work plan to cleanse and save mankind in the last days.

Almighty God says: "**God's work in the present incarnation is to express His disposition primarily through chastisement and judgment. Building on this foundation, He brings more truth to man and points out to him more ways of practice, thereby achieving His objective of conquering man and saving him from his own corrupt disposition. This is what lies behind the work of God in the Age of Kingdom**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Preface).

"**By means of this work of judgment and chastisement, man will fully come to know the filthy and corrupt essence within his own self, and he will be able to change completely and become clean. Only in this way can man become worthy to return before the throne of God. All the work done this day is so that man can be made clean and be changed; through judgment and chastisement by the word, as well as through refinement, man can purge away his corruption and be made pure. Rather than deeming this stage of work to be that of salvation, it would be more apt to say it is the work of purification**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Mystery of the Incarnation (4)).

Almighty God of the last days expresses truths and performs His work of judging and cleansing mankind, expressing all truths required for man to achieve knowledge of God and salvation, and opening up all the mysteries

of God's management plan for mankind. For instance, the aim of God's 6,000-year management plan, God's working principles, the inside story of His three-stage work, the mystery and meaning of God becoming flesh, how mankind has developed to today and mankind's future destination, the truth of the Bible, and the meaning of God's names, and so forth, are all mysteries that mankind cannot fathom! The word of Almighty God fully exposes mankind's corrupt essence and the root of their corruption. Thus, man has true knowledge of their own corrupt ugliness such as arrogance, selfishness and despicable nature amid the severe judgment of God's words. And man understands the truth, has true understanding of God's righteous disposition, and develops a heart that reveres God. Their life disposition has all changed to different extents, and they gradually break away from the depraved situation of sinning in the day and confessing at night. This completely proves that Almighty God's work is the true way, and that Almighty God's word is the truth, the way, and the life, full of authority and power, and can thoroughly cleanse and save man. Otherwise, apart from God, who can help man break free from the bondage of sin? Apart from God, who can open up thousands of years of hidden mysteries?

Only God is the truth, the way, the life. Only God can bestow upon man the way of eternal life. Only by accepting the truths expressed by Christ of the last days can we gain eternal salvation! Let's again take a look at Almighty God's word.

Almighty God says, "**God Himself is life, and the truth, and His life and truth coexist. Those who are incapable of gaining the truth shall never gain life. Without the guidance, support, and provision of the truth, you shall only gain letters, doctrines, and, above all, death. God's life is ever-present, and His truth and life coexist. If you cannot find the source of truth, then you will not gain the nourishment of life; if you**

cannot gain the provision of life, then you will surely have no truth, and so apart from imaginations and notions, the entirety of your body shall be nothing but your flesh—your stench-ridden flesh. Know that the words of books do not count as life, the records of history cannot be feted as the truth, and the regulations of the past cannot serve as an account of words presently spoken by God. Only that which is expressed by God when He comes to earth and lives among man is the truth, life, God's will, and His current way of working" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life).

"**Christ of the last days brings life, and brings the enduring and everlasting way of truth. This truth is the path by which man gains life, and it is the only path by which man shall know God and be approved by God. If you do not seek the way of life provided by Christ of the last days, then you shall never gain the approval of Jesus, and shall never be qualified to enter the gate of the kingdom of heaven, for you are both a puppet and prisoner of history. Those who are controlled by regulations, by letters, and shackled by history will never be able to gain life nor gain the perpetual way of life. This is because all they have is turbid water which has been clung to for thousands of years instead of the water of life that flows from the throne. Those who are not supplied with the water of life will forever remain corpses, playthings of Satan, and sons of hell. …**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life).

The words and work of Almighty God are the salvation God bestows upon mankind in the last days. It is the only path to God's salvation for mankind in the last days. The Scriptures say, What comes from God shall

increase, what comes from man shall decrease. It has now only been over 20 short years since Almighty God commenced His work. Despite the furious resistance and suppression of the evil CCP and the entire religious world, God's kingdom gospel has been like an unstoppable surging wave. It has now not only spread across all of Mainland China but many countries around the world. It is now comprehensively expanding to all countries and regions. More and more people who hunger for God's appearance have all one by one come to the house of Almighty God. The fact that Almighty God's kingdom gospel has rapidly spread to all of mankind despite repeated oppression is iron-clad proof of the work of the Holy Spirit, fully proving that "What comes from God shall increase," and also testifying to mankind: Almighty God is the second coming of the Lord Jesus. The Eastern Lightning is the true way.

—The movie script of Break Through the Snare

Question 3: You bear witness that Eastern Lightning is the true way, but the Chinese Communist government condemns it as a cult. What's the difference between a proper religion and a cult?

Answer: The CCP is an atheist party. It resists God and hates the truth more than any other. It has determined all churches and groups that believe in the true God as evil cults and has openly declared that the Bible is an evil cult book. This is a recognized fact. Don't you know this? Besides, haven't we suffered enough persecution for believing in the Lord Jesus over all these years? Have there not been enough preachers and Christians persecuted to death and imprisoned by them? How can you still listen to the rumors of the CCP government? When it comes to differentiating between cults and good religions, it can't be differentiated by however some political party or person wants to differentiate it, and moreover it cannot be determined by some country or its national constitution. A good religion is regarded as a positive thing of benefit to mankind. Cults are regarded as negative things that corrupt mankind. If someone wants to determine whether a church is a good religion or an evil cult, it should be based on whether it is a positive or negative thing. Churches that come from God and formed from God's work are good religions. All those that come from Satan and the work of evil spirits are regarded as evil cults. The CCP government is regarded as a satanic regime that most resists God and hates the truth. The CCP is the true evil cult. They don't have the right to comment on belief in God, and moreover are not qualified to condemn any group or church with religious beliefs.

The CCP satanic regime's crackdown of the Eastern Lightning is most severe, most outrageous. This is enough to show that the CCP is most afraid of truth and despises God the most. Over these years, China's house

churches and underground churches have continued to be condemned, persecuted and hunted by the CCP regime. Are we to deny that the Lord Jesus is the true God and true way because of this? You have believed in God for many years. Can you not see through this? The CCP has always twisted the truth and inverted right and wrong. This is the substance of Satan the devil. Can you still not differentiate between a good religion and an evil cult? All churches that believe in the true God are good religions. All those that believe in false gods, evil spirits, or Satan the devil are all evil cults. All those that advocate God-denying, God-resisting heresies such as atheism and evolution are all evil cults. Now, the Eastern Lightning is what is being most furiously condemned and cracked down on by the CCP. The whole world can see this very clearly. If people really can distinguish, they should see what this satanic regime most opposes and despises, and they can be certain what is the true way. The CCP most loathes the truth and most fears people accepting the truth. That is why it is so furiously resisting God. In the last days, only Almighty God is expressing truths to save mankind, only Almighty God is doing the work of saving and cleansing mankind. Is this not a fact? This way, we can see why the CCP most loathes the Church of Almighty God and most resists God. All those awaiting the Lord's appearance should open their eyes and see just who is performing judgment work in the last days!

—The movie script of Break Through the Snare

Question 4: Under the rule of the CCP government, people can be arrested, persecuted, and even executed for accepting the true way! I don't understand, why is the CCP so afraid of the work of Almighty God?

Answer: The CCP government is now going all over the country to fully suppress the Church of Almighty God, furiously hunting Christ and capturing and persecuting God's chosen people. To believe in the true God and perform our duty in China indeed carries great dangers, but people in religious circles and unbelievers don't understand: Why do we still believe in Almighty God when the CCP government is persecuting and condemning us like this? It's because Almighty God is the true God, the reappearance of the Redeemer. Only Almighty God can save us from Satan's influence, set us free from sin, grant us a wonderful destination. In the final age, whether or not we believe in Almighty God will determine our ending, our fate. The Bible says, "the whole world lies in wickedness." This means that the whole world is under Satan's control, that all of mankind lives under Satan's domain, corrupt to the core, with no likeness of humanity. The arrival of Almighty God in the last days is to save us corrupt mankind from Satan's influence, so we can truly return before God, achieve salvation, live out a true life, and receive a wonderful destination. That's the meaning of our faith in Almighty God. Additionally, we also have to see through why the CCP hates Almighty God and suppresses and persecutes the Church of Almighty God. What is its purpose? Most people see it very clearly. The evil CCP is doing all it can to condemn, frame, and discredit the Church of Almighty God, wantonly arresting and persecuting God's chosen people and attempting to make China a region without God, all so it can preserve its dark regime and forever control the Chinese people, sit on their heads and abuse its power. In the end, they will torment all Chinese people to death and pull them toward hell. The evil CCP is the most truth-

hating, God-hating satanic regime. It knows now that Almighty God is the only One in the world who can express the truth, that He is currently performing His judgment, cleansing, and salvation work of the last days. Almighty God's words have already been published on the Internet, so it can be sought and investigated by all mankind. The CCP devil is extremely terrified that once Almighty God's words spread out among the people, all those who love the truth and justice will turn to Almighty God. Then its truth-hating, God-resisting demonic face will be thoroughly exposed in the light, and all of humanity will reject it, strike it down, trample it beneath their feet, letting it leave a stink for ten thousand years, so that it will never again have a place to stand in China, so that it will never again be able to corrupt and harm the people of the world. That is why the CCP extremely hates all the truth expressed by Almighty God, hates the Church of Almighty God, and does everything it can to prevent people from accepting the true way and turning to Almighty God. If we cannot see through Satan's scheme, and continue to be deceived, bound, and controlled by the CCP, then we are foolish beyond salvation.

—The movie script of Song of Victory

Question 5: I used to think that the CCP's days were numbered and that it should collapse soon, so wouldn't it save a lot of trouble if I waited for it to collapse before I believed? But now I see that the purpose of the CCP persecuting and arresting us is so that we will be sent to hell! If we wait until the CCP perishes before we believe in Almighty God, would we still be able to receive God's salvation in the last days and enter God's kingdom? Would we miss our chance at salvation?

Answer: Today, because we believe in God, seek the truth and walk the right path of life, we face the CCP's furious oppression and persecution. This is a meaningful thing! This is because God is using the CCP satanic regime to do service for perfecting a group of overcomers, while at the same time revealing and eliminating those who don't sincerely believe in God and don't love the truth. The true overcomers are those who, living under the authoritarian regime of the CCP, can experience God's word with true faith, and through experiencing the CCP's wild suppression and cruel persecution, thoroughly see the true colors of the devil Satan, and can then hate Satan, forsake it, and sincerely turn to God, achieving salvation and being perfected! Overcomers are made in the special environment of the CCP satanic regime's resistance against God and persecution of God's chosen people. Without the harsh environment created by the devil CCP's oppression and persecution, true overcomers cannot be created. For those who sincerely want God, no matter how the CCP persecutes, or how harsh the environment gets, they will still follow God, perform their duty, risk everything to pursue the truth, and have more and more faith in God! They see through the CCP's crackdown of justice, support of evil, and its lawless, perverse and evil, reactionary essence. They see clearly that the CCP is the demon that corrupts, afflicts, and devours mankind, thus they hate it even more, rebel against it, and genuinely turn to God. Through the contrast

brought out by the CCP satanic regime, they have also gotten to know God's righteousness and holiness, His beauty and goodness. All God does is love and salvation to mankind! The faith and love they have in God have grown greater, and their hearts have become even closer to God. These people have thoroughly broken through the CCP satanic regime's dark influence and have borne overcoming testimony. They are the overcomers made by God amid the great tribulation, and also the group of people who have a part in Christ's "tribulation, kingdom, and patience." They are Christ's true witnesses, the 144,000 overcomers stated in the Book of Revelation, the ones who will enter God's kingdom and receive eternal life! That is why our experiencing the CCP's persecution for belief and pursuit of truth is so meaningful! As the Lord Jesus said: "**Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed are you, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake**" (Mat 5:10-11). It's just as what Almighty God says. "**Perhaps you all remember these words: 'For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, works for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory.' You have all heard these words before, yet none of you understood their true meaning. Today, you are profoundly aware of their true significance. These words shall be fulfilled by God during the last days, and they shall be fulfilled in those who have been brutally persecuted by the great red dragon in the land where it lies coiled. The great red dragon persecutes God and is the enemy of God, and so, in this land, those who believe in God are thus subjected to humiliation and oppression, and these words are fulfilled in you, this group of people, as a result**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Is the Work of God As Simple As Man Imagines?). Now is the golden time for God to perfect the

overcomers. When the CCP collapses, these overcomers will rise up among the masses to bear witness to God's victory! When their witness to God reaches the peak, the kingdom of God will officially be realized on earth! God's work of saving mankind will be concluded by then. Those who will be saved and be perfected will already be set. If we wait until then to believe, we will miss out on the opportunity to be made overcomers by God. Such people will not have borne the overcoming testimony and cannot enter God's kingdom. Even if they survive, they merely count as a "service-doer," and cannot be a member of God's kingdom.

God is almighty. God's wisdom is always exercised based on Satan's scheming. Almighty God's work in the last days cannot be stopped by any hostile forces. Since Almighty God began His work of the last days, He has continuously faced furious opposition and condemnation from religious circles and the devilish CCP. But God's kingdom gospel has still spread through all of Mainland China, reaching an unprecedented extent, with tens of thousands of churches being established all over the country and millions of people coming under Almighty God's name. Almighty God has gained a group of people who are of the same mind with Him. Now, the gospel website of the Church of Almighty God has already been opened to various nations and places around the world. The words of Almighty God are being accepted and spread by more and more people. The expanding of the kingdom gospel completely reveals God's almightiness and wisdom!

Almighty God says, "**Today, God has returned to the world to do His work. His first stop is the grand assemblage of dictatorial rulers: China, the staunch bastion of atheism. God has gained a group of people by His wisdom and power. During this period, He has been hunted by China's ruling party by every means and subjected to great suffering, with no place to rest His head, unable to find shelter. Despite**

this, God still continues the work He intends to do: He utters His voice and spreads the gospel. None can fathom the almightiness of God. In China, a country that regards God as an enemy, God has never ceased His work. Instead, more people have accepted His work and word, for God saves each and every member of mankind to the greatest extent possible. We trust that no country or power can stand in the way of what God wishes to achieve. Those who obstruct God's work, resist the word of God and disturb and impair the plan of God shall ultimately be punished by God" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God Presides Over the Fate of All Mankind).

"**The kingdom is expanding in humanity's midst, it is forming in humanity's midst, and it is standing up in humanity's midst; there is no force that can destroy My kingdom. … I am now walking abroad amongst My people and I live in their midst. Today, those who bear genuine love for Me—such people are blessed. Blessed are those who submit to Me, they will surely stay in My kingdom. Blessed are those who know Me, they will surely wield power in My kingdom. Blessed are those who seek after Me, they will surely escape from Satan's bonds and enjoy My blessings. Blessed are those who are able to forsake themselves, they will surely enter into My possession and inherit My kingdom's bounty. Those who run around for Me I will remember, those who make expenditures for Me I will joyfully embrace, and to those who make offerings to Me I will grant enjoyments. Those who find enjoyment in My words I will bless; they will surely be the pillars that hold up the ridgepole in My kingdom, they will surely have matchless abundance in My house, and no one can compare with them. Have you ever accepted the blessings that you were given? Have you ever sought the promises that were made for you? You will surely,**

under the guidance of My light, break through the stranglehold of the forces of darkness. You will surely not, in the midst of darkness, lose the light guiding you. You will surely be the master of all creation. You will surely be an overcomer before Satan. You will surely, at the downfall of the kingdom of the great red dragon, stand up amid the myriad throngs to bear witness to My victory. You will surely stand firm and unwavering in the land of Sinim. Through the sufferings you endure, you will inherit My blessings, and will surely radiate My glory throughout the entire universe" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Words to the Entire Universe, Chapter 19).

—The movie script of Song of Victory

XVIII. Questions and Answers on the Way of Eternal Life

Question 1: Almighty God's word says, "**Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life**." I remembered what the Lord Jesus once said, "**But whoever drinks of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life**" (Jhn 4:14). We already know the Lord Jesus is the source of the living water of life, and the way of everlasting life. Could it be that Almighty God and the Lord Jesus are of the same source? Are Their work and words both of the Holy Spirit? Are Their work done by the same God?

Answer: In the work of God's two incarnate fleshes, They testified that They are the truth, the way, the life, and the way of everlasting life. They express many truths, and do a stage of practical work to prove that Christ is the truth, the way, and the life. That is sufficient to prove They come from the same source. Both utter the voice of the Holy Spirit. They do the work of the same God, and both testify that God is the source of life in all its forms. The word expressed by God is the everlasting wellspring of the living waters, and the river of life which flows from His throne, which is therefore the way of everlasting life. That proves even more that Almighty God is the second coming of the Lord Jesus, and that both of Them are God doing the work in His management plan. The Lord Jesus said: "**I am in the Father, and the Father in me**" (Jhn 14:10). "**I and my Father are one**" (Jhn 10:30). This proves the Lord Jesus is the appearance of God. The Lord Jesus predicted He would come again, and that He would be incarnated as the Son of man to do the work of judgment in the last days.

Almighty God says, "**Jesus and I come from one Spirit. Even though We are unrelated in Our fleshes, Our Spirits are one; even though the content of what We do and the work that We take on are**

not the same, We are alike in essence; Our fleshes take different forms, but this is due to the change in era and the differing requirements of Our work; Our ministries are not alike, so the work We bring forth and the dispositions We reveal to man are also different. … Their Spirits are nonetheless one" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Two Incarnations Complete the Significance of the Incarnation).

"**Though the work of the two incarnate fleshes is different, the essence of the fleshes, and the source of Their work, are identical; it is just that They exist to perform two different stages of the work, and arise in two different ages. No matter what, God's incarnate fleshes share the same essence and the same origin—this is a truth no one can deny**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Essence of the Flesh Inhabited by God).

Almighty God's words clearly tell us that Almighty God and the Lord Jesus are both the fleshes worn by the Spirit of God. They only differ in that They do different work in different ages, and use different names, but They are one God. Now we know that both times God became incarnate He testifies that He is the source of the water of life, and has an endless supply of the living water. He also testifies that God Himself is the way of everlasting life. Although Their words and manner of speaking differ slightly, the essence of what They say is the same. So, what is the way of everlasting life? How are the way of everlasting life and entering the kingdom of heaven related? The Lord Jesus said only by obeying the heavenly Father's will can people enter the kingdom of heaven. Those who truly obey God's will refer to those capable of practicing God's words and obeying God's commandments. The Lord Jesus taught that we should love God with all our heart, soul, and mind, and love others as we love

ourselves. Have we put those words into practice now? If we haven't practiced those words, then we aren't doing God's will. If we can't practice God's words, and keep God's commandments, how can we ever obtain the way of everlasting life? We never will! Gaining the way of everlasting life means gaining the whole truth expressed by God to purify and save man, and finally becoming those who know God and obey God's will. If we believe in God but don't gain the truth, don't change our life disposition, and don't obey God's will, can we enter the kingdom of heaven? Can those who are unable to enter the kingdom of heaven gain everlasting life? So, those who don't obey God's will have no way to gain the way of everlasting life. Also, in the Bible it says: "He that believes on the Son has everlasting life: and he that believes not the Son shall not see life" (Jhn 3:36). Believing in the Son means believing in the One sent by God, and believing in the incarnate Christ. The Lord Jesus Christ was the Son of man. He returned to heaven after finishing the work of redemption. The Lord Jesus promised us He would come again, so, accepting the returned Christ in the last days is paramount. Whoever accepts the returned Christ in the last days will gain the way of eternal life. If we only believe in the Lord Jesus, and don't accept the Lord Jesus' second coming, we are cutting off our relationship with the source of the living water of life! Would the Lord Jesus still acknowledge us? Could we still gain everlasting life? While believing in the Lord, we must also accept the second coming of the Lord Jesus, which is the true "belief in the Son." Only those who follow Christ of the last days will gain eternal life. If we only believe in the Lord Jesus, and reject the return of the Lord Jesus, then our belief is a waste of effort, abandoned half-way, and we will never gain the Lord Jesus' approval.

Because what the Lord Jesus did in the Age of Grace is the work of redemption. He expressed truths about man's redemption, which can only

allow people to confess and repent of their sins and turn to God. But, because our sinful nature and corrupt disposition remain, even though our sins have been forgiven after we believe in the Lord Jesus, we still often sin and rebel against and resist God, this is a fact. It's proof that what the Lord Jesus did was the work of redemption. Only the work of judgment done by the returned Lord Jesus in the last days can fully save mankind, allow mankind to break free from sin and the influence of Satan, achieve dispositional change, and be gained by God. So, the work of judgment done by the returned Lord Jesus in the last days is critical to the salvation of mankind. If we only accept the Lord Jesus' work of redemption, and want to enter the kingdom of heaven without accepting the returned Lord Jesus' work of judgment in the last days, we have our head in the clouds. Actually, the Lord Jesus said long ago: "**I have yet many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now. However, when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will show you things to come**" (Jhn 16:12-13). At the time, no one understood the Lord Jesus' words, because mankind had just come before God, and was small in stature. If the Lord Jesus had expressed the words of last days' judgment, man would be unable to bear it. They had to wait for the arrival of Almighty God in the last days to express the full truth that purifies, saves, and perfects man. When we see the words of Almighty God, we've awaken to sudden awareness, finally understanding the will of God. Why didn't God directly do the work of judgment of the last days in the Age of Grace? It's because there are three stages of work in God's management plan to save mankind. God does the work of judgment in the last days, just as Almighty God says. "**Though Jesus did much work among man, He only completed the redemption of all mankind and became man's sin**

offering; He did not rid man of all his corrupt disposition. Fully saving man from the influence of Satan not only required Jesus to become the sin offering and bear the sins of man, but it also required God to do even greater work to rid man completely of his satanically corrupted disposition. And so, now that man has been forgiven of his sins, God has returned to the flesh to lead man into the new age, and begun the work of chastisement and judgment. This work has brought man into a higher realm. All those who submit under His dominion shall enjoy higher truth and receive greater blessings. They shall truly live in the light, and they shall gain the truth, the way, and the life" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Preface). The Lord Jesus' work of redemption paved the way for the work of judging and purifying man in the last days. The truth that saves, changes, and perfects man will be expressed in full by the returned Lord Jesus. This truth is the way of everlasting life bestowed to man by Almighty God in the last days. So, if we want to receive the way of everlasting life, the key is to accept the Lord Jesus' return. The Lord Jesus said: "**Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me**" (Rev 3:20). "**… for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife has made herself ready**" (Rev 19:7). "**Blessed are they which are called to the marriage supper of the Lamb**" (Rev 19:9). Those who accept the second coming of Christ are clever virgins. After hearing God's voice, they go with the Lamb to the feast. People like these are blessed, and they have followed the Lamb's footsteps. They are the firstfruits purified by God's judgment in the last days, and the overcomers made by God. So, only those who accept the second coming of Christ are those who gain the way of everlasting life.

—The movie script of From the Throne Flows the Water of Life

Question 2: The Lord Jesus and Almighty God are the same God, but do different work in different ages. The Lord Jesus did the work of redemption, and preached the way of repentance. In the last days, Almighty God does the work of judging and purifying mankind, and brings them the way of everlasting life. I still have another question, what is the difference between the way of repentance and the way of eternal life?

Answer: There is only one God, and His work of saving mankind can't be done in one or two stages. Because there are three stages of work in God's management plan to save mankind, the truth expressed by God in each stage is different, and gradually deepens, so that in the end it becomes perfect. God does different work across the ages based on the needs of man at the time, so the way God gives to man in each age is different. Knowing the difference between the way of repentance and the way of eternal life is very important. It is a truth every true believer in God must understand, because it's related to how we know the truth and gain eternal life. Now we all know that the Lord Jesus did the work of redemption in the Age of Grace, and gave man the way of repentance. As the Lord Jesus said: "**Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand**" (Mat 4:17). Which is to say, man should confess his sins and repent before God if he wants to enter the kingdom of heaven. After man confesses previous sins, such sins will be forgiven. Man will no longer sin, repent and be born again. This is repentance. But at that time, the Lord Jesus only taught man to confess his sins and repent, not to commit sins, not to do evil, to deny himself, take up the cross, and follow the Lord, to love the Lord with all his heart, his soul, and his mind, to love others as himself, with humility, forbearance and patience, and to forgive others seventy times seven and so on. These are the ways for man to repent. When man confesses his sins and repents before the Lord Jesus, these sins will be forgiven, which qualifies man to pray before

God and fellowship with Him, and enjoy the bountiful grace and truth given by God. But what we can't deny is that even if man's sins are forgiven, his sinful nature still exists, and he can still sin, oppose and betray God. This proves that though man's sins can be forgiven, he can still sin, and can't escape the satanic disposition to attain purification. The Lord Jesus only did the work of redemption, which merely allows man to confess his sins, repent, return to God, and enjoy the grace given by God. This shows that the truth expressed by the Lord Jesus is the way for man to repent. Just as Almighty God says: "**At the time, Jesus only gave His disciples a series of sermons in the Age of Grace on such subjects as how to practice, how to gather together, how to supplicate in prayer, how to treat others, and so forth. The work He carried out was that of the Age of Grace, and He expounded only on how the disciples and those who followed Him ought to practice. He only did the work of the Age of Grace, and none of the work of the last days. … The work of God in each age has clear boundaries; He does only the work of the current age, and never carries out the next stage of work in advance. Only thus can His representative work of each age be brought to the fore. Jesus spoke only of the signs of the last days, of how to be patient and how to be saved, of how to repent and confess, and of how to bear the cross and endure suffering; never did He speak of how man in the last days should achieve entry, nor of how he should seek to satisfy God's will. …**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. How Can Man Who Has Delimited God in His Notions Receive the Revelations of God?). "**The sins of man could be forgiven through the sin offering, but as for just how man can be made to sin no more, and how his sinful nature may be extirpated completely and transformed, he has no way of solving this problem. The sins of man were forgiven, and this is because**

of the work of God's crucifixion, but man continued to live within his corrupt satanic disposition of old. This being so, man must be completely saved from his corrupt satanic disposition, so that his sinful nature may be completely extirpated, never to develop again, thus enabling the disposition of man to be transformed. This would require man to grasp the path of growth in life, to grasp the way of life, and to grasp the way to change his disposition. Furthermore, it would require man to act in accordance with this path, so that his disposition may gradually be changed and he may live under the shining of the light, so that all that he does may be in accord with the will of God, so that he may cast away his corrupt satanic disposition, and so that he may break free from Satan's influence of darkness, thereby emerging fully from sin. Only then will man receive complete salvation" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Mystery of the Incarnation (4)). The words of Almighty God clearly tell us that the Lord Jesus did the work of redemption, and what He gave us was only the way of repentance, but He didn't give man the way of everlasting life to cast off his satanic nature and attain purification. So, in the last days, Almighty God has come, and on the foundation of the Lord Jesus' work of redemption, He has done the work of "judgment beginning at the house of God" and gives us the way of everlasting life. Only by accepting the way of everlasting life given by Almighty God in the last days can we become obedient to the will of God, completely escape the dark influence of Satan, reach salvation, and enter the kingdom of God.

Just now we fellowshiped about the way of repentance. Now we will talk about what the way of everlasting life is, as well as the differences between the way of repentance and the way of everlasting life. When we talk about the way of everlasting life, we're not talking about simple

confession of sins and repentance, we're talking about the way of truth that gives people everlasting life. More specifically speaking, how people gain salvation, break free from Satan's influence, how they gain the truth as life, become compatible with God, and be gained by God. This is the way of everlasting life. So, those who attain the way of everlasting life are those who receive the truth, who gain the truth as life, and are the people completed by God who can enter the kingdom of heaven. Are these not the people who attain the way of everlasting life? Would those who gain the truth as their life ever oppose or betray God? Would those who enter the kingdom of heaven ever die, or be sent to hell? Of course not. So, any who gain the truth as life will come to know God, and thereby attain the way of everlasting life, correct? Let's look at Almighty God's words on the subject.

Almighty God says, "**Christ of the last days brings life, and brings the enduring and everlasting way of truth. This truth is the path by which man gains life, and it is the only path by which man shall know God and be approved by God**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life).

"**The work in the last days lays bare the work of Jehovah and Jesus and all mysteries not understood by man, so as to reveal the destination and the end of mankind and end all the work of salvation among mankind. This stage of work in the last days brings everything to a close. All mysteries not understood by man need to be unraveled to allow man to plumb them to their depths and have a completely clear understanding in his heart. Only then can the human race be classed according to kind. … all mysteries not understood by man shall have been revealed, all truths previously not understood shall have been made clear, and the human race shall have been told of their future**

path and destination. This is the whole of the work that is to be done in the present stage" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Mystery of the Incarnation (4)).

"**In this final stage of work, results are achieved through the agency of the word. Through the word, man comes to understand many mysteries and the work that God has done through generations past; through the word, man is enlightened by the Holy Spirit; through the word, man comes to understand the mysteries never before unraveled by past generations, as well as the work of prophets and apostles of times past, and the principles by which they worked; through the word, man also comes to understand the disposition of God Himself, as well as the rebelliousness and resistance of man, and he comes to know his own essence. Through these steps of work and through all the words spoken, man comes to know the work of the Spirit, the work God's incarnate flesh does, and even more, His entire disposition**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Mystery of the Incarnation (4)).

"**In the last days, Christ uses a variety of truths to teach man, to expose the substance of man, and to dissect the words and deeds of man. These words comprise various truths, such as man's duty, how man should obey God, how man should be loyal to God, how man ought to live out normal humanity, as well as the wisdom and the disposition of God, and so on. These words are all directed at the substance of man and his corrupt disposition. In particular, the words that expose how man spurns God are spoken in regard to how man is an embodiment of Satan, and an enemy force against God. In undertaking His work of judgment, God does not simply make clear the nature of man with a few words; He exposes, deals with, and prunes**

over the long term. These methods of exposure, dealing, and pruning cannot be substituted with ordinary words, but with the truth of which man is utterly bereft. Only methods such as these can be called judgment; only through judgment of this kind can man be subdued and thoroughly convinced into submission to God, and moreover gain true knowledge of God. What the work of judgment brings about is man's understanding of the true face of God and the truth about his own rebelliousness. The work of judgment allows man to gain much understanding of the will of God, of the purpose of God's work, and of the mysteries that are incomprehensible to him. It also allows man to recognize and know his corrupt essence and the roots of his corruption, as well as to discover the ugliness of man. These effects are all brought about by the work of judgment, for the essence of this work is actually the work of opening up the truth, the way, and the life of God to all those who have faith in Him" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth).

From the words of Almighty God we can see that the way of everlasting life isn't something that can be taught with a few rules, nor can man's tendency to sin and oppose God be solved with merely a few passages. Mankind has been deeply corrupted by Satan, and filled with all kinds of Satan's poisons. They are brazenly arrogant, prideful, and self-centered, and toward God, are full of notions, fanciful ideas, and outrageous demands. They have no real knowledge of God, much less do they have true fear, obedience, or love. If people want to escape their satanic dispositions and attain purification, or truly come to know, obey, fear, and love God, and become compatible with God, it requires them to understand many aspects of the truth. As is required by the corrupt mankind, in the last days, God does the work of "judgment beginning at the house of God," and

expresses all truths man requires to completely escape Satan's influence and attain salvation. So, the way of everlasting life is more than one or two facets of truth, it is comprised of many, many aspects of truth. If, while we experience God's work in the last days, we come to understand the entirety of the truths He has expressed to save mankind, and enter into the reality of the truth, then without doubt we can achieve a dispositional change in our life, and become those who truly obey and worship God. We can gain the way of everlasting life. What is the way of everlasting life? It's all the truths God expresses in the last days to grant mankind salvation. God's work in the last days is to instill these truths in man so that they become man's life. People who live by these words of God will gain the way of everlasting life. No matter how deeply a person experiences the truth of God's words, so long as we possess the realities of various truths to some extent, live out the likeness of a real man, are honest, truly obey God, conduct ourselves in a principled manner, fear God, and avoid evil, we become people who possess the truth, and humanity, and therefore we gain the way of everlasting life. When we attain the way of everlasting life we escape sin and the influence of Satan, which means we no longer sin, oppose God, or betray God. With true knowledge of God, we can achieve dispositional change. We can obey God, worship God, love God, become compatible with God, and become someone who obeys God's will. When we gain the way of eternal life, we will never die. We will enjoy God's blessings, and are promised entry into the kingdom of heaven.

Almighty God says, "**Once humanity is on the right track, people will have normal human lives. They will all do their own respective duties and be absolutely faithful to God. They will utterly shed their disobedience and their corrupt dispositions, and they will live for God and because of God, devoid of both disobedience and resistance. They**

will all be able to completely submit to God. This will be the life of God and humanity; it will be the life of the kingdom, and it will be a life of rest" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God and Man Will Enter Into Rest Together).

"**I rest upon the throne, I recline above the whole universe, and I am fully satisfied, for all things have recovered their holiness, and I can peacefully reside within Zion once again, and the people on earth can lead serene, contented lives under My guidance. All peoples are managing everything in My hand, all peoples have regained their former intelligence and original appearance; they are no longer covered with dust, but, in My kingdom, are as holy as jade, each with a face like that of the holy one within man's heart, for My kingdom has been established among man**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Words to the Entire Universe, Chapter 16).

"**In the kingdom, the life that God's people live with God is happy beyond measure. The waters dance with joy at the blessed lives of the people, the mountains enjoy with the people My abundance. All men are striving, working hard, showing their loyalty in My kingdom. In the kingdom, rebellion is no more, resistance no more; the heavens and the earth depend on each other, man and I draw close in deep feeling, through life's sweet felicities, leaning one against the other….**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. God's Words to the Entire Universe, Rejoice, All Ye People!).

—The movie script of From the Throne Flows the Water of Life

Question 3: You say only those who obey the will of God receive the way of everlasting life. After we started believing in the Lord, we suffered and paid a price to spread the Lord's gospel. We've shepherded the Lord's flock, taken up the cross and followed the Lord, practiced humbleness, patience, and tolerance. Are you saying we haven't been following God's will? We know if we continue, we will become holy, and be raptured to the kingdom of heaven. Is this way of understanding and practice wrong?

Answer: You have the notion that if you labor, sacrifice, or do good deeds, you are obeying God's will. But are these imagined notions of yours after God's heart? Do they have a basis in God's word? Let's see what the Lord Jesus said: The Lord Jesus said: "**Not every one that said to me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in your name? and in your name have cast out devils? and in your name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess to them, I never knew you: depart from me, you that work iniquity**" (Mat 7: 21-23). From the Lord Jesus' words we can see that those who prophesy, cast out devils, and do many wonderful works in His name are the ones who suffer and do works for the Lord. They serve God, devote all their time to Him, and have many good behaviors. But, why does the Lord Jesus call them those who work iniquity? How should we understand this? By your notions, any who suffer and do work for the Lord and spend and sacrifice for Him are obeying God's will. The chief priests, scribes, and Pharisees in Judaism also appeared to be very pious. They traveled far and wide to preach the gospel. So why did the Lord Jesus condemn and curse them? That's something worth reflecting on, isn't it? We can't determine obedience to God's will using the notions of man. True obedience to God's will refers to people who can obey God's work

and words, practice God's words, follow God's commandments, and fulfill their duties according to God's will and requirements. You say any who suffer and do work for the Lord are obeying God's will. Then let's evaluate them using the Lord Jesus' requirements. What was the Lord Jesus' most important requirement for man? "**You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like to it, You shall love your neighbor as yourself**" (Mat 22:37-39). But are we doing this? Obeying God's will means loving God with all our heart, soul, and mind. No matter how much work we do, or how much we suffer, there must be no personal ambition or impurity, we must be devoted purely to obeying and satisfying God, to carrying out God's will. We must be happy to sacrifice everything for God, without demand for recompense. In the face of trials and tribulation from God, we must not complain or betray Him, and put ourselves at the mercy of God's arrangements. Like Abraham, Job, and Peter, when God's trials come, we must accept with utter obedience and without complaint or question, and bear good and resounding testimony for God. This is obedience to God's will. Given those demands, it should be obvious whether or not we are people who truly obey the heavenly Father's will.

We see many capable of suffering, doing work, and sacrifice after believing in the Lord, but in their suffering and sacrifice we find personal desire and ambition. They seek rewards, and to enter the kingdom of heaven. Isn't this using and defrauding God? How is this practicing the truth to satisfy God? But there's an even bigger tragedy going on. Even though the pastors and elders of the religious world often work and preach in their churches, and appear to do good acts from the outside, yet when Almighty God does the work of judgment in the last days, to protect their

own position, influence, and income they wildly judge, condemn, and profane Almighty God, and try to stop the believers from investigating the true way. Don't they make themselves enemies of God in doing this? How is this any different from the crimes of the Pharisees who resisted the Lord Jesus? These facts are enough to prove that people have no knowledge of God, that people's satanic nature remains, and that people have not received the truth as life. Even those who can suffer, labor, and sacrifice for God do so to barter with God. They believe in God with the aim of gaining blessings for themselves. Such people are not practicing God's words at all, and do not care for God's will, much less are they testaments of obedience and love for God. How could such people be obeying God's will? And how could they be qualified to enter the kingdom of heaven and gain everlasting life? Let's read a passage from Almighty God: "**I decide the destination of each person not on the basis of age, seniority, amount of suffering, and least of all, the degree to which they invite pity, but according to whether they possess the truth. There is no other choice but this. You must realize that all those who do not follow the will of God shall also be punished. This is an immutable fact**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Prepare Sufficient Good Deeds for Your Destination). God decides the destination of each man not on the basis of how much work he does or suffering he undergoes, but on the basis of whether he possesses truth, practices God's word, and obeys God's will, because only those who obey God's will are qualified to enter the kingdom of heaven and gain everlasting life. This is decided by God's righteous disposition, and cannot be changed. So, we all need to reflect on the path we've taken to belief in God. Why, while we believe in and follow God, do we also sin and resist God? It's caused entirely by the sinful nature hidden within us. With our sinful nature, it's very difficult to truly obey and love

God. Our sinful nature makes it hard to avoid trying to barter and gain blessings while we sacrifice for God. Our sinful nature creates complaints, negativity, and betrayal in us when faced with God's trials. So, with our sinful nature, we can't possibly become someone who obeys God's will, and can't become holy. It's completely impossible! For us to truly obey God's will and become holy, the problem of our sinful nature must be solved. Given that, if we don't accept Almighty God's work of judgment and chastisement in the last days, we will never be approved by God. If we don't experience God's work of judgment in the last days, we will never receive the truth, achieve change in our life disposition, or be after God's heart. That's a fact no one can deny.

—The movie script of From the Throne Flows the Water of Life

Question 4: If we accept Almighty God's work in the last days, how should we then seek to receive the way of everlasting life?

Answer: Almighty God, in the last days, expresses the entirety of the truth that can thoroughly purify and save mankind, these truths are expressed according to our corrupt substance and what we lack, which means they are the reality of truth that we humans should have. God wants us to receive these truths as our everlasting life. This truth is the way of everlasting life bestowed to us by God. So, how are we to seek and gain the way of eternal life? Almighty God has already laid out a practical path for us. Let's read a few more passages from Almighty God:

"**The work of the last days is to separate all according to their kind, and to conclude the management plan of God, for the time is near and the day of God has come. God brings all who enter His kingdom—all who are loyal to Him to the very end—into the age of God Himself. Yet prior to the arrival of the age of God Himself, God's work is not to observe the deeds of man, or to inquire into the life of man, but to judge man's disobedience, for God shall purify all those who come before His throne. All who have followed the footsteps of God to this day are those who come before the throne of God, and this being so, every single person who accepts God's work in its final phase is the object of God's purification. In other words, everyone who accepts God's work in its final phase is the object of God's judgment**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth).

"**Today's work of conquest is to recover all the testimony and all the glory, and to have all men worship God, so that there is testimony among the created; this is the work to be done during this stage. How,**

exactly, is mankind to be conquered? By using the work of words of this stage to fully convince man; by using disclosure, judgment, chastisement, and merciless curse to bring him into utter submission; by disclosing man's rebelliousness and judging his resistance so he may know the unrighteousness and filth of mankind, and thus use these things as a foil to God's righteous disposition. It is chiefly through these words that man is conquered and fully convinced. Words are the means to the ultimate conquering of mankind, and all who accept God's conquest must accept the smiting and judgment of His words. The process of speaking today is precisely the process of conquering. And just how should people cooperate? By knowing how to eat and drink these words, and achieving an understanding of them. As to how people are conquered, this is not something they can do by themselves. All you can do is, through eating and drinking these words, to come to know your corruption and filth, your rebelliousness and your unrighteousness, and fall down before God. If, after grasping God's will, you are able to put it into practice, and if you have visions and are able to completely submit to these words, and not make any choices by yourself, then you will have been conquered—and it will have been as a result of these words" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Inside Truth of the Work of Conquest (1)).

"**In this age, God chiefly uses words to govern all. Through the words of God, man is judged and perfected, then finally taken into the kingdom. Only the words of God can supply the life of man, and only the words of God can give man light and a path for practice, particularly in the Age of Kingdom. As long as you do not stray from the reality of God's words, eating and drinking His words each day,**

God will be able to make you perfect" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. The Age of Kingdom Is the Age of Word).

"**What is vital now is to focus on life, to eat and drink more of My words, to experience My words, to know My words, to make My words truly become your life—these are the main things. If someone cannot live by God's words, can their life mature? No, it cannot. You must live by My words at all times and have My words as the code of conduct for life, so that you will feel that acting by that code is what God takes joy in, and acting elsewise is what God hates; and slowly, you will come to walk on the right track**" (The Word, Vol. 1. The Appearance and Work of God. Utterances of Christ in the Beginning, Chapter 22).

"**If one can satisfy God while fulfilling one's duty, is principled in one's words and actions, and can enter all aspects of the truth reality, then one is a person who is perfected by God. It can be said that the work and the words of God have been completely effective for such people, that God's words have become their life, they have obtained the truth, and they are able to live in accordance with God's words. After this, the nature of their flesh—that is, the very foundation of their original existence—will shake apart and collapse. After people possess God's words as their life, they will become new people. If the words of God become their life, if the vision of God's work, His requirements of humanity, His revelations to humans, and the standards for a true life that God requires them to meet become their life, if they live according to these words and truths, then they are perfected by the words of God. Such people are reborn, and have become new people through God's words**" (The Word, Vol. 3. The Discourses of Christ of the Last Days. How to Walk the Path of Peter).

From Almighty God's word we can see that God's work in the last days is the work of the word. God uses the word to judge, purify, and perfect man. If we want to gain the way of everlasting life, we must accept and obey the last days' judgment and chastisement before Christ's seat. Eating and drinking the word of God, and accepting the judgment and chastisement of God's word, thereby understanding the truth, coming to know God's righteous disposition, and finding true fear of God in our hearts, and then experiencing God's word to understand the truth and live the reality of God's word is the only way to receive the way of everlasting life. Now we all know that only the word expressed by Almighty God in the last days can purify, save, and perfect man. If we want to gain the way of everlasting life, we need to eat and drink the words of Almighty God, and experience the words of Almighty God, because the satanic corruption in us is too deep. We live in sin, scrambling blindly to secure our own futures and fates. We don't know the difference between good and evil, and don't know the substance of our nature and the truth about our corruption. We don't understand God's desire, and have no knowledge of God, nor do we understand what God likes and dislikes. nor can we see through to Satan's evil substance. We live by our satanic natures, we seek fame and fortune, we engage in intrigue, we admire power and evil, we confuse black and white, we indulge our greed and desires, etc. We live out demonic images of Satan, without any likeness of real humans. Only God is the truth, the way, and the life. The truths expressed by God are the revelation of God's disposition and all that He has and is. To man, the truth is judgment, chastisement, examination, and purification. Before God's words, we can feel the arrival of God's righteous disposition. Just like when we see the appearance of God, our hearts feel fear of God. We feel that we are low, dirty, and small. We see the truth of our corruption by Satan, and how far

we are from meeting God's requirements. And when, through practice, we come to understand more truth, we feel shame and admonishment for actions not after God's heart. The truth serves as an examination, and in the actions we take and the paths we walk, the truth serves as a guide, becoming the principle by which we speak and act. When this happens, the truth becomes our life. We can see that the truth can change people. It changes their disposition, and perfects them. The truth has profound value and significance for man's existence. So, if we accept the truth as life that is expressed by Almighty God in the last days, we can achieve change in our life disposition, and become those who have the truth and humanity. As such, we are those who have been perfected by God and who have gained the truth, are those who have escaped the dark influence of Satan and been gained by God, and are those who obey God, love God, follow God's will, and are compatible with God. And we are the people who gain the way of everlasting life.

—The movie script of From the Throne Flows the Water of Life

THE CHURCH OF ALMIGHTY GOD

Gospel Website
https://www.holyspiritspeaks.org

Our Website

App Download

YouTube: https://l.kingdomsalvation.org/en/video

Facebook: https://l.kingdomsalvation.org/en/facebook

Twitter: https://l.kingdomsalvation.org/en/twitter

Email: info@almightygod.church